

THE MAGUS ERA

BOOK 13

Blood Red

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

The Magus Era

(巫神纪)

by

Blood Red

(血红)

Synopsis

Long ago, there were people who stood upon the earth with their heads held high. They never bowed to anyone because of their indomitable spirit. They were capable of controlling wind and lightning, and conquering dragons and serpents. They seemed strong enough to split the earth and shatter the stars with their fists. They traveled throughout the land and called themselves Magi. Eventually, one of them would become a Supreme Magus! These men are the ancestors of human beings. Their blood is what we all share today.

Qing Long is the former strongest man in the world. He traveled through space and time and was reborn as Ji Hao in the Fire Crow Clan of the Southern Wasteland. It's a complicated world. Forces from both inside and outside of the clan want this young and talented boy to die. Under great pressure, Ji Hao makes a deal with a mysterious man, who resides in his spiritual space, never showing his real face. He gains two drops of blood from a dragon and phoenix. Afterwards, Ji Hao becomes increasingly more powerful.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Law @ Qidian International

Translation Edit by Hitesh_ @ Qidian International

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1201: Mole

A tridimensional stellar map was contained in Emperor Shun’s spiritual space.

Uncountable differently sized stars floated in the vast, light-pursed space, glowing with cold lights which were circling along mysterious orbits. The embryo even heard a faint deep buzzing noise from all directions.

"Shun!" The embryo boosted up all of its power and burst with a bright shout.

Strong waves of soul power vibration spread out towards all directions, generating dark ripples, touching those stars. Gradually, the embryo’s voice faded in the vast space. This tridimensional stellar map was secret and mystical, and had an extremely great sealing power that soon dispelled the growl given by the embryo with all of its power, before it could reach far.

"You? In here? How dare you even come in?" A deep and dry voice could be sensed from every direction, while a hazy silhouette emerged before the embryo. "This is an ocean of soul. In here, I am invulnerable. How dare you come in to die?"

"Ying Zun?" snorted the embryos coldly. "Where is Emperor Shun?"

"You can’t find him!" Ying Zun’s body had been twisting and changing forms constantly. Dragon, phoenix, flowers, bugs, plants, he could look like anything. The sense of power that came from his body was also unstable and varying all the time, disabling the embryo from grasping it.

"You can never find him. I have been trying to crush him completely, then eat his soul." Ying Zun laughed with a hoarse voice. "I am confident. I believe that the ultimate victory will be mine. So, you can either accept the terms, give me ten equally

strong souls in exchange for his soul, or let me comfortably eat him."

The embryo snorted again coldly, then locked his hands together and gave a resonant roar. A great red sun rose from his head, releasing waves of strong power that seemed to devour the whole world.

The red sun transformed into a swiftly spinning black hole, inside which, countless shark-teeth-like dark thorns had been clashing, brushing against each other and causing high-pitched, teeth-softening noises.

A destructive force came to Ying Zun, and the embryo roared like a beast.

"Eat Emperor Shun? Let me eat you first!"

Ying Zun didn’t see this coming. He invaded Emperor Shun’s body and his mind, gaining a lot of memories regarding the humankind. However, from those memories, he found nothing about this weird, destructive, devouring power that Ji Hao’s embryo of the great Dao of destruction released just now.

Ying Zun could never know that Ji Hao’s embryo of the great Dao of destruction was from another great world, and was generated by one of the twelve most powerful types of great Dao of that world.

Following his scream, a small half of Ying Zun’s body was torn off, transforming into a dark shadow shred that flew to the black hole. The scream sounded even shriller when this dark shadow was devoured by the black hole. The great Dao of destruction started speedily grinding off Ying Zun’s spirit, and absorbing his original soul power, giving it to the embryo.

The misty and hazy embryo instantly turned much clearer. His eyes were bright, nose was high-bridged, and his body was strong and muscular. At the first glance, this embryo looked just like a real person.

"Nourishing!" The embryo evilly looked at Ying Zun and said, "Hehe, do you still want to eat Emperor Shun? Why don't you fulfill my appetite before that?"

The Taiji divine sword transformed into a black beam and a white beam, darting out. It momentarily encircled Ying Zun, who didn't manage to react timely. The two bright beams split up and dazzled to Ying Zun like a storm, landing on every part of his body.

No ordinary weapon could ever harm Ying Zun, who was shapeless. But the Taiji divine sword was a pre-world supreme treasure, created by Yu Yu, Priest Qing Wei and that unknown, mysterious being, and was unimaginably powerful. Ying Zun screamed in pain. He disappeared, transformed into a gust of wind, and attempted to run.

The sword lights didn't stop. Ying Zun's body was shredded; half of those shreds became dark light and were swallowed by the spinning black hole.

The embryo cheered pleasantly with an echoing voice. His body turned clearer and clearer, and was added with a crystalline luster. His eyes shone with a dark light, which was solid strong, reaching out from his eyes to tens of miles away.

"Ying Zun, you are nothing more than this!" The embryo roared resonantly, then locked his hands together and pressed down to the remaining half of Ying Zun's body.

"Dark Sun, collapsing sound...Duo!"

'Dark Sun, collapsing sound', was a secret divine spell created by the children of Dark Sun. Not to mention its immense power, it was amazingly effective in harming souls. It was fairly wise for the embryo to attack Ying Zun with this spell and aim right at Ying Zun's greatest weakness.

A dense blackness was scattered, turning into thin dark mist, drifting everywhere.

The dark hole above swallowed all of the dark mist. Meanwhile, the power vibration released by the embryo got stronger and stronger, eviler and eviler.

"Ying Zun, where do you think you can run? Get back here!"

The embryo locked his fingers together again and prepared to launch a greater attack, yet a furious voice came from a long distance away, "Marquis Yao Ji Hao, don't you think that I can't do nothing to you! Ninety percent of my power is here suppressing this Emperor Shun's soul, and you are only fighting ten percent of me. If you dare to devour more of my original power, I will destroy this Emperor Shun, even if I may lose half of my life!"

The surrounding stars started shaking and moving towards both sides. Among these stars, in the core area of this space, a strong sphere of golden-purple light emerged. Within the light sphere, Emperor Shun sat in the middle with a pallid look, legs crossed, eyes on the embryo with anxiety.

"Ji Hao, don't listen to this evil being. I am under the protection of the great natural reward power, and he cannot hurt my soul within a short span of time. You do not need to worry about me."

"You have already taken ten percent of his power, so he now can do even less. Your mission is to find out the mole in Pu Ban City. This is my memory. Take it, and you'll understand the whole thing."

A strand of purple mist swished to the embryo. All of a sudden, endless blackness began rising from around Emperor Shun's light sphere. The blackness merged together and became a nine-headed dark creature with thirty-six heads, wearing sparkling gemstones, as it roared thunderously. Through the distance, the dark creature reached an arm out towards the purple mist.

This creature was tremendous. In the eyes of the embryo, Emperor Shun's light sphere seemed to be a thousand miles in radius, yet this dark creature easily held it in one hand — This

creature was at least a hundred thousand miles long!

Roaring shrilly, the embryo grasped the purple mist. The Taiji divine sword transformed again into two sharp light beams and shielded the embryo, as it stomped his foot and left Emperor Shun’s spiritual space.

In the Town Hall, a foot-long strand of purple mist appeared between Ji Hao’s fingers. He crumbled the mist, which released a torrent of memory into his own mind.

"Is there a mole in Pu Ban City?" Ji Hao looked at Emperor Shun.

"Even if you know it now, so what?" Emperor Shun’s face was covered in blackness, while the five-colored light rolled in his eyes like tidewater.

Chapter 1202: Two 'Zun' Attack Suddenly

The term 'capital city' had yet to be created, but without a doubt, Pu Ban City was the most important core, and the power center of the alliance of human clans. Ever since the era of Emperor Fuxi, generations of human leaders had tried everything they could to protect Pu Ban City, with all kinds of powerful defenses. Not to mention the strong defensive formation of Pu Ban City, Emperor Shun's residence was surrounded by countless layers of defensive seals.

Most importantly, Emperor Shun's residence, the Town Hall, and the large surrounding area were under the protection of at least thirty-six 'after-world natural reward spirit treasures, passed down from former human emperors. Those spirit treasures had the power to suppress all evils.

Ancient human emperors endured great hardships in the pioneering work, and finally led the humankind to rise. They fought natural disasters, wild beasts, and evil creatures, eventually attaining great natural reward powers. These 'after-world natural reward spirit treasures' were made by those ancient human emperors with their great natural reward powers and spirit blood. Emperor Xuanyuan's Xuanyuan sword was a top-grade after-world natural reward spirit treasure.

No evil could ever survive the natural reward power. Sky devils were indeed powerful, but they shouldn't be able to invade the area protected by after-world natural reward spirit treasures.

In Pu Ban City, Emperor Shun should never have had his body occupied by sky devils, nor be stuck in his own spiritual space.

The purple mist coiling around Ji Hao's fingers faded gradually. Through the memories delivered by the purple mist, Ji Hao learned everything that happened to Emperor Shun days ago — Because of the flood-control mission, Emperor Shun was busy for

many days. This day, he finally finished all tasks at hand and returned to his residence. An attendant served him a cup of tea. Emperor Shun picked up the cup of tea to quench his thirst, but before the defensive seals in his room were activated, Ying Zun darted out of the tea, momentarily invaded Emperor Shun's body, and went straight to his soul.

As the current human emperor, Emperor Shun had a jade hook, belt, tablet, ring, earring and pendent; those were six powerful defensive magic treasures, which had the power to cast away evils and block magic curses.

When Ying Zun attacked, the six magic treasures worn by Emperor Shun activated themselves immediately. But once the six pieces were activated, six magic talismans flew out from Ying Zun's hands, which blocked the dazzling light emitted from the six treasures, allowing him to drill into Emperor Shun's body.

Only a handful of senior human ministers knew that Emperor Shun had a magic painting called 'People and Motherland' in his spiritual space to protect his soul.

This painting was a pre-world piece. With the efforts made by the spirit blood of Emperor Fuxi and all human emperors after him, this painting was already connected with the fortune of the entire humankind. Protected by this magic painting, Emperor Shun's soul was also under the protection of the natural fortune of the humankind. Therefore, his soul would grow stronger and stronger, and evils from other worlds could never harm his soul.

However, once Ying Zun broke into Emperor Shun's spiritual space, he released a glowing bead, which was made from the endless hatred and the scent of dirty blood, all from the humankind. This gray-red bead was evil and dirty; its hazy light dimmed the glow of the painting and disabled it from protecting Emperor Shun's soul. Thus, Ying Zun reached Emperor Shun's soul.

Sky devils were horrible beings. They fed on the souls of the other creatures. Emperor Shun's soul was indeed strong and stable, but just like the other human Magi, he never cultivated his soul. He didn't have any soul-based magic to cast. Therefore, once Ying Zun attacked, he fell into a disadvantage.

Fortunately, Emperor Shun had been governing the human society pretty well all these years, which allowed him to attain a great natural reward power. Protected by the natural reward power, although Emperor Shun still couldn't defeat Ying Zun, Ying Zun couldn't devour his soul either. Ying Zun could only continuously pollute Emperor Shun's natural reward power with a dirty, evil magic, to slowly grind it off and destroy Emperor Shun in a long way.

Ying Zun showed up in Pu Ban City right in Emperor Shun's residence; his magic talismans perfectly suppressed the six defensive magic treasures Emperor Shun had, added with that dirty, powerful bead, which had weakened the 'People and Motherland' painting. Everything he had could restrain Emperor Shun. As a result, Emperor Shun was almost defenseless!

There was a mole among the senior human leaders in Pu Ban City. Otherwise, this could never be explained. Especially that dirty bead released by Ying Zun, which even managed to disable the 'People and Motherland' painting; one had to collect a giant amount of hatred, which could only be generated by the greatest sorrows before human beings died, and the dirty blood from corpses. Making such a bead required great efforts, incalculable manpower, and resources. Therefore, no ordinary person could never make something as evil and powerful as this.

Besides, weakening the 'People and Motherland' painting was the only function of this bead!

No more than a hundred people in the world knew about the existence of this painting, but Ying Zun managed to launch such an accurate strike at Emperor Shun. How could he possible do that

without the help of a mole? For sure, there was a mole in Pu Ban City, and this mole had a high social status, and an unknown purpose.

"You know there is a mole in Pu Ban City, so what?" Emperor Shun sat in front of Ji Hao, staring at him with a dark look. He laughed in a twisted voice and taunted, "What can you do in Pu Ban City? Give the order to capture all human leaders and torture the answer out of them one by one?"

Emperor Shun shook his head and continued in that weird tone, "You don't have the power! Marquis Yao Ji Hao, if you dare to do anything that I don't want you to do, I can order my people to arrest you...Then, I will take my time to make you suffer!"

Before Ji Hao responded, he laughed, "I am the emperor, while you are a vassal!"

Slowly standing up, Emperor Shun slapped his own chest while his eyes sparkled with that five-colored light, as he yelled at Ji Hao, "What do you have to fight against me?"

Ji Hao gritted his teeth and looked at Emperor Shun right in the eyes.

Indeed, how was Ji Hao supposed to fight him? Emperor Shun's soul was in his hands, and if Ji Hao attacked Ying Zun without considering the consequences, using Emperor Shun's spirit space as a battlefield, Emperor Shun could be harmed easily. But, if Ji Hao gave up on fighting, Ying Zun would still have Emperor Shun's body occupied. This meant that every order he gave with that body would be an order from the human emperor. As he said, he could give the order to arrest Ji Hao, and facing an order like that, Ji Hao would have no choice but to run away with Man Man and his other friends. Not to mention the fact that Ying Zun was being helped by an unknown mole, who probably knew everything about the human society. Possibly, this mole could make Ji Hao take the blame for tons of things, and make him an enemy of the

entire humankind.

"In fact, I’m more curious about how you killed Xia Zun and Yu Zun." Ying Zun narrowed his eyes, looking at Ji Hao as he said slowly, "They were indeed not as powerful as me, but they shouldn’t have died in your hands."

Soft footsteps could be heard as two attendants in long black robes walked over from behind the great hall. They came to Emperor Shun, said with gentle voices, "Shun, Si Wen Ming sent a message back. It’s urgent."

Ji Hao instantly raised his head. An urgent message from Si Wen Ming? It must be about the flood-control mission. How could such an important message fall in Ying Zun’s hands?

"Ying Zun..." Ji Hao gave a deep growl while reaching out his right hand at lightning speed, towards the bamboo tube in an attendant’s hand. The letter from Si Wen Ming was in that bamboo tube.

Ji Hao was swift; he flashed to the two attendant in no time.

The two attendants raised their heads, their eyes dazzling with a five-colored light. Two colorfully glowing man-shaped silhouettes dashed out of their bodies and pounced on Ji Hao.

"Hehe, it’s mine!"

"Nonsense! It belongs to whoever had it first!"

The two silhouettes chuckled with silvery voices. Meanwhile, a tsunami-like overwhelming wave of evil power struck into Ji Hao’s head. Illusions emerged before Ji Hao’s eyes layer by layer; and at the moment, Ji Hao saw countless naked beautiful women jumping into his arms.

"I am Se Zun, remember my name."

"And me, I am Yuu Zun. You and I will be together after I eat your soul."

Chapter 1203: Melt the Sky Devils

‘Se’ and ‘Yuu’, literally meant sexuality and desire. Shaking the minds of their targets with illusions, waking their hidden desires, burning their primordial spirit and then weakening their souls and devouring them, these were all Se Zun and Yuu Zun’s specialties.

Now, Ji Hao was their target. Therefore, the illusions Ji Hao had been seeing were from the strongest instinct of male human adults.

Powers, wealth, women…The highest power, endless wealth, the most beautiful women, all these surged into Ji Hao’s head like tidewater, wrapping him up tightly and squeezing him.

Ying Zun laughed out loud with dry voice. He laughed so hard that he couldn’t help but sway his body, and had countless five-colored stripes emerging on his skin. Pointing at Ji Hao, who was surrounded by the five-colored light, he screamed, "You thought you killed Xia Zun and Yu Zun, so we can’t find your world anymore, didn’t you? You underestimated our telepathic abilities. The moment you killed them, the location of your world has imprinted in our hearts."

"We knew that Yu Zun and Xia Zun fell in this place, so how could we not prepare?"

"I’m not the only one of our kind in Pu Ban City. The others at my level are here too! It’s just that I luckily got a chance to occupy the body of your leader…But, Se Zun, Yuu Zun, you seem to have found a nice prey too!"

Pop! Pop! The skins of the two attendants split up. Their muscles, flesh, bones, tendons and internal organs were all eaten up by Se Zun and Yuu Zun already, leaving two empty and dried skins. Soon, their skins collapsed and became dust. Ying Zun waved his broad sleeve and dispelled all the dust.

Ji Hao opened his eyes and looked at Ying Zun.

Ying Zun grinned in a very weird way. Obviously, he had an indescribable anticipation towards some back things.

"You fraudulent thing!" Ji Hao stared at Ying Zun and said, "They are your own kind, yet you lured them into a trap?"

"Lured them into a trap? No, that's an instinct. Through the unceasing evolution, we are continuously growing stronger and stronger, and that is the only reason my kind can stand on top, above all species from countless worlds in the vast universe." said Ying Zun with a deep voice. "If they can occupy your body and devour your soul, I will delightedly accept that as a result."

"But if, I said if, they end up being devoured by you...You will consume quite a strength for that as well, won't you?" Looking at Ji Hao, Ying Zun smiled evilly and continued, "Then, I will have my chance."

Ji Hao stayed silent. He didn't activate the Taiji cloak, and instead, let Se Zun and Yuu Zun drill into his spiritual space through his eyes. Ying Zun knew about the embryo of the great Dao of destruction, and the fact that the power of devouring and destruction from the Dark Sun could largely suppress sky devils. However, he said nothing to Se Zun and Yuu Zun, but encouraged them to attack Ji Hao.

Ying Zun was planning to stay as the third party and benefit himself from the tussle between Ji Hao and the other two.

Ji Hao sneered in his head.

He opened his mind and let Se Zun and Yuu Zun break in. After that, Ji Hao gave a deep growl and activated the Taiji cloak. A clear layer of light was emitted from the cloak, transformed into a giant lotus, which covered Ji Hao up. Countless spell symbols sparkled faintly in the clear light, releasing a strong and mysterious sense of power, that seemed to be connected with the world and the

universe.

Ying Zun subconsciously made a step backward. He looked at Ji Hao’s glowing cloak in shock and said while his facial muscles twitched suddenly, "Such a great treasure...Can he truly defeat Se Zun and Yuu Zun?"

In his spiritual space, Ji Hao illumined the entire space with his red sun primordial spirit. A golden embryo of Dao, a silver embryo of Dao, and a dark embryo of Dao silently stood in the sun, facing a hazy long sword floating in the middle. The sword was releasing a sharp sword intent, that could even suffocate people.

The Taiji Universe mirror floated above the red sun primordial spirit, emitting a misty light, transforming into thousands of different types of legendary creatures, hovering around the sun. Occasionally, following a bright roar, these creatures would suddenly transform into thousands of spirit plants and sway around the red sun.

Two streams of five-colored light that were tens of thousands of miles long broke into the spiritual space. Along with silvery chuckles, two blur and colorful silhouettes leaned their upper bodies out of the light streams, looking at Ji Hao’s red sun primordial spirit as they burst out into an almost hysterical series of laughter.

"This kid’s soul power is not as great as that old one called Emperor Shun, but the quality of this little one’s soul is so much higher!"

"True, true! Emperor Shun has a powerful soul, like a boundless forest, broad and thriving, yet ordinary. But this little one’s soul..." Clicking their tongues, they continued, "His soul is like a pre-world, precious spirit tree."

"Young Zun thought he has gained so many extra advantages by occupying that Emperor Shun’s soul, because the the soul of a group leader must be the strongest, sweetest one among all. But

it’s strange though. Why is such a little thing having a better soul than his leader?"

As professional soul hunters, Se Zun and Yuu Zun gave their judgments about their ‘prey’ immediately.

Ji Hao was cultivated by Priest Dachi, Priest Qing Wei and Yu Yu, and he had his chance to absorb the essences of the great Dao that belonged to all three of them. His soul had already been through quite a few thorough transformations. An ordinary human being had three souls and seven spirits, but beyond those, Ji Hao had already grown a primordial spirit, and generated three embryos of Dao from the great Dao of Yin, the great Dao of Yang, and the great Dao of destruction.

Emperor Shun’s soul was the same as the soul of any ordinary human being, but stronger. However, in terms of quality, Ji Hao’s soul was indeed better than his.

To sky devils, the soul power was surely important, but the quality of a soul was even more essential!

Ji Hao’s soul was a supreme treasure in the eyes of sky devils. In comparison, Ji Hao’s soul could bring a sky devil a thousand times more benefits than Emperor Shun’s soul could.

"He’s mine!" Se Zun screamed out loud while dashing towards the red sun.

"It depends!" Yuu Zun roared shrilly and rushed up impatiently as well.

Neither of them were staying vigilant.

Ji Hao coldly looked at both of them. All of a sudden, the red sun primordial spirit dazzled with a golden light and started a deep buzzing. A five-colored warm mist began flowing all over his spiritual space. This time, the round cauldron in Ji Hao’s lower belly perfectly followed Ji Hao’s mind and appeared in his spiritual space.

A great suction force was released from the cauldron, generating shrill screams. Se Zun and Yuu Zun were swallowed up by the cauldron without being able to react at all. The cauldron began spinning slowly. Along with a beautiful sound, pure original soul power was released.

Ji Hao’s red sun primordial spirit buzzed slightly, then started absorbing the original soul power coming from the cauldron.

In the Town Hall, five-colored luster faintly emerged on Ji Hao’s skin, which looked quite like the five-colored light in Ying Zun’s eyes.

"Eh? Did they make it?" Ying Zun narrowed his eyes and murmured, "Which one got this kid?"

The names of ‘Yu(玉) Zun’ and ‘Yuu(欲) Zun’ had the same pronunciation, but ‘Yu(玉)’ literally means ‘jade’, while ‘Yuu(欲)’ had the meaning of ‘desire’. The double ‘u’ are here to differentiate these two names.

Chapter 1204: Greedy and Crazy

Ji Hao silently sat in the Town Hall.

Three days had passed. During these few days, Emperor Shun would walk out of the Town Hall from time to time, to meet ministers and give orders. It was not hard to tell that Ying Zun was rather capable, as he had been managing everything pretty well, and his orders weren't questioned by those ministers.

The pure pre-world original soul power was absorbed by Ji Hao's soul. He sensed an indescribably pleasant feeling from the deepest area in his soul, same as the feeling he had back in Southern Wasteland, when he killed a sky devil last time. He silently sat on the ground, legs crossed, while a spot of light shone brighter and brighter in his soul.

Se Zun and Yuu Zun were digested by the cauldron. All their original soul power had become the nourishment of Ji Hao's soul, which allowed Ji Hao's soul to grow amazingly strong. By now, in both terms of quality and power, Ji Hao's soul was no weaker than the souls of powerful beings like Po and Gui Ling, and even slightly stronger.

At this stage, the result Ji Hao could attain by making one inhalation of the natural powers, equaled to the result that an ordinary cultivator could attain with tens of years of severe cultivation. Ji Hao was no longer less talented than anyone.

Ji Hao was thrilled. The happiness came straight from his heart. He released his spirit power to touch that splendid spot of light inside his soul extra carefully.

That was his original soul. Only true powerful beings could grow original souls. With the original soul, even if a cultivator had his or her primordial spirit, embryo of Dao, three souls and seven spirits all perished, he or she would still be able to reincarnate and live again, as long as his original soul remained existing. To any

cultivator, the original soul was the most powerful and secret treasure, with which, true immortality could be attained.

Ji Hao breathed deeply and let his spirit blood transform into Chaos power, flying straight into the red sun primordial spirit and speedily merging with the original soul. That light spot sparkled, then grew slightly brighter.

Next, the light spot released a thin beam of light which split into three, and merged with the three embryos of Dao. Ji Hao felt like floating above the clouds, that every single one of his pore had been absorbing natural powers, and the warm and pure natural powers had been ceaselessly flowing into his spiritual space.

The three embryos of Dao turned clearer, releasing stronger sense of powers. With one deep breath, Ji Hao improved his power by around five percent.

The five-colored round cauldron had been spinning slowly. The original soul power of Se Zun and Yuu Zun was drained already, leaving two sparkling light spots in the cauldron, doggedly fighting against the cauldron. Those were their original souls.

The endless five-colored light wrapped up the two original souls and swirled swiftly. Along with ear-piecing screams, the two original souls were disintegrated within a few minutes. Another strong wave of original souls power surged into Ji Hao's original soul and elevated him even further.

After that, clear memories started crossing Ji Hao's mind. Se Zun and Yu Zun had lived long lives, and been through a lot. Their souls were erased, but their complicated knowledge system slowly merged with Ji Hao's red sun primordial spirit, like a clear river.

At the stage, Ji Hao's memory capacity and thinking ability were millions of times better than ordinary human beings. But still, when his red sun primordial spirit absorbed Se Zun and Yu Zun's memories, he felt dizzy.

Following a thought of his, the five-colored flame burned ragingly in the cauldron and burned out the long and tangled memories about occupying and slaughtering, keeping the essence, such as their secret soul magics, rare treasures they had seen in the vast Chaos, and the cultivation systems of countless powerful beings they had encountered and devoured in their long lives, for Ji Hao to absorb.

Se Zun and Yuu Zun were not so important among their peers at the level of 'Zun'. They couldn't be compared with powerful ones like Ying Zun, even though they managed to step into this level by devouring countless powerful souls in the past millions of years. However, their lives were long, and they had taken part in the invasion to hundreds of worlds, destroyed tens of worlds, and devoured many powerful beings from those worlds.

The extremely positive power, the extremely negative power, the great Dao of destruction; among the ones they devoured, some had cultivated themselves with similar powers as Ji Hao had been doing, and some were even more powerful than Ji Hao. But those beings didn't have supreme treasures to defend themselves, and all ended up being devoured.

Ji Hao's three embryos of Dao slowly absorbed the knowledge possessed by those powerful beings, and had been growing speedily. Thin stripes began emerging from their skins, complicated and beautiful, emitting a strong sense of Dao.

As the three embryos of Dao began growing, the red sun primordial spirit started shrinking, because the three embryos were absorbing the power of the red sun. When the red sun primordial spirit disappeared, the three embryos of Dao would mature.

Se Zun and Yuu Zun's memories were absorbed by Ji Hao bit by bit, and brought him great benefits.

The five-colored luster on Ji Hao's skin faded quietly. Ying Zun

held his hands behind his back, walked to Ji Hao, and asked with a deep voice, "Is it done? Which one of you got the kid?"

Attaining Se Zun and Yuu Zun's memories, Ji Hao now had a deeper understanding of sky devils. He slowly stood up and let a dim five-colored light flash across his eyes, coldly looking at Ying Zun as he said, "I did it of course. I am Yuu Zun...A powerful treasure was there to protect this kid's soul. Se Zun was too impatient, and his original souls were burned, ending up dying together with the kid."

Ying Zun's face dropped instantly as he said harshly, "This time, only five 'Zun' sneaked into Pu Ban City, including us. Yet, you ate Se Zun? You b*stard!"

While cursing, Ying Zun's eyes were almost burning with a five-colored fire, as he stared at Ji Hao with extreme greediness and jealousness, "So, you attained all of Se Zun's power, didn't you? You b*stard, I will..."

"I'll let you have all we found in Pu Ban City!" Ji Hao held his hands behind his back as well, and said coldly, "I will also help you take care of the human leader. I'll help you devour his soul, as long as you stop blaming me for devouring Se Zun, and agree to not tell anyone about it."

"Take care of the human leader?" Ying Zun turned his eyes away and asked.

Ji Hao sneered, then silently cast a secret sky devil magic that he learned from Se Zun and Yuu Zun just now, and released a strange soul power vibration. The great hall was instantly suffused by a misty five-colored light, with countless golden petals descending from the air, and beautiful girls dancing and singing among those petals.

Ying Zun slightly trembled, with his eyes losing focus.

Ji Hao abruptly cast a sky devil magic that even affected Ying

Zun. Ying Zun almost had his mind shaken.

"You...How can you be so powerful?" Ying Zun gave a deep growl. Enviously and greedily, he stared at Ji Hao in the eye, then slowly nodded and continued, "Alright, you help me! But you have to try your best!"

Chapter 1205: Frontal Attack

In a sparse pine woods was an ordinary-looking cabin. This was Emperor Shun's residence, right behind the Town Hall.

A squad of elite warriors in black outfits guarded every important area of the woods. On the ground, a thin white mist was flowing.

The tens of pines near the cabin were nearly a thousand meters tall, with thick trunks. On those trunks were hazy eyes and mouths. These were clearly powerful treemen.

The cabin looked merely tens of meters squared in area, but the inner space was fairly broad. In the ten-miles-squared wooden great hall, arm-thick spell symbols had been making slight 'popping' noises on the walls and the floor, glowing with bright lights.

Those powerful spell symbols sealed the space, isolating this place from the outside world.

Emperor Shun sat on the ground with his eyes entirely turned multicolored. The multicolored light slowly spun in his eyes, while a heavy pressure released in the hall. "Yuu Zun, you know what I can do. If you dare to do anything that I don't want you to do, I will eat you alive, even if I might risk losing this human leader temporarily!"

Ji Hao sat in front of Emperor Shun, legs crossed, his whole body wrapped in a flowing multicolored light. Because of the sky devil magic he had cast, golden light spots had been falling from the air, along with hovering golden blooms. Inside each bloom was a beautiful naked girl, singing and dancing.

He smilingly looked at Emperor Shun and said mildly, "I dare not to, and you know it. I am only a newly promoted one. It's already very lucky for me to follow you, dear Ying Zun, to this rich world and enjoy a banquet. I dare not to betray you."

"I hope so!" Ying Zun chuckled. Throwing a complicated glance at Ji Hao, he released invisible waves of spirit power, circling around Ji Hao over and over again. Carefully sensing the power came from Ji Hao and making sure that power indeed belonged to Yuu Zun, Ying Zun finally nodded, then smoothly locked his hands together.

A dark ring flew out of Ying Zun's hands, with countless squirming faces appearing on this thumb-thick ring.

Human faces, beast faces, and the faces of many strange creatures that Ji Hao had seen from Se Zun and Yuu Zun's memories were squirming slowly, with their mouths wide open, seeming to be screaming. Ji Hao heard nothing with his ears, yet through his spirit power, he heard countless shrill and miserable voices coming at him wave by wave, sharp as daggers.

Ji Hao's red sun primordial spirit was shaken slightly. He almost lost control of his body and failed to pretend to be Yuu Zun. Fortunately, the Taiji Universe mirror released a clear light, which shielded the red sun and allowed Ji Hao to fend against this wave of soul attack. When those shrill screams faded in his soul, Ji Hao quivered slightly. He was soaked in cold sweat already.

"You devoured Se Zun, yet you can't take the power of a spirit treasure of mine. What a useless trash!" Seeing the sweat flowing down from Ji Hao's temples, Ying Zun snorted, then nodded delightfully, smiled, and said, "Come, do what you can to help me devour this human leader...His soul power is great as an ocean, and that sweet aroma is driving me crazy."

Ji Hao took a deep breath, then opened his erect eye. Dense five-colored clouds rose from his erect eye along with a beautiful melody, merging into Emperor Shun's forehead. The five-colored clouds ceaselessly drifted out of Ji Hao's body, seeming to never end. A whole ten minutes later, two silhouettes slowly flew out side by side, drilling into Emperor Shun's body.

Ying Zun knitted his eyebrows, yet twistedly curved his mouth

corners upwards and said, "You are so greedy. You made Se Zun into a spirit puppet...Yuu Zun, you don't want to do the same thing to me, do you?"

Ying Zun had already seen Ji Hao's embryo of destruction. The power of that embryo was also memorized by Ying Zun. Therefore, this time, Ji Hao sent the other two embryos of Dao into Emperor Shun's spiritual space. The cauldron cooperated perfectly this time. It transformed into a bright five-colored light which wrapped up the two embryos of Dao, looking just like the five-colored light of sky devils.

With the sky devil magic he learned just now, Ji Hao played some little tricks. He created a golden lotus and let it spin above the head of his embryo of Yang. From the top of the lotus, a long stream of golden fire had been burning. Nine three-legged Gold Crows hovered around the fire, making sharp and high-pitched caws.

An osmanthus tree bloomed above his embryo of Yin. The three-hundred-meters-tall tree was glowing with a silver light. From time to time, beams of silver light would dazzle out for tens of meters far, then fly back into the crown of the tree. On the tree, a moon was shining, illuminating the surrounding area, and enhancing the beauty with the golden fire in the golden lotus, making Emperor Shun's spirit space look like a magnificent fairyland.

"How lucky you are!"

A gigantic, nine-headed evil creature with thirty-six arms walked out of the darkness. It opposed up its eyes, greedily looking at Ji Hao's embryos of Dao, and said evilly, "You have benefited quite a lot from the kid, haven't you?"

In chorus, the two embryos laughed, "Yes, we have. The kid wasn't so powerful, yet he had pretty amazing understanding of Yin and Yang in this world. I have indeed gained a lot from him. In the future, I will be living an easier life in this world."

Ying Zun's looked down at the two embryos with his enormous bodies. Overwhelming waves of spirit power surged out from the dark ring floating upon his head, carefully scanning the power releasing from Ji Hao's embryos.

This dark ring was the ring that Ying Zun took out just now outside. At the moment, it appeared in Emperor Shun's spiritual space too.

Scanning for a long while, Ying Zun suddenly burst with a furious roar. His thirty-six arms transformed into dark light streams simultaneously, striking down at Ji Hao's embryos rumblingly and thunderously.

"You killed both of them...You devoured their original souls! Kid! I want you dead!" roared Ying Zun.

Emperor Shun's spiritual space began quaking. Those stars were shaking intensely while many areas started twisting, as if this whole space was going to be torn apart by a tremendous force.

Ji Hao gave a resonant howl. Following his voice, those five-colored clouds merged together and transformed back into the cauldron. The cauldron descended along with a beautiful yet strong melody, and released unstoppable waves of creation power in all directions. Wherever the power of creation reached, Emperor Shun's twisted spiritual space was fixed in no time.

The cauldron expanded, and let out a bright torrent of five-colored light. No matter how hard Ying Zun attacked, all the dark light he released was swallowed up by the cauldron. No harm was down to Emperor Shun's spiritual space at all.

Ji Hao's biggest worry was solved perfectly by the cauldron. Now, Emperor Shun's spiritual space wouldn't be harmed. Ji Hao's two embryos laughed out loud in excitement, while the Taiji divine sword split up into a silver sword and a golden sword, being gripped in the hands of the two embryos. The two embryos then transformed into two dazzling streaks of light, sweeping to Ying

Zun.

The darkness was torn apart by the golden and silver light, and next, the two swords hacked fiercely on Ying Zun.

In the meanwhile, the Pan Gu bell rang resonantly, releasing countless streams of Chaos power that wove into a giant cage and imprisoned Ying Zun.

Chapter 1206: Ying Zun's Power

The cauldron transformed into a colorful swirl, draining Ying Sun's original soul power. Streams of dark mist were dragged out of his body and were being devoured by the cauldron. Ying Zun screamed in fury, and the gemstones he wore glowed brightly.

The two embryos each gripped a sword and madly hacked on Ying Zun's body.

Sharp sword lights landed on Ying Zun's body and generated a series of tinkle, raising bright fire sparkles. Hundreds of meters long slashed were left on Ying Zun's body. Ji Hao saw clearly that the flesh under Ying Zun's skin had a strange luster, looking like metal.

His original soul power was draining away. Hacked by the two embryos, the sun power and extremely negative power drilled into his body. Some of the wounds on Ying Zun's body were burning, while the others were freezing. The hotness and the coldness collided with each other in Ying Zun's body and made his skin split, squeezing out more dark mist for the cauldron to devour.

Ying Zun suffered an extreme pain and rage. He roared towards the sky. Thirty-six dark beads rose from his body, flashed across the air and transformed into all kinds of weapons, being gripped in his hands. Raising his arms, Ying Zun crazily bashed the Chaos cage created by the Pan Gu bell.

A muffled series of boom was generated. Ying Zun was unimaginably powerful. Circles of ripple were stirred up from the Chaos streams released by the bell, and the noise was even shaking Ji Hao's two embryos.

"You sky devils can do no more than creating illusions and shaking mind..." Exclaimed Ji Hao's two embryos together, "But, how can you have such a strength?"

The Pan Gu bell was a supreme piece, and Ji Hao had fought many powerful enemies with it so far. Kun Peng, Xiang Liu, and those Chaos monsters, none of them could ever shake the Pan Gu bell; a full-strike launched by any of them could generate a gentle ring from the bell at most.

However, in Emperor Shun's spiritual space, Ying Zun, who was now in his soul form, had actually made the Pan Gu bell buzz. If he bashed the bell like this in the outside, the bell would have destroyed a whole area with a radius of a thousand miles already.

"Smart, silly little thing!" Ying Zun's eighteen eyes shone with a dark light. Arrow-like dark beams darted out of those eyes, towards the two embryos of Dao.

The two embryos controlled the sword, transformed again into golden and silver light streaks, and dazzled all over the space. Sword lights struck down like heavy rain, leaving more deep wounds on Ying Zun's body. Holding the thirty-six weapons, Ying Zun attacked crazily. From time to time, his weapon would bump against the sword lights and bang thunderously. Large cracks had been appearing on those weapons, yet none of them were broken yet.

"It seems that you didn't learn anything useful from the memories of those two trashes, did you?" Ying Zun's body started shrinking. His body was way too enormous. With that body, his defenses were mostly useless. Therefore, he shrank his body.

"Regarding the powers of my kind, those two had only reached the surface. They can indeed shake minds with illusions." said Ying Zun coldly and scornfully, "But, I am at a higher level. I can make anything in my mind real."

"Thunder!" Ying Zun abruptly burst with a great growl.

Hundreds of water-tank-sized thunder bombs suddenly emerged, falling down towards the two embryos.

Ji Hao’s eyebrows twisted. He nearly went crazy!

In Emperor Shun’s spiritual space, Ying Zun created actual thunder bombs, exactly same as the real thing!

Those were true thunder bombs instead of illusions; a bolt of that thunder could seriously destroy a city.

Emperor Shun’s spiritual space was immeasurable and boundless; it was between tangibleness and intangibleness. In this place, Ying Zun created a body for himself with his soul power, but how could he be powerful enough to create true thunder bombs in this place?

"Taiji! Merge!" shouted Ji Hao. The two embryos of Dao transformed into a golden fish and a silver fish, both enormous. The pair of fishes bit each other’s tail, circling swiftly. Light circles spread out, as the two embryos became a giant Taiji diagram, flying towards those thunder bombs.

Thunder bombs fell into the golden and silver Taiji diagram. The soft yet strong Taiji power wrapped up these thunder bombs and ground off their aggressivity, then sent them into the cauldron.

"Blast!" Seeing a small half of those thunder bombs swallowed up by Ji Hao, Ying Zun flicked his finger and shouted.

The rest hundreds of thunder bombs exploded, almost next to the two embryos. Dark flame roared over along with tsunami-like spirit power weaves. The silver and golden Taiji diagram quaked intensively. Ji Hao sensed a piercing pain from his primordial spirit, as those thunder bombs had already harmed his embryos of Dao.

"Suppress!"

Ji Hao gave another thunderous growl. A Chaos power stream descended from the Pan Gu bell, transformed into a giant hand, and grasped those exploding thunder bombs, forcibly compressing those into a human-head-sized dark ball, throwing it into the

cauldron.

"What is this treasure?" Ying Zun greedily looked at the cauldron in shock. The darkness in his eyes grew deeper and deeper.

"This treasure is gonna take your life away!" Ji Hao roared coldly. By now, Ying Zun had already shrunk his body to around thirty-meters-tall. His face and body turned clearer and clearer. Flowing Ji Hao's voice, the colorful swirl transformed from the cauldron turned around above Ying Zun's head. Instantly, strands of dark mist rose from Ying Zun's body, being absorbed by the swirl.

Ying Zun's face twisted awfully. He narrowed his eyes and stared at Ji Hao. He locked his thirty-six arms together, seeming to cast some stunning magic.

Suddenly, a dense purple-golden mist spurted out from one of Ying Zun's heads. That was the power of natural reward. The natural reward power generated a fire, which burned a black smoke out of that head of Ying Zun. Ying Zun screamed in shock, raised a few of his arms and slapped down on his own forehead.

Surrounded by a warm golden and purple light, Emperor Shun broke out of Ying Zun's head. He roared like a beast while dazzling purple-golden light shone from his hands and pierced into Ying Zun's body like long and sharp swords.

The power of natural reward was not lethal. The purple-golden light failed to penetrate Ying Sun's body, yet the evil-suppressing power of the light largely weakened Ying Zun. It made his body hazy and dim, and squeezed a cloud of dark mist out of his body.

Ji Hao seized the opportunity. The golden sword and the silver sword transformed into a pair of strong light stream, circling around Ying Zun, and cutting his body.

The sword lights clanged against Ying Zun's body, leaving wounds and raising clouds of dark smoke. Ying Zun was infuriated. All of a sudden, a head and four arms of his exploded, became dark

thunderbolts, and rumbled down towards Ji Hao's embryos and Emperor Shun's soul. Both the two embryos and Emperor Shun's soul were injured and forced back.

Yet, bursting with another roar, Ji Hao and Emperor Shun marched once again.

Chapter 1207: The True Face

Ying Zun was powerful, especially when everyone was fighting in the soul form.

With the Taiji divine sword, the five-colored cauldron, the Pan Gu bell, and added with the immeasurably great natural reward power from Emperor Shun, Ji Hao and Emperor Shun fought Ying Zun for long with difficulty.

Sky devils were shapeless. They were mysterious beings that ordinary human beings could hardly understand. At the level of soul, they were incomparably strong. Even though Ji Hao and Emperor Shun had combined their powers, the fight was still exhausting and difficult.

Emperor Shun's soul was injured severely, while cracks appeared on Ji Hao's two embryos of Dao.

The Pan Gu bell had been trying its best to protect Emperor Shun's spiritual space, preventing any destructive damage. As a consequence, the Pan Gu bell could only spare a small part of power to protect Ji Hao and Emperor Shun.

Ying Zun's power was ground off bit by bit. Ji Hao and Emperor Shun had both suffered serious injuries, that their bodies had become hazy and blur. Ying Zun's sky devil magics were way too brutal and evil, such that many times, Ji Hao and Emperor Shun almost suffered fatal strikes before they could figure out how Ying Zun attacked.

Fortunately, Ji Hao had many powerful treasures, while Emperor Shun was protected by the natural reward power. Otherwise, both of them would have been defeated by Ying Zun already.

Ying Zun's heads and arms exploded one after another, continuously generating terrifying explosive forces, sweeping to Ji Hao and Emperor Shun. Ji Hao and Emperor Shun struggled to

fend themselves against Ying Zun’s desperate, crazy attacks, while the five-colored cauldron was speedily devouring Ying Zun’s power.

The Pan Gu bell buzzed deeply, shielding Emperor Shun’s spiritual space firmly. Ying Zun released dark light beams, striking on the bell and stirring up large ripples on the Chaos power streams flowing out of the bell. Emperor Shun’s spiritual space was quaking, stars were shaking, and almost falling. Some of those stars seemed to even disintegrate.

Ji Hao didn’t know how long this fight lasted, but eventually, the five-colored cauldron drained Ying Zun’s power, leaving a dull dark spot floating before Ji Hao’s face with pure evilness. That was Ying Zun’s original soul.

"You lost!" Ji Hao’s two embryos of Dao slowly stepped forward, looking at Ying Zun’s original soul.

"I haven't!" A weak, faintly sensible soul power vibration came from the original soul. Ji Hao heard Ying Zun’s powerless roar and scream. Ying Zun had every reason to be unwilling to submit. If the five-colored cauldron didn’t restrain him so perfectly, Ji Hao and Emperor Shun would have been swallowed by him long ago.

Ji Hao had to admit that Ying Zun was the strongest, most terrifying enemy he had ever encountered. If the five-colored cauldron were not so powerful, and couldn’t operate automatically, Ji Hao would never be able to defeat Ying Zun.

"Admit it or not, I won. I’m not as powerful as you, neither do I have such a deep understanding of souls as you do, but I have treasures... many treasures." Ji Hao smilingly grabbed the dark ring floating beside Ying Zun’s true spirit. During the fight, this dark ring was cut into pieces by the Taiji divine sword, yet it doggedly fixed itself over and over again tens of times. Even Ji Hao was surprised by this treasure.

"You are dead!" Ying Zun’s original soul trembled slightly. The

colorful swirl transformed from the five-colored cauldron released tens of wisps of mist that wrapped up Ying Zun's original soul and slowly dragged it into the swirl.

"You are dead!" Ying Zun's original soul struggled and screamed hysterically for the last time, "The powerful ones among us have already sensed your world! The supreme, powerful ones...They will descend on your world with our army, and you, your souls will all become our prey..."

The colorful swirl swallowed Ying Zun's original soul up. After that, Ying Zun's memories flew into Ji Hao's mind, even greater and more complicated than the memories of Se Zun and Yuu Zun. Ji Hao hurriedly burned out all the useless memories, then began slowly absorbing the essence.

Soon, a text of sky devil magics, that could be translated into 'Theories of Appearance and Nature of Great Zun', was imprinted in Ji Hao's primordial spirit.

Ji Hao carefully read this text. This text wasn't created by Ying Zun himself. Instead, he inherited it from a supreme-level being among all sky devils. This text could be counted as one of the most important texts of sky devil magics, and the magics recorded in it were all top-grade ones.

These sky devil magics were weird, completely different from all that Ji Hao had learned before. According to the text, one needed to grow an 'evil seed' from all illusions, and this 'evil seed' was almost the same as Ji Hao's primordial spirit.

Sky devils could create all kinds of illusions, worlds, living beings, and reincarnations; they put their 'evil seeds' in mortal worlds, and let themselves struggle to survive, go through all hardships, just like great waves sweeping away sands and leaving pure gold.

Once the pure gold was attained, a sky devil could step into the stage of 'nature'. Ying Zun was at this level. Beyond illusions, he

could create ‘real things’; with a single thought, he could generate both lives and death. Everything he created was real, with true fleshy bodies. Plants, animals, all kinds of living creatures could live or die under his thoughts. At this level, a sky devil had the power to create small yet true worlds, and be incredibly powerful.

This text was stunning and inclusive, recording a great number of strange dark sky devil magics, which were hard to understand. Ji Hao would never abandon his own cultivation to learn these weird sky devil magics, but some bizarre tricks recorded in this text could indeed help Ji Hao to reach to a higher level with his primordial spirit and embryos of Dao.

Ying Zun’s memories flew into Ji Hao’s head like an endless rapid river. Ji Hao put those less important memories aside and looked into Ying Zun’s experiences in Pan Gu world.

As Ying Zun’s memories flashed across Ji Hao’s mind, Ji Hao’s face turned darker and darker.

"You had been in Pan Gu world for three hundred years."

"Priest Hua and Priest Mu once traded the Theories of Appearance and Nature of Great Zun from you. No wonder Dragon-slam and Tiger-blast’s weird multi-headed embryos of Dao…looked so similar to that nine-headed thirty-six-armed body of yours. Priest Hua, Priest Hua, are they trying to absorb sky devil magics and create a new cultivation method?"

"‘Three-thousand worlds can be created with one thought’, no wonder this sounds so familiar."

"Hm, the mole in Pu Ban City…is…"

Ji Hao suddenly raised his head and looked at Emperor Shun’s soul in shock, "Shun, Rock Dragon old man, he is…"

Seeing Ying Zun disappear in the colorful swirl, Emperor Shun sighed in relief. Sitting in the spiritual space with crossed legs, he was now surrounded by warm sparkling lights, as he was healing

his injured soul with the natural reward power.

Hearing Ji Hao, Emperor Shun showed an extremely bitter, sad look and said, "Rock Dragon old man, he...He is not the mole...is he?"

Emperor shun’s look turned complicated. He was nervous, shocked, sad and confused. He gazed at Ji Hao, then slowly shook his head and sighed, "He can’t be the mole, can he? Rock Dragon old man and his people...How can he ever betray the humankind?"

Ji Hao looked at Emperor Shun and stayed silent. A golden beam flew out of his forehead and drilled into Emperor Shun’s eyes, as Ji Hao shared some of Ying Zun’s memories with Emperor Shun.

Chapter 1208: The Star Guards of The Humankind

On the southwest side of Pu Ban City was a mountain range with white rocks. The mountain range was not tremendous, as it extended for no more than thousand miles in length and five-hundred miles in width. Quiet valleys and caves could be found easily in this area; tall trees were rare, and sparse bushes covered the whole place.

In the core area of this mountain range was a deep valley. On both sides of the valley, ancient pines stood on the mountain sides, branches coiled by thick veins, and roots covered in moist mosses and large ganoderma mushrooms. The entire valley was suffused by the special herbal aroma of ganoderma mushroom.

Walking in through the valley, at the end of the ten-mile-long winding path was an extensive area. A series of buildings stood in this area. These buildings were all built with the special jade-like white rock from this mountain range.

Exposed in the wind and rain for countless years, the beautiful white rock surfaces were mottled and covered in cracks, which were filled with mosses. At first glance, these buildings looked like old bronze, dull and heavy, full of stories.

Walking past these buildings, one could see a regular sized entrance to a cave, on the mountainside at the end of the valley. From time to time, human beings with white, black and gray long shirts would silently walk in or out.

Inside the entrance was a clean and broad path, with doors on both sides. All doors were cast in bronze, embossed with all kinds of fierce creatures. All doors were shut tight. No one knew who was behind those doors and doing what.

Abruptly, a door opened. A hoary-haired old man leaned his

upper body out and handed out a dragon-skin scroll, which emitted a faint herbal scent, while saying, "A hundred secret dragon-skin scrolls, put them in, fie!"

A young man in a black shirt quickly walked over, handed over the scrolls with both hands, then walked away towards the deeper area of the path quickly. The old man murmured something, then heavily shut the bronze door.

Walking in through the path, one would find that the sizes of the doors on both sides were turning larger and larger, and more and more forks were emerging in the path. At the end of the path was an enormous, magnificent palace, which was clearly enchanted with a space-folding magic.

The palace was a hundred miles squared, with an earthy yellow color. The dome of the palace was mysterious dark-cyan in color. The floor of this palace was cast from brass, and the dome was made from bronze. Countless fist-sized pearls were inlayed between complicated patterns in the dome, glowing brightly while pouring a stream of light onto the floor. Some light streams were meters in radius, and some were over ten meters in radius.

Under each light stream was an iron wood table, with dragon-skin scrolls piled on it. Some scrolls were covered in blood-red characters, paintings, and spell symbols, while some were emitting a faint herbal scent, and were completely blank.

A group of human beings stood beside those tables, holding ink brushes, carefully writing on those dragon-skin scrolls with a special ink made from flood dragon blood mixed with cinnabar, and tens of types of rare materials.

The hands of these people were all wrapped in a thick layer of light. Their powers had been flowing into their ink brushes, merging with the ink, and printing those characters, paintings, and spell symbols on the scrolls.

These dragon-skin scrolls were made through a hundred and

eight processes with rare magical herbs, and were especially strong. No weapons could break these scrolls, no fire could burn them, and no water could soak them. No bugs dared to approach these scrolls either. Unless some powerful beings at the level of Magus Kings or above tried to damage these scrolls on purpose, these scrolls could be preserved until the end of the day.

Natural disasters such as earthquakes, flood, volcano eruption or thunder blasts, could never hurt these dragon-skin scrolls. This kind of scroll was the best information carrier, developed by the humankind after countless years of efforts. With these scrolls, the civilization of the humankind would be preserved and passed on.

The special flood dragon blood ink would never fade with time passing by.

Everyone in the palace had been writing or drawing nervously. Their movements were slow, especially slow. Every stroke they made was made with extra carefulness and cautiousness. By writing on those scrolls, they felt like they were carving steel blocks with heavy axes. They tried their bests to not make any mistake; they didn’t want to leave any mistake for the later generations.

A young man in a white flax shorts walked hurriedly into the palace, with a large pile of well-prepared dragon-skin scrolls held in his arms. He quickly came to an old man and carefully put those scrolls on a table.

"These have just arrived from the Magi Palace. The one thousand, seven-hundred, and eighty-nine improved formulae for diseases, created by the Magi Palace in the recent three months." said the young man politely, "Every formula is at least two-hundred percent more effective than the old one."

The old man nodded with a faint smile, and responded with a deep voice, "Well done. Diseases will certainly attack after the flood, yet the Magi Palace provided so many improved formulae

timely. Well done!"

A bronze board floated in the air. A hoary old man sat on the board quietly, with his long hair and bear tangled together, piled up around his body for three feet, yellowing like old ivory. Expressionlessly, this old man looked down at those people in the palace.

Two young men stood behind the old man. Their eyes sparkled with a faint five-colored light. With twisted, evil looks, they stared at those people in the palace. Extremely low voices came from the mouths of these two young men, only for the old man sitting on the bronze board to hear.

"Don’t worry, Rock Dragon old man. We will keep our promises. You and your children, and the children of your children, will all have eternal lives, and will not be attacked by us. All you need to do is cooperate. Help us in seizing the highest power of your kind, and let us control your humankind. Your reward will beyond your imagination."

Rock Dragon old men gazed at those people in the palace with a complicated look.

A very long while later, he murmured to himself, "I am the leader of Star Guards. My duty, the duty of Star Guards, is to save and preserve the human civilization, when human beings are facing destructive disasters, and pass it on, to make sure that the human civilization will not die out."

"But this time...I chose to be on your side, to push the humankind deeper into the swamp, towards the destruction." continued Rock Dragon old man, "My family, generation by generation, we have been loyal and devoted to the humankind...I...I..."

The two young men smiled coldly, pressed their hands on Rock Dragon old man’s shoulders, and said, "You did nothing wrong, nothing wrong at all. We all have to think of ourselves, and our children. Betraying your own kind? We’ve seen a lot like this. It’s

truly no big deal."

The two young men seemed to say more, but a middle-aged man rushed in, kneeled, and kowtowed to the old man.

"Grand Elder, Emperor Shun is here."

Chapter 1209: The Obsession with Living

"This is a forbidden area. Without our leader's permission, no one is allowed to step in...Not even the human emperor!"

In the dark path, two middle-aged men in black dragon-skin armors blocked Ji Hao's way, with long and thin blades held in their hands. They slightly bent their knees, lowered their bodies, and gripped the blade hilts with both hands, fixing their eyes on Ji Hao like beasts staring at their prey. If Ji Hao dared to take another step forward, they would put up a desperate fight.

"Emperor Shun is right here. I am Marquis Yao Ji Hao, and we are here to talk to Rock Dragon, your leader." said Ji Hao with a deep and strong voice, "Clear the way!"

Emperor Shun was wearing a royal robe, followed by a troop of heavily armored human warriors. These warriors were from Emperor Shun's family, and were his most trusted warriors.

The two middle-aged man didn't say another word. They breathed deeply, then thick stripes emerged on their white skins. Along with there heavy breaths, their heads quickly transformed into black tiger heads.

Ji Hao's eye corners twitched intensely — This was a rare cultivation method created by beast Magi from Southern Wasteland. With a dedicated method, the soul of a carefully selected, powerful beast could merge with a young human being. As the young human being grows up, his or her soul would be gradually nourished by the beast's soul. As a result, in terms of strength, agility, life-force, this young human being could go beyond the limitations of the humankind in all aspects.

However, in the process of growth, this young human being would be constantly threatened by the beast soul, as his or her soul could be devoured by the beast soul at any time. After that, this young human being would become a half-human and half-beast

monster. Therefore, this beast Magi cultivation method was forbidden by Zhu Rong long ago, and was rarely used at present. Except for some uncivilized beast Magi clans, only extra powerful clans would use it to train reliable warriors.

These two warriors, who were called ‘star guards’ by Emperor Shun, had the souls of tigers sealed in their bodies!

Buzz! The long blades in the two warriors’ hands spurted wisps of black mist, while countless black spell symbols emerged on those blades. Meanwhile, streams of dark mist surged out of the rock walls on both sides, being speedily absorbed by the two blades.

"Evil ghosts merging with human bodies." Ji Hao looked at the two middle-aged human warriors with a dark face. They had not only sealed fierce tiger souls in their bodies. The cultivation methods they used were mostly evil and cruel, and highly harmful to themselves.

This evil ghost magic is incredibly powerful, but even more dangerous than the beast souls inside their bodies. During the cultivation process, with slight carelessness, the evil ghosts could devour all of the cultivator’s spirit blood.

These two were dare-to-die warriors!

"Clear the way!" Glancing at the two middle-aged warriors whose eyes had turned pasty, Ji Hao didn’t want to waste any more time. He gave a long shout, leaned his body forward, and pressed his hands on the two warriors’ chests, releasing a soft yet strong power through his palms.

The two middle-aged warriors were both powerful Divine Magi. Because of their life-risking cultivation style, even though they were newly promoted Divine Magi, they were even stronger than ordinary high-level Divine Magi.

Nevertheless, the power released from Ji Hao’s palms was unstoppable. These two warriors failed to steady their bodies and

were forced back for hundreds of meters.

Tens of star guards with black dragon-skin armors were behind the two warriors. They boosted up their strengths together and attempted to stop the two warriors, but failed, and ended up being thrown back by Ji Hao's torrent of power.

Staggering back for hundreds of meters, a bone-piercing cold power erupted before these star guards could even steady their bodies. Puff! Beams of cold light burst from their bodies and froze these star guards in a giant deep blue ice block, which had a faint silver luster.

Following a series of cracking noise, complicated white stripes emerged in the ice block, sparkling. Judging by these stripes, this ice block was not an ordinary one. Instead, it contained the great Dao power, and could only be melted by some rare divine fires and spirit flames.

People walking in the path stopped in shock. Unlike those armored warriors, these people were the 'seeds of civilization'. They had wide ranges of knowledge and great capacities of information kept in their heads. Any of them could largely improve the level of civilization development of a clan. However, they were all awfully weak physically.

"Seal this place. Whoever dares to move without permission..." Emperor Shun tightened his face and breathed deeply, then slowly gave the order. Remaining silent for quite a while, he let out the last few words, "...will be executed summarily!"

'Whoever dares to move without permission will be executed summarily'!

Normally, Emperor Shun would never give such a cruel order. Not every star guard was guilty. They didn't all choose the side of sky devils and betray the humankind. Normally, Emperor Shun would give everyone a chance to explain themselves; he would interrogate each of them carefully to get results.

But today, he was enraged; he was also confused.

He panicked. He worried that something even worse might happen. Therefore, he gave this cruel order.

The troop of human warriors rushed in speedily. They broke all closed bronze doors one after another, sealed the path and every branch, took over all defensive magic formations, and set up new magic seals, firmly blocking the whole valley area.

Ji Hao took the lead, with Emperor Shun followed closely behind him. They swept across the path with over a thousand strong human warriors from Emperor Shun's family.

All the way, star guards had been showing up, attempting to stop them. Yet, Ji Hao sealed all of them in the dark-blue ice by using his power of Taiji. None of these star guards could take even one strike from Ji Hao.

Bang! Ji Hao violently kicked open the halfway closed gate of the palace at the end of the path and generated a strong gale, which raised the hair of people in the palace.

Those people raised their heads and looked at Ji Hao in shock and confusion.

Ever since the beginning of Star Guards, when this secret palace was built, no one dared, nor could to set foot in this place without permission, not to mention violently kicking the gate like Ji Hao just did.

"Shun, it's been a while. Hmm, you don't look so good. Are you ill? You are the emperor of our humankind. Please, take care of yourself." Rock Dragon old man sat on the bronze board and calmly greeted to Emperor Shun.

"I want a reason!" Emperor Sun slowly took a few steps forward, raised his head, and looked at Rock Dragon old man, saying with a deep voice.

Rock Dragon old man glanced at Ji Hao, then looked at those

heavily armored warriors, who had been nimbly scattering around Emperor Shun. Next, he turned around and glanced at the two young men behind him, sighed slowly and said, "You know...My life is ending, even though you, and the few former emperors before you, have tried your best to find me all kinds of precious things to prolong my life. Fire jujubes from the East Sea, gold pears from Southern Wasteland, green lotus roots from Southern Wasteland, jade mushrooms from Western Wasteland..."

Shaking his head, Rock Dragon old man continued, "I’m afraid of death. That’s all."

Chapter 1210: Cut the Knot

Emperor Shun remained silent.

The palace was as silent as a grave. Many star guards raised their heads in shock, looking at Rock Dragon old man. Some star guards had been transcribing secret texts in this place for almost all their lives; they could perfectly control the muscles of their hands. But at the moment, their fingers twitched slightly, leaving ugly marks on those dragon-skin scrolls, wasting thousands of sheets for no reason.

Human beings were born with all kinds of desire. Power, wealth, territory...However, the fear of death and the thirst for living could generate the ultimate desire of a human being.

Rock dragon old man had lived for many years; he had served at least five human emperors. In his long life, he memorized countless secret texts, learned a wide range of knowledge; you could even see him as a walking thesaurus of the human civilization.

He knew all the secrets of the humankind, even including those deepest, darkest ones. He also knew many secrets about Pan Gu world, which were dug up by generations of human beings with solid efforts.

Rock Dragon old man was way too important to the humankind. He failed to step into the level of Supreme Magi. Therefore, every human emperor would spare no effort to prolong his life. With all kinds of treasure collected from every corner of the world, his life was extended year after year.

However, Rock dragon old man was too old. Unlike Candle Dragon Gui, who was gifted with a long span of life because of his candle dragon bloodline, Rock Dragon old man was only a human being after all. He was stuck at the level of Divine Magus and couldn’t make any progress, no matter how hard he tried. No

matter how many life-extending magic medicines he took, his body was still withering as the time passed by. Now, he was already dying.

"I thought that a wise man like you should have seen through life and death already." After a long while, Emperor Shun started talking. He still didn't want to believe this. "After all, even many of the most ordinary human warriors see it clearly."

Taking a deep breath, Emperor Shun raised his head, looking at the dark-cyan dome, and those light streams pouring down from it, then murmured, "At least, those warriors had no fear of death when they put on armors and raised weapons to face the non-humankind in Chi Ban Mountain."

Shaking his head, Emperor Shun lowered his head, looking at those deeply shocked star guards, and continued, "At least, facing the flood and those water-kind creatures, warriors in our flood-control troops are fighting with their lives."

"They are not as smart as you... Some of them are even silly and confused. For many young people, even learning to write can be a torture in their eyes. They don't know much, they really don't."

"But non-humankind beings were killing their parents, raping their sisters, invading their territories passed down from their ancestors through generations. So, they puffed out their chests and risked their own lives to fight those non-humankind beings. Led by Gong Gong, the water-kind raised a flood and attempted to bring down the entire humankind, to enslave us. So, those young warriors stood out again and risked their lives, fighting the enemies."

Shaking his head slightly, Emperor Shun carried on, "Among us, many had no fear of death."

Smiling bitterly, Emperor Shun looked at Rock Dragon old man, and continued with a dry voice, "But I never thought, you, the wisest human being..."

"I am afraid of death... Is this shameful?" Rock Dragon old man smiled. His smile was simple and honest, water-clear, without any hesitation. He had deeply sunken eyes, yet those eyes were pure as the eyes of a newborn baby.

Looking at Rock Dragon old man's eyes, Ji Hao knew that Rock Dragon old man had 'figured it out' already.

He was indeed a wise man. Rock Dragon old man had seen through everything and solved every puzzle. Even though he was wrong, he was determined, with no regrets.

"I am afraid of death, because I have lived too long, and I know too much. I am afraid of death because I understand how to appreciate life and the beauty of the world the most."

"I want to live, so I can see all mountains and oceans in this world; I want to live, so I can watch the sunrise and sunset in every part of the world. I want to live, so I can watch the clouds drifting, the snow falling, the flowers blooming, and the rivers flowing."

"I know too much, and I realized that the more I know, the more I am confused...Emperor Shun, do you know how many types of stones exist in this world? What about bugs? Fishes?"

"This is only one world, Pan Gu world, yet this one world took me so much time to study about it. But with all the time I have spent, I failed to dig up all secrets of this world! Then someone told me that, Pan Gu world was just one of countless worlds in the vast Chaos."

"I want to visit the other worlds. I want to see the flowers, the snowflakes of those worlds. I want to drink wine and read a book under towering trees of those worlds; I want to ramble under the starry skies of those worlds...I want to be with beautiful women in those worlds, then spread my bloodline all over the universe!"

"I can't stand it... I can't die. There is so much wonderfulness I have yet to see and live through, so much knowledge I have yet to

learn...I can’t become a decayed corpse, a puff of ash...Maybe, thousands of descendants will worship me as their ancestor’s soul after I die. But so what?"

"So, you betrayed me...betrayed the humankind!" Emperor Shun nodded with a bitter smile and responded, "I should have figured it out long ago. You’re the only one who knows so well about the weaknesses of my six treasures and the ‘People and Motherland’ painting, the only one among all human beings! The only one! I just didn’t want to believe it."

Rock Dragon old man calmly looked at Emperor Shun, then slowly stood up from the bronze board. His tangled long hair and beard loosened themselves, wisp by wisp, gently swaying around his body.

"Didn’t you want to believe it?" Rock Dragon old man grinned, quite carelessly and relaxedly, as he said with a bland tone, "Let me do something that might make you believe..."

"It seems that Ying Zun, Se Zun, and Yuu Zun have all failed. Is there any bigger secret about the human emperor that I don’t know yet? But,, this is what you’ve been looking forward to, isn’t it?" He turned around and said to the two young men behind him.

The two young men curved up their mouth corners, nodded and laughed, "Good, let’s see which one of us can have the soul of your emperor!"

Rock Dragon old man chuckled, then clapped his hands loudly. Countless pearls inlaid in the dome suddenly shone with a dazzling light, while a strong wave of power descended. Countless heavily armored warriors showed up all of a sudden.

At least ten-thousand warriors appeared with their eyes sparkling with the five-colored light, gripping sharp blades as they silently launched attacks on Emperor Shun’s warriors and Ji Hao.

Chapter 1211: The Powers of Sky Devils

Rock Dragon old man had obstacles in his heart.

The more he knew, the more he got confused. Countless ‘unknowns’ accumulated in his heart and became barriers, keeping him away from the breakthrough to the level of Supreme Magus.

He was a peak-level Divine Magus many years ago, a top-grade one. But, the throne of the human emperor had changed its owner a couple of times, yet he was still a peak-level Divine Magus. He failed to make any progress.

He was way too knowledgeable. Therefore, as a Divine Magus, he was stunningly powerful. Every single hair of his was sparkling with countless tiny spell symbols, each being completely different; fire, water, thunder, poisons, ice, light, mist, phantoms...

Ji Hao raised his head, looking at Rock Dragon old man. He felt that he wasn’t fighting against one human being. Instead, it seemed that ten thousand Divine Magi launched attacks on him simultaneously. These Divine Magi all had different powers; they attacked with all of their powers, and their attacks were all lethal.

"You know everything...Yet you have no specialty!" Ji Hao roared towards the sky and shouted out Rock Dragon old man’s greatest weakness.

Rock Dragon quivered. His clear eyes suddenly turned lusterless. Ji Hao’s words pointed out his biggest weakness, the one he cared the most about. He was distracted, and his mind was shaken.

His hair clanged against each other, as he dashed to Ji Hao and Emperor Shun along with a shrill swishing noise.

Ji Hao laughed out loud and gently clapped his hands. Buzz! Faint golden powder puffed up from his ten fingers, looking light tiny golden light spots, hovering around his fingertips. Gradually, transparent, golden lotuses bloomed on his fingertips.

Silvery bird songs could be heard from those lotuses. Breathtakingly beautiful phoenixes airily flew out from those lotuses, shaking their long, glowing tail feathers. They spread their wings while singing happily and showing off their beauty.

The hundred-miles-wide palace was illuminated by the splendid golden light. Refreshing aroma of flowers, herbs, and fruits spread in the air, along with beautiful, soul-comforting bird songs, and countless translucent, golden petals drifting down.

Faintly audible Buddhist chanting echoed through the air. Everyone on the scene sensed it, strong and touching, but no one understood it. After all, things like ‘Buddhist chants’ shouldn’t be existing in this era. With something he learned in the previous life, Ji Hao brought it here.

The simple and strong melody resounded across Rock Dragon old man’s heart, and the hearts of all possessed star guards in the palace.

Rock Dragon old man trembled; his hair paused in the air, and stopped moving. All of the star guards in the palace showed faint smiles. These star guard working with those dragon-skin scrolls were not fighters, and under the effects of the magic Ji Hao cast, they all fell asleep.

As for those heavily armored star guard warriors who were possessed by sky devils, the Buddhist chants Ji Hao created were torturing their souls. The Pan Gu bell floated above Ji Hao’s head, while he gently knocked his fingers on ut, generating slight bell rings that echoed with the Buddhist chants, striking on those possessed guards.

Over ten-thousand possessed warriors began vomiting blood. Their eyes burned with a five-colored flame, while their faces twisted like ghosts.

"Damn you! Rock Dragon, you should die!" Ji Hao was smiling, but his voice sounded like the cries of a ten-thousand years old

sorrowful ghost.

The eyes of those possessed warriors were burned out. Through their empty eye sockets, Ji Hao found, in both anger and shock, that the blood and flesh of these warriors were all devoured by sky devils. By now, nothing but their skins remained.

Locking his fingers together, Ji Hao gave a thunderous roar and cast an evil-suppressing magic that he learned from Yu Yu, then slapped heavily on the Pan Gu bell with both his hands.

A resounding bell ring was generated. All tables in the palaces and dragon-skin scrolls on those tables disintegrated momentarily, turning into bits and pieces that darted all over the area.

The armors of all possessed warriors shattered suddenly; their skins split up, exposing the twisting five-colored light and flame inside their bodies. While flickering, the vividly colorful light and flame quickly dimmed down like a candlelight in a hurricane.

"This is our supreme magic!" The two young men behind Rock Dragon old man burst with a raging growl, "How did you learn our supreme magic? You, you...You didn’t just defeat Ying Zun and the other two..."

Ji Hao’s eyes sparkled with a silver and golden light as he responded coldly, "I didn’t just defeat them, I’ve also devoured their original souls. All their memories and powers are mine now!"

The two young men glanced at each other, then roared out in rage. The one in the left trembled intensively, then suddenly exploded into a cloud of glowing five-colored smoke. From the exploding human body, an entirely golden silhouette emerged, with three heads and eight arms, wearing all kinds of sparkling gemstones.

The other one also roared with a high-pitched voice and exploded, after which, a half-human and half-dragon, silvery creature flew out. The upper body of this creature was humanoid,

but with four faces and six arms. Each arm was holding a long spear, and all eight eyes glared at Ji Hao; its lower body was a dragon tail.

Ji Hao's pupils shrank. Both of them were as powerful as Ying Zhun; they had gone beyond the 'appearance', and reached the level of 'nature', which meant they could already create real things with their powers.

"Perfect! Let me see what you have!" Ji Hao shouted out loud, then activated the Pan Gu bell and the Taiji Universe mirror together. The Pan Gu bell released dense streams of Chaos power and covered Ji Hao and the two sky devils. Meanwhile, the Taiji Universe mirror shone with a misty light, which blocked the line of sight of all the others.

When the light pierced everyone's eye, it disabled them from seeing what had actually been happening, Ji Hao activated the five-colored cauldron without any hesitation, transformed it into a colorful swirl, and wrapped up that half-human half-dragon creature, while the two sky devils hadn't paid much attention to the swirl yet.

Before the other sky devil could help, Ji Hao bent his body, gripped the Taiji divine sword, and rushed up, launching a crazy wave of hacks.

Unlike his usual violent and straightforward style of swordplay, this time, by wielding the sword, Ji Hao created layers of illusions. His sword became hazy and blue, and the two sky devils could barely see it. Ji Hao's sword landed on the two sky devils' bodies over and over again.

Ji Hao had already started combining those sky devil magics with what he had learned from Yu Yu and his brothers. Sky devil magics were indeed evil, but were also impressively powerful. A cultivator should never build his or her cultivation upon these evil sky devil magics, but in the right way, these magics could serve perfectly as

a supportive cultivation method.

Rock Dragon old man finally realized what had just happened. Harshly, he yelled at Ji Hao, "You rude child, how dare you talk to me like that?!"

As Rock Dragon old man prepared to attack Ji Hao again, Emperor Shun gave a long sigh and blocked his way.

Chapter 1212: Never Peaceful

Rock Dragon old man was powerful.

But facing Emperor Shun, he was easily defeated.

As the leader of the Star Guard, he was responsible for protecting the human civilization, the human culture. Every star guard had made a powerful soul blood oath. Emperor Shun did nothing but stand in front of Rock Dragon old man, and taking a full-power strike launched by Rock Dragon old man.

Emperor Shun stayed perfectly unharmed, while Rock Dragon old man vomited blood. Rock Dragon old man's spirit internal stars collapsed suddenly, while his limbs were shattered as well.

He was at his last gasp now.

"That soul blood oath is indeed powerful. I, I've tried for so many years, but still failed to deactivate it." Rock Dragon old man fell on the ground while vomiting blood. He laughed bitterly to Emperor Shun, "I want, want nothing but to live. Is it too much?"

"If possible, I also want you to live forever. You are the wisest human being, and none of us wants to lose you," Emperor Shun kneeled on one knee beside Rock Dragon old man and held up Rock Dragon old man's upper body, letting him lean against his shoulder.

Pressing his left hand on Rock Dragon old man's back, Emperor Shun sent his own life-force into Rock Dragon old man's body to keep him alive, while saying, "If you had any other wish, we would have tried out best to fulfill your expectations. But you chose the wrong way. You really shouldn't have agreed to these sky devils' requests...See, they fed on your families!"

Emperor Shun pointed at those broken armors on the ground.

Earlier, Ji Hao destroyed over ten-thousand possessed star guard warriors with a single strike. Those sky devils were all killed, but

way before that, they devoured the souls, the blood, and the flesh of those star guard warriors, leaving nothing but empty shells.

Those star guard warriors were all Rock Dragon old man's families, his offsprings.

Rock Dragon old man looked at those armor pieces in silence. Abruptly, an ice-cold drop of tear rolled out from his wrinkled eye corner as he murmured to himself, "Yeah, so many sweet boys, they shouldn't have died. They could have lived. Why did I work with those evil beings...?"

"Green Pine, he got married three months ago."

"Little Six, he had just been engaged with the girl-next-door."

"And little Piggy, he loved grilled pig ears the most. Days ago, he went into the mountain with his brothers, brought back a few huge wild boars. These were all wonderful kids. They were the future of our humankind... Why did I agree to let those evil beings possess them?"

"I am truly afraid of death." Rock Dragon old man struggled to raise his head, looking at Emperor Shun, "I am your teacher. Shun, you and the few boys before you, you have all learned from me. But I, an old man, watched you boys become Supreme Magi and leave the world one after another. You left the old man here alone..."

"I am really afraid. I know a lot, I know many things that you don't, but I am more confused than any of you."

"Where will I go after I die?"

"Will I still be me, after I die?"

"Is reincarnation real?"

"What about a thousand years later after I have died? Will I still exist?"

"In my life, I have my most beloved woman, my favorite children, grandchildren...I have so much to care...What will

happen to them after I died? My most beloved girl, if reincarnation is real and I can live again, will you still recognize me? Will I still recognize you when we meet again?"

"The great terror between life and death...Death is not so terrifying. What I am truly frightened of is loosing all that I love. I can't let it all go. The more I am afraid of losing, the more confused I get. The more confused I get, the more frightened I feel ..."

Rock Dragon old man looked at Emperor Shun in the eyes, pointed at his own heart, and continued, "But, it still shouldn't happen. I have a chance to think now. No matter how badly I am terrified of death, I shouldn't be helping those evil beings. I am dying now, but my mind is suddenly clear again. When did things start to change?"

Emperor Shun knitted his eyebrows. His eyes shone with a sharp light, as he asked in a deep voice, "You...What can you remember?"

Rock Dragon old man remained silent for a long while, then raised his right hand with difficulty, weakly knocked on his forehead and said, "Someone, someone erased some of my memories...Ah, how terrifying...Hehe, I thought that I am a powerful one, especially good at all kinds of soul magic...I am, always, always the one to do things to the others' souls...But, I never thought that one day, someone would do things to me, yet I didn't even know."

"This, hmm, hehe...I am dying now, but I finally remembered."

"My youngest granddaughter, that day, she brought back a lotus." Rock Dragon old man looked at Emperor Shun, his lips twitching, "A rare one, golden, with eighty-one petals. It was glowing and colorful. I had never seen a lotus like that before, so I planted it in a jade bowl, and looked at it every day and night."

"Later on, someone told me that he has a supreme magic that can allow me to go beyond life and death, to live forever."

"But how did he tell me that? And why did I believe him? How could I...Those sky devils, how did they find me?"

Rock Dragon old man’s voice turned weaker and weaker. Blood gushed out of his mouth. Soon, bits of smashed internal organs started spurting out of his mouth. He looked at Emperor Shun, reached out his hand, which was covered in blood, then gently patted on Emperor Shun’s cheek.

"Do you remember it? Back then, you were sent to me to learn fishing, farming, grazing...You were just a three-year-old kid... Shun, be careful, you must be careful...We human beings are the owners of the natural fortune, that means we can never live a peaceful life...Wolves, tigers, cruel and evil ones...Too many of them..."

Rock Dragon old man slightly trembled, then his body quickly turned cold and stiff. His life faded, so quickly.

Emperor Shun gazed at Rock Dragon old man’s face and murmured with a low voice, "We are the owner of the natural fortune, so we can never live a peaceful life. Why? Why? Those wolves, tigers..."

Slowly putting down Rock Dragon old man’s body, Emperor Shun stood back up. His eyes had turned blood-red, while streams of purple mist rose, twisting around his body. The broad palace started quaking; hurricanes were raised, stirring the air and roaring shrilly.

"If we can never live a peaceful life, so can’t you!" Emperor Shun gritted his teeth and raised his head, roaring towards the sparkling dome, "If we can never live a peaceful life, you shall never rest either! For what you have done to us, sooner or later, we will do it back to you!"

Following a sizzling noise, Rock Dragon old man’s body suddenly began burning.

Rock Dragon old man's body quickly burned out, leaving a fist-sized golden lotus wrapped a hazy silhouette in it. It flashed up and seemed to dart away.

Chapter 1213: Rock Dragon old man's Soul

Emperor Shun saw it clearly. The three-inch-tall hazy silhouette wrapped in the golden lotus was Rock Dragon old man.

Someone had entrapped him, and even attempted to take his soul!

If it were the soul of an ordinary human being, none of these efforts were needed. But who was Rock Dragon old man? The leader of Star Guard, an old minister who had served a few Human Emperors. His brain was a thesaurus; knowledge, cultures, all the true wealth of the humankind were kept in his brain.

Not only knowledge, to someone who could lay such a perfect, ingenious trap for Rock Dragon old man, that 'shadowy', 'superficial' knowledge of the humankind might mean nothing at all.

But Rock Dragon old man also knew all the secrets of the humankind. The structure of the defensive formation of Pu Ban City, the weaknesses of all defensive treasures of the human emperor, and the deepest secrets of all top-grade human clans... Those super clans and families, those had raised human emperors, such as You Xiong Family, Shennong Family, Suiren Family, Fuxi Family...All these families had many secrets, and Rock Dragon old man knew all of their secrets.

Those secrets were awfully important for the entire humankind. Any of those secrets could be a fatal weakness of the humankind.

If someone took away Rock Dragon old man's soul, the humankind would become like a naked newborn baby, with no secrets, all their weaknesses exposed to the enemies.

Emperor Shun was infuriated. He roared thunderously; the purple mist around his body rose in clouds, transformed into a thick purple shade, and descended on the golden lotus. In the

meanwhile, the lights with four different colors sparkled in the purple shade. Yellow, blue, red, cyan, four dragon-like streams of light dazzled out of the shade, towards the golden lotus. These lights represented the powers of earth, water, fire, and wind.

At the same time, a warm mist was released from the purple shade, rising straight up. A weirdly-shaped bronze bell was wrapped in the mist. Unlike the Pan Gu bell, this bell was oblate, with a narrowed top and a wide bottom, looking almost like a cone as it floated above Emperor Shun's head.

This strangely shaped bronze bell had beautiful, smooth outlines. On the bell, countless human silhouettes were sparkling; some of them were farming, some were fishing, some were weaving, some were hunting. As a dim light flash across every silhouette, one could even see the long lives of countless living beings playing right before one's eyes, magical, splendid, shocking, and touching.

From the air, a cold and clear voice could be heard.

"Pan Gu died after the world was created. His body became the dragon ancestor, soul became the phoenix ancestor, and bloodline became human beings. Since then, the dragon-kind, the phoenix-kind, and the humankind lived in this world. The world sensed them, and created the dragon emperor bell, the phoenix emperor bell, and the human emperor bell, as three powerful spirit treasures."

"According to the legend, the human emperor bell gathered the faith power of all human beings and the fortune of nature. It is unimaginably powerful, but only a handful of people have seen it. Today, I feel very lucky to see the human emperor bell!"

As this voice talked slowly, the four dragon-like light streams released by Emperor Shun violently bumped on the golden lotus and generated a heavy rain of light. Resonant dragon roars echoed to the sky which quaked the palace, and even sent many fainted star guards flying tens of miles away.

The golden lotus remained unmoved. A full-power strike launched by Emperor Shun failed to do any harm to it.

Emperor Shun gave a long sigh. After that, with a pair of congested eye, he punched heavily on the human emperor bell with both fists. The bronze bell slightly quivered, then released waves of cyan-colored light circle, speedily spreading towards all directions.

People on the scene heard nothing from their ears, but from their hearts, they heard the roars of millions and millions of human beings, blasting like thunders.

"Woo! Woo! Woo!" The angry roars generated a wild, burning strength, that could boil any human being's blood. Ji Hao had been fighting the two sky devils under the Pan Gu bell. Hearing the roar, Ji Hao suddenly felt that his strength was suddenly boosted up, and his mind turned much clearer than before. Every strike he made was now swifter and smoother.

The golden lotus paused in the air. A dazzling light spread around it and expanded for over a thousand miles within a blink of an eye. Images emerged from the light; those were human ancestors, struggling to survive in the ancient world. They fought wild beasts, burned thorny undergrowth, and uprooted long grasses. They built villages on uncultivated lands, and started the human civilization, deep in the forests.

During hurricanes and storms, human ancestors roared and cried, wielding stone axes and wooden sticks, dragging their scrawny, weak bodies, desperately fighting those powerful creatures.

During floods, they connected their pasty bodies and built a wall of blood and flesh.

During mudflows, they shielded children against giant rocks falling from the sky with their shoulders.

During wildfires, they opened their mouth, bursting with despairing roars towards the sky-devouring fire. The strength they never had before erupted from their bodies and generated strong gales from their chest, which blew out the wildfires.

Spirit beasts broke into villages, and tore their bodies apart with sharp teeth and claws. But those scrawny, short human ancestors activated their bloodlines and released their powers. They raised their simple, roughly crafted weapons, rushed up and slew those beasts.

They fought natural disasters, wild beasts, and all kinds of evils; they passed their bloodlines on!

The images of the lives of human ancestors flashed across the enormous light screen. Their happiness, their anger, their sadness, their passion, eventually merged with a terrifying power, which wrapped around the golden lotus and suddenly tightened up.

The human emperor bell delivered a message to every human being on the scene.

"In this dangerous world, living is not easy. But all human beings, standing straight upon our land, under the blue sky, will live wonderful lives."

"If spirit creatures want to kill us, we kill them."

"If wild beasts want to eat us, we slaughter them!"

"If gods want to stand upon us, we bring gods down!"

"We are carriers of Pan Gu’s bloodline, we should have a homeland in this world!"

Along with a cracking noise, the golden lotus shattered. Rock Dragon old man’s soul was grabbed back by Emperor Shun. The human emperor bell floated above Emperor Shun’s head. Human ancestors’ roars and cries from the ancient world still lingered in everyone’s heart.

"The human emperor bell cannot be activated without a good reason." said Emperor Shun with a strong voice, "No former human emperor dared activate the bell easily. This was also the reason why I let those evil beings seize the opportunity."

"However, Rock Dragon old man is an important elder of the humankind. Indeed, he had chosen the wrong way, but I can’t let you take his soul."

Emperor Shun raised his head while looking at the dome, and asked aloud, "May I ask your name? For what happened today, we will be needing your explanation!"

No one responded, it was all quiet.

Boom! The Pan Gu bell slightly quaked as Ji Hao showed his face from the dense mist, gasping quickly for air. The two sky devils had already been swallowed by the five-colored cauldron.

"Why are you hiding your face? Are you a turtle?" Ji Hao wasn’t as polite as Emperor Shun, actually, and he almost cursed out.

The air vibrated gently, then a golden hand slapped down towards Ji Hao’s head, along with rumbling thunder.

Chapter 1214: Life and Extinction

The golden hand was at about the same size as human hands, except being golden and shiny.

The hand had a pearl-like luster, and seemed to be holy, sacred, and inviolable. The hand descended straight to Ji Hao's head, not too fast, yet making Ji Hao feel that he could never dodge.

It was like the whole world had shrunk to his size, and his body was sealed in this tiny world; he couldn't struggle, and couldn't even move. The endless darkness surrounded him, dangerous, frightening, as if countless evil and cruel beasts were hiding in the darkness, waiting to tear Ji Hao into pieces once he broke out from this tiny world.

Ji Hao sensed a very familiar power vibration from the golden hand. Same as those beautiful naked girls created by Se Zun and Yuu Zun, this golden hand aimed at the weakest spot in his heart.

Perhaps, this hand was not so powerful. But in a weird way, it attacked Ji Hao's soul and made him feel that he was going to be crushed. Before this golden hand appeared, before it hit Ji Hao, the soul-attack was already launched at him.

Facing this golden hand, any other human being might have given up on fighting, letting this hand land on his or her head and take the life away. That was the feeling it would give off— 'You can never stop it. Therefore, you will be killed.'

"Evil tricks, piss off!" Ji Hao's eyes shone brightly as he shouted deeply. Countless silvery singing voices could instantly be heard. As the owner of the golden hand attacked him with something like sky-devil magics, Ji Hao decided to fight back also with a sky devil magic.

The golden light emitted from the hand dimmed down suddenly. The golden hand abruptly turned mottled and bronze, as if it had

been through millions of years, becoming rusted and old. The golden hue was gone, remaining verdigris.

The hand continuously slapped down along with a heavy sense of power. However, it could no longer stifle Ji Hao.

Suddenly, Ji Hao sensed a strong coldness from his right palm. He looked at this palm and felt like he was watching the changing of seasons, flowers blooming and withering, a newborn baby growing into a boy, becoming a man, turning old, then withering into a pale skeleton.

‘Extinction’! For an unknown reason, Ji Hao recognized the coldness coming from his palm. The power of ‘extinction’, the most mysterious, immeasurable great Dao in the world.

Could anyone in the world truly be immortal? As far as Ji Hao knew, no one. Even Yu Yu dared only to call himself ‘unbreakable’, but not immortal.

Without immortality, every living being would eventually have an end, and that final end was called ‘extinction’.

The sun would dim, stars would fall; the earth would sink, and Pan Gu world would eventually collapse.

People, beasts, fishes, and birds would all die; those divine gods, the ones who used to stand high above the masses, they were already gone. Those powerful beings, who once dominated the whole world, had all perished.

All of this, all the ends, the death, would be controlled by the power of ‘extinction’, the most mysterious great Dao in the world. If one could control of the power of ‘extinction’, he or she might be able to go beyond it and attain true immortality.

"Ambitious!" Looking at the hand falling from the air, Ji Hao raised his right fist right towards it.

A tiny sun exploded on Ji Hao’s fist, dazzling and scorching hot. The sun was the origin of all living creatures; it nourished the

whole world, providing all living beings with energy. The sun was the life, the passion, the extreme of all vigor in the world.

The golden sunlight shone from Ji Hao's fist. Sensing the deepest belief in his heart, Ji Hao laughed. Being alive, how wonderful, how sacred! He had a healthy body, he could laugh, talk, walk, jump. He was young; youth, the beautiful youth; the 'extinction' was so far away from him.

Therefore, Ji Hao laughed out loud. The thriving life-force burst from every part of his body, while the essence sun fire burned ragingly on his fist, warmly, blindingly. Trees, flowers, birds, beasts, fishes, dragons and phoenixes, the essence sun fire drew all kinds of creatures.

All kinds of living beings showering under the sun of Pan Gu world drew themselves on Ji Hao's fist. With his passion to life, Ji Hao faced the hand with his strong fist.

"Everything-grow!"

Without even knowing, Ji Hao made the move of 'everything-grow in a perfect way.

Emperor Shun stood beside Ji Hao, mouth opened in shock, staring at Ji Hao and sensing the overwhelming life-force from him. The power of life, how fabulous, how splendid! Ji Hao's entire body was shining, with the life-force surging out from every pore of his.

Emperor Shun even felt that the world might have looked just like this when Saint Pan Gu created it, but died under the attacks of countless Chaos monsters, and the first generation of living beings emerged. From saint Pan Gu's body, an inexhaustible life-force erupted, creating all living beings, strong living beings!

"Marvelous, Marquis Yao!" Emperor Shun laughed resonantly. He raised both fists and punched heavily on the human emperor bell. Once again, the roars of millions and millions of human

beings resounded through the clouds. Hazy figures of human ancestors emerged in the air and cheered upon sensing the thriving life-force releasing from Ji Hao's body. They then transformed into dazzling beams of light and flashed across the air.

"Eh?" A voice came from the air.

The mottled hand bumped fiercely against Ji Hao's fist. Ji Hao lost his sight temporarily. All of a sudden, he sensed a bone-piercing coldness from every corner of his body. Meanwhile, his red sun primordial spirits and the three embryos of Dao withered simultaneously.

The power of 'extinction' drained him momentarily. Ji Hao's body withered, turning skinny and scrawny. His soul was dying, like falling petals. A heavy sense of death spread out from his whole body.

The golden flame burning in Ji Hao's right hand coiled on the mottled hand. Along with the roars, cries, and shouts of the souls of human ancestors, the mottled hand was burned into a strand of ash, disappearing without a trace.

A muffled hum could be heard from the air, following which was a growl in shock, confusion, and anger, "Good, good, good! Yu Yu has a good disciple...Ji Hao, you have truly hurt me...Cost me a thousand years of severe cultivation!"

The voice faded. Clearly, the owner of that voice wasn't preparing to attack again, and had already gone away.

Ji Hao instantly sat on the ground. The power of death puffed out from his mouth, ears, eyes and nose as he screamed through gritted teeth, "Old b*stard! I know who you are! You didn't say your name, but I know who you are!"

"You shameless old thing, how can you be shameless enough to attack me? I can't defeat you, but I will be slaughtering your disciples!"

While roaring, a strange colorless light dazzled from Ji Hao's internal organs. What happened next was an outburst of a tremendous life-force. Emperor Shun didn't manage to react timely, and was sent flying to tens of miles away.

Chapter 1215: Half Step Supreme Magus

Large amounts of sticky liquid oozed out of Ji Hao's skin. Soon, he was entirely covered with a thick layer of sticky liquid.

Just now, he took a strike launched by that nameless powerful being, and as a result, ninety-nine percent of his body tissues died immediately because of the power of 'extinction'. However, his internal organs had already been thoroughly remolded by the Chaos blood, now containing an extremely strong life-force, which erupted at this very moment like the kindling for a raging fire.

This new life-force was far stronger than Ji Hao's original life-force. The Chaos blood flooded inside his body like a burning fire, allowing his body to excrete all impurities and regrow.

The five-colored round cauldron had already flown back to Ji Hao's body. Earlier, the cauldron devoured two powerful sky devils, which now had become rich nourishments. The Pan Gu bell buzzed deeply, flying back to Ji Hao's body as well.

The bell buzzed slightly, shattered the space, and extracted violent Chaos tides, sending into the five-colored cauldron. Pure and thriving life-force surged out of the cauldron, nourishing Ji Hao's internal organs, regrowing his bones and muscles.

A creaking noise could be heard without an end. Golden fire, silver fire, and dark fire were burning on Ji Hao's trembling body. Following the sizzling noise, the sticky liquid accumulated on Ji Hao's skin was burned out speedily, generating a thick sandalwood scent that suffused the entire palace.

Ji Hao breathed deeply and quickly for air, starting a strong whirlwind in the palace. Torrents of natural powers roared over, flowing into his body, being digested by the five-colored cauldron, and building his new body.

Emperor Shun sensed the highly concentrated natural powers

around Ji Hao’s body, and the speedily thinning natural powers in other areas. He waved his hand and sent the troop of warriors out of the palace.

Following Emperor Shun’s order, mountain-huge piles of magic crystals were carried into this palace in no time. Perfectly ground top-grade magic crystals were piled up around Ji Hao’s body, almost filling up the entire palace.

Ji Hao consumed those magic crystals up one after another. The piles had been shrinking, but more magic crystals had been ceaselessly sent in.

The mysterious man slowly showed up in Ji Hao’s spiritual space, murmuring with a deep and low voice, "With the spirit blood from the dragon-kind, phoenix-kind and the human-kind, you now have a thin, yet pure Pan Gu bloodline. You’ve been cultivating yourself for so long, little guy, I think you can take the last drop of Pan Gu spirit blood now."

"It was hidden in the Divine Origin Pool for so many years. Finally, it can be put to a good use! Good boy, truly, good boy." Locking his fingers together, the mysterious man laughed delightfully, "That perfect punch with ‘everything-grow’, how wonderful!"

While chuckling, the mysteries man’s pair of eyes shone with a deep blue light, illuminating Ji Hao’s spiritual space. "Spirit Wa, Spirit Wa, this time, you found a good boy..."

As the mysterious man locked his fingers together, the large drop of Chaos blood inside Ji Hao’s heart exploded all of a sudden. Boiling, scorching hot, with an inexhaustible power of creation, the Pan Gu spirit blood circulated to every corner of Ji Hao’s body.

Suddenly, Ji Hao’s blood veins, meridians, bones and internal organs all blasted, but recovered after a single moment. Next, the Pan Gu spirit blood exploded once again, and his entire body regrew again.

Exploding and regrowing, over and over again… Within a couple of breaths, Ji Hao felt like he was thrown down the hell and then struggled back up for millions of times.

Painful…It wasn't really painful, because Ji Hao felt that he was dead already. He could no longer feel anything, but in the meanwhile, he replayed the punch he made against the mottled hand just now, over and over again, while breathing strongly and maintaining his tightened body with the power of 'everything-growl'.

Ji Hao's body was reinforcing speedily. His blood, muscles, tendons, bones were all magically glowing like the colorless Chaos, yet also seemed to have the most beautiful colors in the world.

That nameless powerful being almost killed Ji Hao with a single strike, but at the same time, he activated the strongest life-force deeply hidden inside Ji Hao's body. Rebirth after destruction… By cultivating himself severely, Ji Hao had been growing in strength. But now, something magical, fabulous happened to him, something similar to the creation of the world, of all living creatures.

Each human being had 129600 meridians, and each meridian had three to tens of accupoints. All of Ji Hao's meridians and accupoints were strong and sturdy, and every accupoint of his had a red light spot dazzling in it. Those brightly sparkling red light spots were Ji Hao's inner spirit stars.

That powerful being took away ninety-nine percent of Ji Hao's life-force with a single strike, by doing which, all inner spirit stars in Ji Hao's over a million accupoints were set free. Streams merged into torrents, and torrents became an ocean. His inner spirit stars transformed into raging torrents of power, surging to Ji Hao's heart.

Suddenly, piles of magic crystals in the palace were dimmed down, as the natural powers contained in those crystals were

drained by Ji Hao in a moment. Over a million inner spirit stars bumped against each other in Ji Hao's chest and generated a thunderous series of boom. Ji Hao raised his head and let out a breath of Chaos power. He felt a new universe was created inside his body, as a vast void emerged in there.

A golden light spot floated in this vast void, shining brightly and passionately.

The nine dragons chariot gave a deep buzz, descended from Ji Hao's spiritual space and merged with the golden light.

A beautiful silver light emerged beside the golden light. The water-like, chilly silver light spread out in all directions, neutralizing the restlessness of the golden light and steadying this void perfectly.

Between the golden light and the silver light was a dark sun, as large as the goldenness and the silveriness, but dimmer and hazier. It looked like a sphere of mist, and seemed to be far weaker than the golden light and the silver light.

Ji Hao opened his eyes. The drop of Chaos blood hidden in his heart had already been absorbed completely. Because of this drop of Pan Gu spirit blood, he was now scarily strong.

Slightly moving his hands, he activated his concentrated, yet extensive spirit power, and scanned across his entire body.

Seeing the three enormous light spots inside his body, Ji Hao's mouth corners twitched intensely.

Half-step Supreme Magus!

He was now a half-step Supreme Magus!

The only problem was — For the final step of becoming a Supreme Magus, he needed to draw his spirit star into his body, then merge with it by using his soul power!

Did Ji Hao have to swallow the Pan Gu sun?!

"Didn’t the creators of this cultivation system think about it?"

"Me swallowing the Pan Gu sun?"

Chapter 1216: The Struggling Power

In Ji Hao's spiritual space, the mysterious man sat on a cloud with a struggling look.

He had witnessed Emperor Fuxi and a group of powerful human ancestors free themselves from the bloodlines of strong creatures, step by step through efforts, and create the cultivation system of human beings.

He watched the first generation of Supreme Magi emerging, witnessed that sky-shaking power that erupted from the body of a human being who merged with a true, natural star; he also witnessed their cultivations, the poor ones, who had failed. Some died right on the spot, both the bodies and the souls, and some had their souls stuck in natural stars, forever and ever.

However, which one of those human ancestors had ever thought that one day, one human being would be crazy enough to take the sun as the spirit star? Not Emperor Fuxi, not those powerful ones behind him. Yet, someone had truly done it; he had not only taken the sun as his spirit star, he also managed to turn himself into a half-step Supreme Magus, waiting to merge with his spirit star.

The sun, the leader of all stars in the world; splendid, magnificent, the king of stars. The power of the sun was as great as the combined powers of tens, hundreds, tens of thousands of natural stars. For this reason, back in the ancient era, Taiyi, the East Emperor, had dominated the world as the owner of the sun.

Taiyi was born with the sun, a true divine god. Therefore, he would control the sun power easily and freely.

Human Magi were different. Human bodies were born weak and fragile; but with a weak and fragile human body, one could absorb the star power, grow in strength, and adapt to the power of the spirit star. Once the body and the soul were both strong enough to the extreme point, this human being could take the risk, draw the

spirit star into the body, and earn a chance to become a Supreme Magus.

The problem was, not even a real Supreme Magus could withstand the power of the sun!

Only Ji Hao, who was as strong as a monster...

"I created a little monster myself! He grew pure Pan Gu blood inside his body, attained a drop of real Pan Gu spirit blood to strengthen his body, excreted impurities, and tentatively built a ‘Pan Gu body’."

"With that body...He will survive even if he has to swallow the Pan Gu sun...He might feel his heart burning for a couple of hours each day after that, but as long as he keeps growing stronger, that discomfort would be gone."

"It’s just that...Stars in the sky are countless. Even if hundreds of thousands of those stars are taken by Supreme Magi to cultivate themselves, not a problem...But, the sun is necessary..."

The mysterious man was struggling, his heavy eyebrows even tangled together as he tightened his lips, bared his teeth, and murmured to himself, "Even fierce stars like the Killing Wolf can be taken. It’s only slightly weaker than the sun. Or Loho, that one can even rival the sun. Even these big stars are not as important as the sun."

Pan Gu world could lose any star but the sun.

Without the sun, Pan Gu world would fall into eternal darkness. The lights of natural stars couldn’t illuminate the whole world, neither could they provide all living beings with warmth and energy. If the sun were taken away, the world would become a lifeless zone.

"This kid was born in the wrong place...Why was he born in Gold Crow Clan? Why was he naturally connected with the sun power? If he were born in the White Tiger Family in the west, things

would be so easier."

Giving a long sigh, the mysterious man helplessly spread his hands and said, "Well, the kid is smart, let him worry about that. I've been working hard to accumulate soul power. All I have now is not even enough to heal myself, so I shall stop worrying about him."

The mysterious man snorted and disappeared.

Ji Hao snorted as well. It wasn't the end of the world, and what couldn't be solved? He would continue learning from Yu Yu. Meanwhile, he must not give up on his cultivation as a human Magus, which allowed him to be much stronger than his peers. For sure, he could not take the Pan Gu sun, but didn't he have the Pan Jia sun?

Raising his head, Ji Hao seemed to see many other small worlds far, far away, right through the mountains in front of him.

Dishi Cha and the other non-humankind beings could locate those small worlds, and so could he. For the worst that might happen, he could simply go visit the other worlds and take their suns. The other worlds would certainly have different Dao of Sun, but their suns would be as powerful as the Pan Gu sun.

As long as he could understand the Dao of sun of those worlds, nothing would be different.

Slightly shaking, Ji Hao's muscles shrank slightly, then abruptly swelled back.

Bang! As his muscles vibrated slightly, the space around him started quaking intensely. Thin black cracks spread out in all directions. Magic crystals piled in the palace shattered, releasing highly concentrated natural powers. Ji Hao opened his mouth and swallowed them all.

Following a sizzling noise, a liquid-silver-like stream of natural power flew into Ji Hao's mouth like a torrent.

Breathing deeply, Ji Hao stood by the gate of the palace and said to a group of human warriors who had been rushing in with large bags carried in their arms, "It’s alright, enough, I don’t need more crystals...How much time did I spend?"

A middle-aged man with a long black robe stepped out from the crowd, politely bowed, and said, "Marquis Yao, you spent seven days this time. Emperor Shun has returned to the Town Hall. he wants you to go back to meet him once you are finished."

Ji Hao raised his eyebrows, "Emergency?"

The middle-aged man nodded with a faint bitterness on his face, "Important emergency...That we can do nothing about."

Ji Hao remained silent for a while, then flashed to the frontal gate of the palace. Following a thunderous buzz, Ji Hao stepped out and the palace was torn down. Everything in the palace was turned into ashes.

Ji Hao bumped straight into the mountain that the palace was built in. He shattered the tens of miles thick mountain body, and flew out from the other side. The enormous mountain collapsed, becoming rock powder. As a strong gale blew across, the powder drifted away.

"You...Are you alright?" The middle-aged man showed up right beside Ji Hao, with his face badly twisted."

With a great confusion and shock, the middle-aged man looked at Ji Hao and said slowly, "This is the most important strong point of Star Guard. A hundred and forty-four top-grade defensive formations were hiding in the mountain that you broke just now, even stronger than the Town Hall’s...You did it only because you are in a rush, right? You didn’t ...You didn’t make an extra effort to break those...?"

Ji Hao stood up from the ground and smiled a bit embarrassedly to the man.

The man shook his head with a bitter smile, waved his hands, and started a dark wind, then continued, "Marquis Yao, let me lead you to Emperor Shun. You have already stepped into a whole new level. Now, you are too dangerous to the others."

Ji Hao let the man do whatever he needed to do. A strong dark wind brought him to the Town Hall.

Chapter 1217: The Will of the World

In the Town Hall, Emperor Shun sat straight on the ground. Two men with tall hats sat on both sides of Emperor Shun, their faces covered in a faint mist. Both of them were much taller than Emperor Shun. The atmosphere in the hall was heavy and serious, which made Ji Hao feel hard to breathe.

Around ten senior ministers were also sitting in the hall. These were the oldest, most experienced, and wisest human ministers. Some of them were counting their fingers while murmuring, some were whispering to each other, and some were burning turtle shells with a small oil lamp. From time to time, cracking noises made from turtle shells could be heard.

Ji Hao sat by the door as he looked inside for a while, then held his breath and tried his best to restrain his movements, carefully walking into the hall with tiny steps.

Before he walked in, Emperor Shun and the two with tall hats looked at him. Seeing him walk so carefully, they clapped their hands and laughed.

"Congratulations, Marquis Yao. You're a half-step Supreme Magus now, that too at such a young age. You will certainly have a bright future."

"Haha, back when, when I firstly gathered the nine stars and became a half-step Supreme Magus, I was really careful exactly like you. I was afraid that I might tear my home down. Marquis Yao, seeing you, I see my younger-self."

Another elderly man with a slightly blue face grinningly looked at Ji Hao and asked curiously, "Marquis Yao, I sensed this strong fire power from you...I shouldn't ask, but I am curious indeed. Are you going to merge with a fire star?"

Ji Hao smiled, then gave a long sigh. Shaking his head, he

released lava-like streams of essence sun fire from his pores.

Instantly, he was covered with a three-foot-thick layer of flame, and this dumbfounded everyone on the scene. Those senior ministers popped out their eyes in shock, that their eyeballs seemed to even fly out of their eye sockets.

"This, this...hehe!" The elderly man asked the question laughed hollowly while staring at Ji Hao stunned, not knowing what else to say, "Holy Emperor Fuxi, what a brave young man is this! He has actually chosen the sun as his spirit star!"

Ji Hao dimmed the fire and continued his extra careful tiny steps as he walked to Emperor Shun. Cupping his hands, he bowed to Emperor Shun and said, "Shun, I will send my people in a few days, and my Yao Mountain territory will cover those magic crystals I used for making the breakthrough."

Emperor Shun nodded, waved his hand, and responded, "That’s a small thing, not what matters now."

Pausing for a second, Emperor Shun still couldn’t help himself as he pointed at Ji Hao and asked out loud, "Why on earth did you choose the sun? This is truly..."

Shaking his head, Emperor Shun abruptly raised his head and looked at the Pan Jia sun, which was shining warmly outside the Town Hall. The group of ministers in the hall was enlightened suddenly. They laughed, looking at Ji Hao in a much warmer and more serious way.

Ji Hao would never take away the Pan Gu sun. Even if he could, powerful beings in Pan Gu world wouldn’t let him. Any other human being would die if he or she ever dared to take the Pan Gu sun as a spirit star.

Nevertheless, Ji Hao had prepared himself the Pan Jia sun!

He could merge with the Pan Jia sun! He had turned the Pan Jia sun into a source of energy in Pu Ban City, which proved that Ji

Hao was already able to control that sun in a perfect way.

Once Ji Hao merged with the Pan Jia sun and took it as his spirit star ...Even though the Pan Jia sun was far less powerful than the Pan Gu sun, it was certainly much stronger than all top-grade natural stars in Pan Gu world.

Then, Ji Hao would become one of the most powerful Supreme Magi among human beings.

How many true Supreme Magi existed in Pan Gu world now? And who were they? How old were they? But how old was Ji Hao? He hadn't even lived his first century, but he was becoming a Supreme Magus already. Was there any doubt about his future?

Therefore, the group of senior ministers immediately started to value Ji Hao to the highest point. If Zhu Rong Man Man hadn't gotten to him first, these ministers would have already sent their daughters to Ji Hao...

The few older ones looked at Ji Hao from head to toe, with all kinds of weird thought flashing across their minds — 'Even though he is now with Zhu Rong's daughter, they aren't truly married, are they? Even if they are married, so what? They haven't had babies, have they?'

'Even if Ji Hao and Man Man do have kids now, would Zhu Rong seriously fall out with old ministers like us if we send, like, hundreds of girls to Ji Hao?'

'Hehe, Ji Hao is such a strong, talented young man. He improved so fast, that means his bloodline is precious! If we can, maybe, sneakily bring his bloodline into our clans, hehe...' Thinking of this, the few old men, who had pretty serious looks just now, started chuckling weirdly.

Emperor Shun threw a quick glance at the few old ministers in a complicated way, then shook his head. He pointed at a fist-sized bronze ball on the ground and said to Ji Hao, "Take a look. See

what the few former emperors have been through in the north."

Ji Hao carefully bent his knees and squatted, then touched the ball with his fingers.

A buzzing noise started in his ears while the bronze ball emitted a cyan-light, countless silhouettes appearing in it. Ji Hao saw twelve men with tall hats, surrounded by dazzling starlights, floating above the Liang Zhu City and talking to a group of non-humankind beings, with thunderous voices.

Ji Hao saw Yemo Luoye, Dishi Yanluo, and Fan Hai among those non-humankind beings, sitting in large luxurious armchairs, behind the defensive magic screen created by countless divine towers. They were surrounded by numberless elite non-humankind warriors, facing the twelve men proudly.

After the difficult conversation, those non-humankind emperors permitted the twelve men to destroy the twelve portals.

After all, this flood didn’t just bring severe damages to the humankind, it also made the non-humankind suffer. Without the sunlight, every place in the world was moist, and that was not the weather those Yu Clan nobles could stand.

Afterward, the twelve men with tall hats held hands and activated the powers of all stars in the north, launching the strongest strike at the twelve portals.

Under the witnesses of countless non-humankind beings, they failed!

An extremely, unreasonably strong power shielded the twelve portals. The most powerful twelve human emperors combined their powers and the powers of all stars in the north to launch the strike, yet the dazzling starlight dimmed, before the twelve portals could even be touched. Billions and billions of water-kind creatures had still been rushing out from the twelve portals.

"What is this?" Ji Hao looked at Emperor Shun in shock and

confusion.

Twelve human emperors, twelve Supreme Magi, with combined powers, they failed by break those portals?!

"The will of the world...Pan Gu world, it doesn’t want us to destroy those portals." The man with a tall hat sat beside Emperor Shun gave a long sigh.

Chapter 1218: The Instinct of the World

The will of Pan Gu world?

Ji Hao looked at Emperor Shun, horrified.

The embryo of Pan Gu world was born together with Saint Pan Gu. Saint Pan Gu cultivated himself well in the Chaos. And one day, when he was powerful enough, and the world embryo was mature, Saint Pan Gu launched a strike with his axe and created this world.

In a way, the embryo of Pan Gu world was Pan Gu's spirit treasure.

After Saint Pan Gu created the world, he was attacked by countless Chaos monsters. Some of those Chaos monsters wanted to loot the natural reward power that was supposed to descend to Pan Gu for creating a world, while some wanted the power of creation of the new world. There were also some who wanted to kill Pan Gu and seize the new world and become the new owner of the world.

Saint Pan Gu fell, and Pan Gu world developed naturally, until present times.

Reasonably, the will of Pan Gu world should be the will of Saint Pan Gu, but Saint Pan Gu had fallen. This 'will of Pan Gu world' mentioned by Emperor Shun, was it the great Dao of Pan Gu world?

However, according to what Ji Hao had learned from Priest Dachi, Qing Wei and Yu Yu, the Dao was the natural law, unfeeling and emotionless. It was an operating rule of the world. Which meant, the great Dao of the world shouldn't have self-consciousness.

"Did Pan Gu world itself suppress you to make you fail?" asked Ji Hao carefully. He still couldn't believe it.

The two men with tall hats spread their hands and smiled bitterly.

"The twelve of us, we each consumed a giant amount of natural reward power to absent ourselves from our missions, and to gather the powers of all stars in the north. We earned three strikes." said one of the two men. "With the first strike, we destroyed nine water eyes and twenty-seven clones of old Gong Gongs."

"With the rest two strikes, we prepared one to awe the non-humankind and one to break the twelve portals. But this time, those non-humankind beings didn’t do anything despiteful. Instead, they only asked for some compensation. Therefore, we used both strikes on those portals." said the other man with a tall hat.

The combined strike was launched with the powers of all stars in the north, millions and millions of stars. The twelve former human emperors were not star kings indeed, and could not release the star powers fully. Nevertheless, they offered their own natural reward powers, and in return, those stars helped as much as possible.

The strike was heavy enough to reshape the whole world. If the strike landed on the twelve former human emperors, they might have even perished. Nevertheless, the twelve portals were protected by a strange power, which was not so strong, yet had an amazingly high quality.

When the twelve human emperors launched the strike, they clearly sensed the will of Pan Gu world itself. A clear natural decree was protecting those portals — No power from Pan Gu world could ever cause any damage to these portals.

That was the will of the world, Pan Gu world, the highest decree from the great Dao of this world. Because of this, the world-destroying strike disappeared before it landed on the twelve portals. It was gone, as if it never existed.

"Pan Gu world forbids from breaking those portals." said Emperor Shun with a bitter smile. He pointed at the bronze ball, which floated before his face, and continued with a deep voice, "The images in here were sent into the minds of the twelve emperors by the world itself. Ji Hao, you take a look."

The light screen sparkled, then a boundless Chaos appeared before Ji Hao's eyes.

In the Chaos, a beautiful, great world was shining splendidly, like thousands of suns gathering together. Every now and then, hundreds of Chaos tides would violently brush across this world. The smallest Chaos tides were millions of miles long, while the largest were billions and billions of miles long.

Not even the slightest sound was generated. When those Chaos tides struck on the world, nothing but dazzling lights, an endless heat, and incalculable energies, were generated.

Around this great world, far, far away, twelve light spheres were approaching at amazingly high speeds. These twelve light spheres were much smaller than the great world. Even the largest one among them was not as big as one-millionth of the great world itself.

The Chaos was boundless. Even the smallest world was over one hundred billion miles in radius. When these worlds moved in the Chaos, their moving speeds were relatively slow based on their giant volumes, but to 'normal living beings' like human beings, the moving speeds of those worlds were despairingly high.

The twelve small worlds blasted countless Chaos whirlpools and Chaos tides, flying speedily to Pan Gu world as they left hundreds of billions of miles long glowing tails in the Chaos.

"Because of the great formation created by Gong Gong, the water powers from the twelve water worlds had been drawing into Pan Gu world ceaselessly. This generated an awfully strong suction force, which is bringing the twelve small worlds to Pan Gu world."

"Three years, in three years at most, these small worlds will be captured by Pan Gu world. Same as Pan Xi world, these small worlds will be torn apart, absorbed, and digested by Pan Gu world, to nourish the great Dao of Pan Gu world, and to strengthen this world."

"Pan Gu worlds has its instinctive needs. The world can breathe, just like us. Moment after moment, the world is breathing the Chaos power and producing new stars. Even Midland and the four wastelands have been expanding all the time, because of the world's 'breath'."

"Nevertheless, what the world will gain through billions of centuries of 'breathing' is far less than the harvest of devouring a small world."

"The world was sunken in sleep, until Pan Xi world was hunted. The world woke up at that time, and now, it craves more small worlds. It wants to strengthen itself, to grow stronger, and to improve. This is the most original, purest instincts of Pan Gu world. We...can't stop it."

Emperor Shun pointed at the bronze ball and said, "This is the message sent to the few former emperors' souls by the world itself."

Ji Hao remained silent, and so did the group of old ministers.

As human beings, who were born in this world and had been living in this world, how could they possibly stop this world from doing anything it wanted? Even a Supreme Magus could control the power of no more than one natural star.

But how many stars existed in Pan Gu world? This great, powerful world.

To Pan Gu world, the power possessed by a Supreme Magus was not even as big as a drop of water in an ocean!

"Pan Gu world has its eyes on the twelve small worlds, which

have been hurling themselves willingly into the net." said Emperor Shun, "Therefore, water-kind armies will continuously arrive from the twelve worlds, and the flood will only grow stronger. In three years, the flood in Pan Gu world will reach the peak."

"Three years, we have to do something in the coming three years."

"We have to be more decisive, be...crueler."

Chapter 1219: Arbitrariness

Against the roaring flood, groups of human beings struggled on the water surface, with bamboo lifebuoys tied around their waists. They were holding faintly glowing, heavy axes, madly hacking on the mountain in front of them. In the vast water, these human beings looked at tiny as ants.

Enormous spell symbols were carved onto the mountain, one after another.

From time to time, giant waves would strike down and press countless human beings under the water. They held their breath and waited until the waves fell, then rose again from the water, roaring like beasts. They raised their weapons and continued cutting and carving.

Sometimes, people would be rolled up by waves and bump heavily into the mountain, breaking their bones and heads. But other people would always silently take the places of these injured ones, pick up their faintly glowing weapons, and continue their work.

Behind these crazily hard-working people was a line of defense, shielding these people against the madly attacking water-kind army.

Human warriors trod on rafts, roaring thunderously while fighting against the water-kind army. On the water surface and underwater, countless water-kind creatures had been restlessly launching all kinds of attacks on those human warriors. High up in the air, strong water-kind spirit creatures trod on clouds, facing Magus Kings and Divine Magi.

Suddenly, a white, strong wave came sideway. Rumblingly, an enormous water-kind army marched over. The leaders of this army were three gigantic water-kind spirit creatures, coiled in dense watery mist, while releasing shaking power vibrations and

raising mountain-like waves.

The human troop panicked. In the water, their powers had been weakened to less than ten percent, while those water-kind creatures could give full play to their powers. It was already especially difficult for these human warriors to stop the water-kind army they were facing. But now, a ten-times greater army showed up. Without a doubt, this flood-control troop was going to be crushed.

From the air, a clear light flashed across. That was Ji Hao on the golden bridge, arriving at lightning speed with Man Man, Shaosi, and his other friends.

Without saying a word, or giving a chance for Man Man and the others to make a move, a dazzling golden light shone on Ji Hao's chest. From the blinding golden light, the nine dragons chariot flew out.

Ji Hao trod on the chariot, while Mr. Crow stood on the top of the chariot. They gave a resonant shout simultaneously and released a scorching hot wave of power. Mr. Crow vibrated his strong wings and sent up countless feather-shaped golden beams, storming to the water-kind army down below.

Weak water-kind spirit creatures screamed in pain. The vast water was boiled by Mr. Crow's Gold Crow fire. Within a few seconds, those lower grade water-kind creatures were cooked.

A thick aroma of seafood soup spread in the air. Those Senior-Magus-level water-kind spirit creatures lasted for a few more seconds in the boiling water, until they were almost cooked, and the nice aroma started to emit from their bodies as well.

Those higher grade water-kind spirit creatures raised their heads in surprise and anger. They stared at Ji Hao while screaming. Ji Hao stared right back at them and roared as well. He pressed both hands on the chariot, and let the golden light flow inside his chest. Beams of golden light merged with the chariot.

On the chariot, layers of cloud patterns began moving, while a large number of simply-shaped weapons emerged in-between. The essence sun fire condensed into actual weapons, which flew out from the chariot one after another and descended from the sky, seeming like the punishment meted out by the heaven.

Those water-kind spirit creatures started crying in fright. They sensed a terrifying power from those blinding golden weapons, that they could never handle.

The golden light penetrated these water-kind spirit creatures' bodies, tore apart their souls, and turned both their bodies and souls into ashes.

At the moment, burning water-kind creatures flew all over the sky. Following shrill screams, countless water-kind spirit creatures showed their original giant shapes before they died. Dragon whales, sharks, water boas, flood dragons, all kinds of water-kind creatures struggled and screamed in the sky. In a couple of breaths, they all became drifting ash.

Ji Hao was already a half-step Supreme Magus. The essence sun fire under his control was now over a hundred times more powerful than before. It could even melt the sky and burn all living beings in the world. The purely positive essence sun power was the natural remedy to all evilness, so how could these water-kind creatures possibly survive?

Ji Hao descended to the battlefield as a half-step Supreme Magus; this was like throwing a Divine Magus into a bunch of wild rabbits. This wasn't even a massacre, this was a crazy harvest!

A harvest of lives and souls.

Quietly looking at the water surface, which was much cleaner now, Ji Hao thought of what happened back in the Town Hall, three months ago.

With a strong, echoing voice, Emperor Shun said that human

beings had to spare no pains to fight the flood. He said that human beings needed to be more decisive and crueler. Facing the threat of the flood, led by Emperor Shun and the twelve former human emperors, all human clans were brought into the mission.

Pan Gu world intended to swallow the twelve small worlds to strengthen itself. This was the will of the world, and human beings couldn't stop it. Since this was unstoppable, human beings had no choice but to fight it!

As Emperor Shun said, "We human beings are weak indeed, but we are the possessors of Pan Gu's bloodline, and our backbones are always as straight as the Buzhou Mountain. No one can enslave us before breaking our backbones."

Next, Emperor Shun said something combative, "You may be strong enough to break our backbones, but if you failed to break us, we will destroy you, every last one of you!"

Emperor Shun had always been a mild, kind and generous emperor, and no one had ever heard him saying anything like this. But this time, he was truly enraged. The entire humankind was enraged!

In the Town Hall, other than the tablet Suiren gave Ji Hao as a token of being a former emperor, Emperor gave Ji Hao another token, enabling him to be in charge under any occasion. Which meant, Ji Hao didn't have specific tasks, yet he could step into any situation.

Emperor Shun and those former emperors didn't know Ji Hao had the golden bridge, but they did know that Ji Hao was fast as light. Therefore, they authorized Ji Hao to go wherever he was needed, and do whatever he thought that he should be doing. If any flood-control troop suffered any danger, Ji Hao would go help. Wherever he went, all available resources would be for him to use.

Before, when the flood-control mission was first started, Emperor Shun and Si Wen Ming ordered Ji Hao to lead the elite

force to the north. But now, Ji Hao was given a greater power with more flexible missions, yet he was doing much more than before. Each day, he faced greater dangers, and was much busier than before.

Wiping out all water-kind creatures in this area, Ji Hao took out a bronze token, flicked his fingers, and released thin beams from it.

Carefully listening for a while, Ji Hao's face turned dark.

Near a key area, people in a city refused to cooperate, and did not do anything related to the flood-control mission.

The city was guarded by strange people. Quite a few messengers sent into the city by the nearby flood-control troop were thrown out with broken legs by those so-called strange people.

Chapter 1220: Emperor Ku's Offspring

Fei Water, as the name stated, was a prosperous place. During peaceful days, Fei Water area possessed rich mineral resources. Many creatures lived in this area. As a famous fertile area in Midland, the Fei Water fiver was also rich in fish.

The owner of this wonderfully rich territory was surely no one ordinary.

The current owner of Fei Water area was a direct descendant of Emperor Ku, named Ji Wu. Ji Wu had shown his great talents since he was a kid. According to some vague stories, Ji Hao was a fairly lucky one, and was amazingly powerful. He was not yet forty years old, but he had already prepared himself well for the cultivation as a Supreme Magus. And now, he was only waiting for the right moment to make the final step.

A towering mountain beside Fei Water was called 'Dai Yue'. The mountain range extended to tens of thousands of miles long, and looked like a giant dragon, wriggling by the river. The mountain was tall, yet many flat areas could be found on both sides of the mountain. Therefore, people living in this area preferred to build towns and villages on the mountainsides, especially the major city of this area.

The major city of Fei Water area was located in the farthest east of the mountain, extending down for hundreds of miles along the mountainside. It seemed to dive into the river like the head of the dragon. It was a magnificent city.

The Dai Yue Mountain was like a giant dragon, with the major city as the dragon head. Down the mountain was where the three main tributaries of the Fei Water river met. The three tributaries were also connected with seventy-two smaller tributaries, which could be counted as the core area of the entire Fei Water.

Because of the towering mountain and the meeting spot of the

three main tributaries, this area was rich in natural powers. A large underground cave was created under the mountains, sending up inexhaustible natural powers, nourishing the mountain.

From a long distance away, the highest peak in the mountain range was coiled in a faint purple mist. From the top to the foot of the mountain, buildings on the mountainside were surrounded by the purple mist. They looked like palaces in the heaven, and seemed to be rather mysterious.

All rivers flooded, including the Fei Water river, which was a rapidly flowing great river. The water surged in every direction from the riverway, but before the highest peak of the Dai Yue mountain, the river drew back, as if it were blocked by an invisible screen. Not a single drop of water could approach the major city, and not even those buildings by the river were affected.

Inside the city, by the door of every building, was a large clay vat, fully containing fresh water. In each vat were a few tender lotus leaves, with blooming lotuses standing upon them.

These lotuses were surrounded by a faint light. The light emitted from these lotuses merged together and became a giant light shield that covered the entire city. Inside the shield, a faint refreshing aroma could be sensed from everywhere, and a sacred voice could be heard, saying something unclear. People in the city were all smiling and unhurried. Outside the city, dead bodies floated everywhere. Compared with that miserable scene, Fei Shui City was like a paradise.

On the boundless water surface outside the city, a large troop stopped moving. Human warriors were standing silently on rafts, looking at the glowing city. This was a flood-control troop. Fei Water river was an important water channel. According to Si Wen Ming’s plan, Fei Water river had to be dredged and connected with the other water channels, so that all the excessive water in the world could be led to the Final Land, and human beings could have their lives back. The meeting spot of the three main tributaries was

essential; a lot of work needed to be done carefully in this area.

However, quite a few messengers were already thrown out from the city with broken legs. Later on, people in the city gave their final warning — If the flood-control troop dared to send one more person into the city to talk nonsense, a corpse would be thrown out this time.

The one leading this flood-control troop was a cousin of Si Wen Ming, called Si Wen Bing. People from Si Wen Ming's family always had the special ability to manage water channels, and enhance bearing capacities of rivers. Si Wen Ming didn't put Si Wen Bing in charge because he was a cousin. Instead, he was sure that Si Wen Bing and his people were capable enough for the task.

Standing on a raft, Si Wen Bing, whose face was almost covered in beard, shouted in anger, "What does Ji Wu want? Why are so many strange people in his city? What on earth do they want?"

From a distance away, one could see a great water-kind army on the other side of the city, facing Si Wen Bing's troops. This army showed no sign to attack, but was silently floating on the water.

A miles-long Xiang Liu snake coiled on a dragon whale's back, lazily shaking its eight giant heads, spouting venom towards Si Wen Bing from time to time.

This Xiang Liu snake was badly provocative, but before he launched any attack, Si Wen Bing wouldn't do anything about it.

Pondering for quite a while, Si Wen Bing hopped into a small dinghy with a few of his trusted warriors and headed to the city. They were all Divine Magi. Therefore, tens of miles of distance only took them a few breaths.

In order to show his politeness and respect, Si Wen Bing didn't fly. Instead, he chose to stick with the most traditional etiquette. He walked to the city gate and deeply bowed towards the gate.

"Dear commanders on the city wall, please send my message to

Lord Ji Wu." SI Wen Bing took a deep breath and said loudly, "I am Si Wen Bing, a descendant of Emperor Xuanyuan, an offspring of Emperor Zhuan Xu, a nephew of Marquis Chong, Si Xi. Please, I want to talk to Lord Ji Wu."

Narrowing his eyes, Si Wen Bing continued politely, "I am an offspring of Emperor Zhuan Xu. Lord Ji Wu and I, we are real relatives. Please, Lord Ji Wu, for the sake of our shared bloodline, talk to me."

Ji Wu was descendent of Emperor Ku, who was a nephew of Emperor Zhuan Xu. Both Emperor Ku and Emperor Zhuanxu were Emperor Xuanyuan’s descendants. Si Wen Bing was a descendant of Emperor Zhuan Xu. Therefore, he and Ji Wu were relatives. Specifically, Si Wen Bing should be a distant uncle of Ji Wu.

Si Wen Bing was not a direct descendant of Emperor Xuanyuan indeed, but he was a true eldership of Ji Wu, for which reason, Ji Wu should open the gate of the city for him, no matter what.

A series of noise could be heard from the top of the city wall. A long while later, a large group of warriors with vividly colored armors showed up on the city wall. A middle-aged man walked up onto the city wall. He was tall and sturdy, even having a majestic look. Holding his hands behind his body, this man glanced down and then laughed coldly.

"You said we are relatives, but why didn’t you come earlier? Why did you send those garbages to me? Are you despising me?"

"You’ve already sent the garbages...Why bother to come now?"

"Go back. I don’t care who you are. Relatives or not, no one can touch even a grass in my place. Whoever dares to do anything without my permission, I will cut off his claws!"

Following Ji Wu’s aggressive voice, two priests walked up smilingly. They were wearing long white robes, with fresh lotuses on their hair buns.

Chapter 1221: Strict Rules

Si Wen Bing didn't look at the two priests. Instead, he deeply bowed to Ji Wu.

Standing on the city wall, Ji Wu's outfit was luxurious, made with pure colorful silk. A golden dragon-skin belt was wrapped around his waist, with over ten glowing jade pendants tied on it. He was also wearing a black ice silk hairband, decorated with over ten thumb-sized gemstones. With his hands held behind his body, he stood on the city wall, resplendent with jewels. He seemed to be noble and powerful, just like a divine god. He looked even taller than he actually was.

What about Si Wen Bing ,who was bowing deeply to Ji Wu? As the leader of a flood-control troop, Si Wen Bing had been soaking in the water all the time, fighting against water-kind creatures. He hadn't rested for many days. His coarse clothes were already ragged, even baring his shoulder and butt.

His thighs were bearing as well. Soaking in the water, his skin was badly pale. All fine hairs had fallen off from his skin, and not even a single fine hair was left on his legs.

His hair were messy like a broken, soaked bird nest. Added with his sallow, tired face, which was covered in water drops, he looked just like an old beggar who had been suffering to live. An indescribable miserableness could be sensed from every part of his body.

Compared with Ji Wu, who had a clean, glowing face, was wearing luxurious clothes, and even wearing a light perfume, Si Wen Bing looked just like a puddle of mud on the ground. Ji Wu looked so great, while Si Wen Bing looked not even like a human being.

Si Wen Bing was a high-level Divine Magus, but having struggled in the flood for all these days, ended up looking like this. It was not

hard to imagine how miserable those Magus Kings, Senior Magi and the ones who hadn’t yet reached to the senior level in flood-control troops were.

He bowed deeply to Ji Wu. Si Wen Bing seemed to forget that as a distant nephew of his, Ji Wu, should be bowing to him instead, according to the traditional etiquette of the humankind.

"Lord Ji Wu, this flood had destroyed the homelands of countless human beings. They lost their homes, their families. The flood is rampant. Each day, our human beings will become weaker than the previous day. Look at these people behind me, for the flood-control mission, they..."

Ji Wu laughed out loud towards the sky. His thunderous laughter even shattered a descending, miles thick water stream. The water stream disintegrated in the air into human-head-sized water balls, falling down.

The Fei Water City was protected by the screen created by those lotuses in vats. Hundreds of meters away from the city, those water balls were evaporated by a soft layer of light. However, Si Wen Bing and his people weren’t protected at all. Countless water balls landed on Si Wen Bing’s head and back, making his messy hair even messier, and look like dirty water plants hanging on his head.

Si Wen Bing and the few warriors behind him were all soaked by the water. But Si Wen Bing remained bowing. The few warriors behind him angrily glanced at Ji Wu, then helplessly lowered their heads.

"The flood, I saw it!" said Ji Wu carelessly, "But my people aren’t harmed by it. See, people in my city are living a happy life. They have everything they need...Ruled by me, over ten-thousand towns and villages are just peaceful. No one is suffering from the flood."

"You can’t control the flood, because you are weak and incapable!" Ji Wu continued scornfully, "Look at you. You are just

like a bunch of jurassic beasts in the mud! I am even pissed by simply looking at you!"

Shaking his head, Ji Wu continued blandly, "You are bowing to me, saying nice words...because you want to borrow my place to do your flood-control work, don't you?"

Si Wen Bing pretended to not hear those insulting words said by Ji Wu just now. He raised his head, smiled and responded, "Yes, Lord Ji Wu. Please, let us in, let us change the river way and the mountain shape."

Breathing deeply, Si Wen Bing continued, "As long as we finished our work here in Fei Water area, thousands of surrounding water channels will be perfectly unimpeded. Then, a big half of the excessive moisture in the air will be led away, the rain will become lighter, and the flood will..."

Ji Wu rudely interrupted him, "Enough of this nonsense. Look at the heavy rain, I think it's not bad. The sounds of the wind and rain are quite pleasant to hear."

While smirking, Ji Wu pointed at the flood, which was hundreds of meters away from the gate of his city, and continued with a deep voice, "As for the flood, see, how boundless is it. This is such a beautiful scenery. I think it can even surge forward with a greater momentum. If you weaken the flood, I won't have a scenery to appreciate, will I?"

Si Wen Bing's face twitched, as he subconsciously clenched his fists.

The flood destroyed countless human villages, but he said that he liked the sounds of the wind and rain? The flood tore thousands of families apart, turned so many people into floating corpses, yet he felt it could go stronger?

As a leader, who was responsible for the lives of millions of people, and more importantly, as a descendant of Emperor Ku, Ji

Wu, how could he say something like that?

Did he still remember his duty? He was supposed to protect all his people!

Emperor Ku left his glories for his descendants, did he still have it??

In peaceful days, merely for what Ji Wu said just now, Hao Tao could arrest him and keep him behind bars forever.

"Ji Wu!" Si Wen Bing slowly straightened his body and shouted out Ji Wu's name, word by word. "Can you now face Emperor Ku, your ancestor unashamedly? Gaoxin, do you even deserve this forename of yours? Do you even deserve to be a descendant of Emperor Xuanyuan?"

Ji Wu grinned carelessly, looking down at Si Wen Bin as he said blandly, "Am I a descendant of Emperor Ku? You don't get to question me, do you? Unless those master elders in You Xiong City say it themselves, who in the world can ever say that I am not a descendant of Emperor Xuanyuan?"

Raising his hands, he carefully looked at his well-protected palms and continued slowly, "Go back. I don't do talking with small people like you. Wanna touch my land? Wanna borrow my place to do your flood-control work...Tell Si Wen Ming to come himself, eh?"

Pointing at Si Wen Bing, Ji Wu laughed, "Remember, I give him three days. Tell him to come beg me personally."

"Beg me, make me happy, then let Si Wen Ming give up on the throne. Once I am happy, you may continue dealing with the flood." Ji Wu grinned brightly, "You see, we're all Emperor Xuanyuan's descendants, and we're relatives...If Si Wen Ming can ascend to the throne, why can't I?"

Si Wen Bing's face even turned blue in anger, as he began shaking intensely.

Ji Wu was aiming at the throne! He did nothing but hinder the flood-control mission. And yet, he dared to aim at the throne!

"How dare you!" Si Wen Bing growled out in rage. He leaped up, trod on a strong gust of wind, and rose to the top of the city wall. Then, he pointed at Ji Wu and shouted again, "How dare you!"

Chapter 1222: What Ji Wu Can Do

"How dare I?" Ji Wu's long hair straightened up, while lava-like streams of fire rose from his feet, instantly covering his entire body. Heave weaves spread out. Behind Ji Wu, a red light dazzled up for thousands of meters, within which, an enormous fire Qi Lin suddenly rushed out, roaring towards the sky.

The roar sounded like thunder blasting together, shaking both the earth and the sky. The red light expanded in all directions.

Following a water-clattering noise, the water before the city gate surged up for nearly a thousand meters and flooded backward, striking down on those human warriors. Countless rafts were wrecked, and those human warriors were thrown into the water.

Instinctively, Si Wen Bing and the few warriors behind him raised their arms to protect their faces. The burning hot red light swept across wave by wave and burned their hair and beard. By breathing, they felt that their noses were burning, and so were their internal organs.

A sizzling noise could be heard. Si Wen Bing could still take it, but blisters had already popped out from the skins of his few warriors. Those thumb-sized blisters started to burst, letting light yellow liquid flow on their skin. Their skin was quickly burned black, and soon, their bones were bared, with a metallic luster.

"How dare I?" Ji Wu burst with a thunderous roar once again, while that fire Qi Lin floating behind him proudly held its head high, aggressively staring at Si Wen Bing.

"Who is the daring one here?" Pointing at Si Wen Bing, Ji Wu yelled, "What are you? You're nothing but an insignificant man from the small You Chong Clan. You're even worse as an animal! How dare you act like that in front of me? Do you know the name of my father? My grandfather? Do you know that I am Marquis Dai? How dare you yell at me?"

The fire Qi Lin roared again and let out a lava-like stream of fire from its mouth, striking straight to Si Wen Bing and his warriors.

Si Wen Bing cursed out. Between his eyebrows, the silhouette of a mountain flashed across, then a triangle shaped, heavy shield flew out of his forehead, and expanded to nearly a hundred meters large against the burning wind, shielding his warriors and himself.

The fire bumped into the dark yellow shield. The fire was strangely sticky, it lingered right on the shield without going anywhere else. It wrapped up the shield, and seemed to even melt it. In a couple of breaths, the ground before the city gate was melted into lava, and not long after that, even the lava was burned into an incandescent state.

"Retreat!" Si Wen Bing shouted while quickly waving his hand to his warriors.

His shield was a Divine-level inherited magic treasure that belonged to the You Chong Clan. It was made from the bones of a thousand and two-hundred different types of spirit beasts with a nature of earth, along with the essence powers of eight famous mountains in Midland. The shield was strong and sturdy, with an amazing defensive power.

Controlling the shield with Si Wen Bing’s current power, not even a higher level Jia Clan warrior could break it, unless three to five higher level Jia Clan warriors combined their powers. But now, Si Wen Bing sensed a great pressure. He heard the shield screaming, which meant that the fire released by the fire Qi Lin was already weakening the shield’s original power.

"Ji Wu!" Si Wen Bing roared. He ordered his warriors to retreat, but the two priests beside Ji Wu smiled. One of them released a silver flying dagger while the other one threw out a golden flying sword. The flying dagger and sword left thousands of afterimages in the air, bypassed Si Wen Bing, and flew to his few warriors.

"Hit the targets!" The two priests laughed out loud together.

Their flying sword and dagger pierced into the bodies of the few warriors, who were already covered in burn wounds. The sharp sword and dagger cut open their burning muscles, hacked on their bones, and generated loud tinkles.

The few warriors under Si Wen Bing's command were also Divine Magi. However, the flying dagger and sword momentarily left hundreds of bone-deep wounds on their bodies. They didn't panic. They breathed deeply, boosted up their spirit blood, and sent it to their wounds.

A Divine Magus had the power to even regrow his or her body from a single drop of blood. Some powerful ones could even survive a beheading, not to mention a flew dagger and sword wounds; those were nothing to Divine Magi.

Nevertheless, the few warriors soon shouted out loud in shock. They sent their spirit blood to their wounds, yet those long and deep wounds weren't healed. On the contrary, large streams of blood were squeezed out of their bodies through those wounds.

A strange power lingered in their wounds, giving them a warm, numb feeling, while emitting a sweet and sour aroma. That was a magic drug which paralyzed their wounds, and seemed even to take away all the life-force around those wounds, and let spirit blood flow out of their bodies ceaselessly.

Soon, the few warriors were covered in blood. Their blood flowing down from their bodies dyed the earth red within nearly a hundred meters in radius.

"Commander, be careful! These weapons are strange!" The few warriors roared out in rage, while a golden beam and a silver beam flashed all over the sky, generating a series of puffing noise. These warriors trembled intensively, as the dagger and the sword penetrated their bodies over and over again, leaving thousands of punctured wounds on their bodies.

Hearts, lungs, livers...All their internal organs were severely

injured.

Fortunately, Divine Magi possessed a strong life-force. They activated their spirit star power, replenishing their consumed spirit blood. But still, large streams of blood had been spraying out from their bodies. Gradually, their limbs were softened, and they started feeling cold.

Not even Divine Magi could afford to lose so much blood, not to mention the flying sword and dagger had been adding more wounds on their bodies al the time.

"Brothers, you are amazing!" Ji Wu laughed out loud and waved his right arm. A long and red sword appeared in his hand as he continued, "I'd like to show my power too. After all, I've been cultivating myself pretty hard these years. Brothers, please kindly give your advice!

"Be careful!" Si Wen Bing growled hoarsely, as he turned around, looking at his few warriors, who were almost killed by the flying sword and dagger.

"You be careful! Like I said, what are you? How dare you yell at me? It would be about right if Si Wen Ming came himself. A small one like you? Never!" Ji Wu laughed. Abruptly, he flashed across the air and almost teleported himself to Si Wen Bing. Next, the long red sword directly penetrated Si Wen Bing's chest, leaving a stream of fire in the air. The sword was almost as long as Ji Wu's body, yet was only about one inch wide.

Si Wen Bing howled in pain. The sword began burning his internal organs once it sank into his body. Si Wen Bing was a strong and brave one, but still, he twitched in pain, and couldn't help but howl and curse out.

Ji Wu gave a vicious grin while twisting the sword inside Si Wen Bing's body. He cut open a half of Si Wen Bing's chest.

Blood splashed out as Si Wen Bing roared like a beast. He turned

around with a dark yellow, heavy blade gripped in his hand, and hacked down towards Ji Wu's head. Hazy mountain silhouettes emerged around the blade.

This was how true human warriors were like — 'You refused to talk, so we fight, life to death! What could be even worse than death? Why would I be afraid of you? If I am too afraid to pull out my blade or wield my sword, would I still be counted as a human warrior?'

When Ji Hao arrived by the golden bridge, he saw Si Wen Bing launching the full strike.

Chapter 1223: Datura Poison

Si Wen Bing raised his blade, yet Ji Hao seemed to not see it at all.

The few warriors under Si Wen Bing's command were still suffering from the flying sword and dagger. From a distance away, Ji Hao saw two priests with lotuses on their heads. He was enraged the moment he saw them. A dazzling red light was released from his head while a golden sun flew out of his chest. Sword-sharp golden light beams darted out from the sun.

Under the effect of Ji Hao's sword intent, the essence sun fire condensed into a strong sword, flashed across hundreds of miles, and accurately landed on the flying dagger and sword. Along with a long series of metal-clangs, the fist-sized dagger and sword were shaken under the fierce wave of sword light released by Ji Hao. Every single beam of sword light was scorching hot. Soon, both the sword and the dagger turned glowing-red, with countless spell symbols sparkling on the edges, seeming to be melted.

The two priests on the city wall were shocked. They howled out together and breathed deeply. The shaking flying sword and dagger each gave a shrill scream, and seemed to fly back to their owners.

"Where are you going?" Standing beside Ji Hao, Man Man burst with a great roar. Her pair of hammer suddenly expanded to tens of meters huge, surrounded by purple flame. They flew out rumblingly, followed by hundreds of meters long fire thunderbolts.

In the past few years, Man Man followed Ji Hao almost everywhere. By now, she could easily recognize disciples of Priest Hua and Priest Mu. At the moment, seeing the two priests with lotuses on their heads, Man Man immediately realized that they were enemies, even before Ji Hao said a thing.

The flying sword and dagger didn't mange to fly back to their owners before Man Man's pair of hammer smashed down like two hills. A thunderous boom was generated, as the formation set in the pair of hammer by Yu Yu was activated. The sword and dagger were already softened by Ji Hao's essence sun fire sword lights, and now, suffering the violent strike from Man Man's hammers, they were directly crushed. Even through the quality of these two pieces was considerably high, they couldn't escape their sorry fate.

Tens of fragments darted out towards all directions, leaving golden and silver beams in the air. On the city wall, the two priests had their faces turned pale, while a large stream of blood spurted out from each of their noses. They raised their heads, faces covered in blood, glancing at the golden bridge which was swiftly approaching from a long distance away. In the next moment, they shouted Ji Hao's name out in alarm.

"Marquis Yao Ji Hao...Why are you here?!"

Ji Hao's eyes shone with a frigid light. 'They know my name? It seems that I am quite a badass now in the eyes of Priest Hua and Priest Mu's disciples!"

While sneering, Ji Hao prepared to say something, but behind him, Feng Xing gave a deep growl. Gripped in his hand, the Yi bow burst with a dazzling light. Following a buzzing noise, a 'hurricane', a 'wolf tusk', and a 'volcano collapse' were released simultaneously.

Near the city gate, Si Wen Bing's blade swooshed down towards Ji Wu's head, leaving layers of mountain silhouettes in the air. Ji Wu sneered scornfully while raised his left hand as he grasped the blade edge bare hand.

Bang! A strong power erupted, spreading in all directions. Si Wen Bing gave a muffled moan as his hands were blasted, baring his bones. Ji Wu was much more powerful than him. Hacking on Ji Wu's palm with the blade, Si Wen Bing felt that he was actually

hacking a bronze wall. Not even a scratch was left on Ji Wu's palm, while Si Wen Bing's both hands were disabled.

"You useless thing!" Ji Wu put forth his strength and forcibly pulled the blade out from Si Wen Bing's hands. This violent move cut off a large piece of muscle from Si Wen Bing's hand.

In the meanwhile, Ji Wu raised his right arm. His longsword seemed to slice across Si Wen Bing's neck and cut off his head. As a Divine Magus, Si Wen Bing could indeed regrow his body from a single drop of blood, but having his head cut off would undoubtedly weaken him largely.

Right at this moment, Feng Xing's arrows arrived.

The 'hurricane' was swift and weightless It reached less than three inches away from the back of Ji Wu's head, almost at the same moment when it was released from the string. Ji Wu had no time to attack Si Wen Bing anymore. He hurriedly swung his sword back, fending himself against the arrow.

Clang! The 'hurricane' arrow clung to the sword edge, spinning like a top while clashing against the sword edge, generating a loud and shrill buzzing noise.

The 'hurricane' didn't have too strong a penetrating power, neither could it do great damage to its target. But it had a long range and a long-lasting power. By spinning restlessly on the sword edge, the 'hurricane' sword was bringing a constant pressure to Ji Wu.

Ji Wu twisted his wrist, prepared to throw away the 'hurricane', yet the 'wolf tusk' had already swished to behind him.

Ji Wu howled out as a cold beam of light almost blinded his eyes. He sensed a heart-deep coldness drilling into his body. Helplessly, he turned away from Si Wen Bing and focused on the arrow coming from behind. Turning around, he launched a heavy hack with the blade he seized from Si Wen Bing.

Feng Xing was a powerful archer. The arrow he released suddenly burst with a dazzling light. The ‘wolf tusk’, which was flying at lightning speed, abruptly slowed down, and let the ‘volcano collapse’ surpass it, bumping onto the blade.

A thunderous boom and raging fire were generated, covering miles in radius. The great explosive force shook Ji Wu’s arm, shattered his armor, and bared his entire chest.

The ‘wolf tusk’ struck at this moment. The tremendous power from the Yi bow erupted from the arrow. As a freezing beam of light flashed across, a scream from Ji Wu could be heard. Twelve jade pendents tied around his belt exploded simultaneously, and so did the shaft of the ‘wolf tusk’ arrow. But the three-inch long arrowhead violently pierced into Ji Wu’s chest through layers of defensive magic screens.

"It hurts!" Ji Wu was a valued genius from a child, a carefully cultivated prince, among Emperor Ku’s descendants. He was a perfectly protected person since always; he never even washed his own clothes. Now, being hit by the arrow, Ji Wu sensed nothing but an unbearable pain. Instinctively, he turned around and fled towards the city.

But once Ji Wu moved, Si Wen Bing spread his arms and grabbed Ji Wu tight.

"Lord Ji Wu, too late to leave!" While vomiting blood, Si Wen Bing laughed out loud, looking at Ji Wu’s twisted face.

Si Wen Bing stalled Ji Wu long enough for the golden bridge to bring Ji Hao and his friends over. Ji Hao flashed to Si Wen Bing, gripped Ji Wu’s neck with his right hand, while throwing out a heavy punch with his left hand. Without saying a word, he broke Ji Wu’s right arm. Ji Wu’s longsword was still held in his right hand.

"Don’t struggle, or you will die!" shouted Ji Hao.

With an exciting grin, grin, Yu Mu nimbly dashed to the few badly injured warriors under Si Wen Bing’s command, and quickly spread tens of kinds of magic medicine in the form of a powder. Faint wisps of smoke puffed up from the few warriors’ wounds, yet their wounds still showed no sign of healing. On the contrary, these warriors even began to lose more blood.

"What poison this is? What poison this is?! It can actually harm Divine Magi! What is this?!" Yu Mu even screamed out loud, waving his arms hysterically.

Without hesitating, Ji Hao put forth his strength through his right fingers, broke half of Ji Wu’s cervical spine, and then asked, "What is that poison?"

"Brother, don’t tell him!" The two priests yelled on the city wall.

Ji Hao gave Ji Wu a knee strike on the lower belly, and squeezed a shrill scream out of his mouth along with a big mouthful of blood.

"Golden-rim Datura! That is Golden-rim Datura!" Ji Wu screamed with a high-pitched voice while staring at Ji Hao, as if he were the scariest ghost in the world.

Chapter 1224: Break Fei Water City

"Damn it!" The looks of the two priests slightly changed, as they cursed out together.

A strong power vibration spread out from the two priests, while faintly audible thunders occurred. From each of their heads, a golden mist rose and spread. In the golden mist, countless datura flowers with translucent petals bloomed slowly. Each petal had a golden rim.

A sweet aroma spread out, as intoxicating as the aroma of the best wine. Like a warm and gentle breeze, the indescribable aroma reached to Ji Hao and his friends.

"Dangerous, move!"Yu Mu released a few locusts, flying into the beautiful aroma. The few locusts rocked their bodies and fell to the ground once they sensed the aroma, seeming to be drunk.

Within a single second, the few highly poisonous locusts which could resist almost all kinds of poison in the world, died right on the spot. The bodies of the few locusts melted speedily, and soon became puddles of beautiful golden liquid.

With a grinning face, Ji Hao stared at the two priests. With a scary bleeding wound on his chest, Si Wen Bing walked over and quickly explained the whole thing to Ji Hao.

Ji Hao cast a glimpse at Ji Wu. Ji Wu gritted his teeth, suffering from his broken neck. "Marquis Yao Ji Hao? I've heard your name! Do you know who I am? I'm a descendant of Emperor Ku, I am..."

Snorting coldly, Ji Hao's entire body shone with a dazzling golden light. The essence sun power was released, which blocked the thick aroma created by the two priests. The essence sun fire could naturally break all evils. Visibly, two layers of goldenness, one darker and one brighter, clashed against each other in the air, causing a sizzling noise and a strong, soul-taking aroma.

The poisoning aroma created by the two priests was burned out by the essence sun fire. The toxicity was gone, but a strong aroma remained, lingering on everyone's hair, skin and clothes, without fading.

While dealing with the aroma, Ji Hao lifted Ji Wu up and said in a deep and strong voice, "Can descendants of Emperor Ku help the evil ones, betray our humankind, and leave our people to face a serious disaster?"

Ji Wu's face turned pale. He had been well protected since he was young, and indeed, he had never been through any life-threatening difficulty. But as a carefully cultivated prince among Emperor Ku's descendants, he was rather smart. Of course, he sensed the bone-deep intent of killing from the simple sentence said by Ji Hao.

"Don't you dare to kill me!" Ji Wu struggled and attempted to scream again.

However, Ji Hao squeezed Ji Wu's throat with his right thumb and disabled him from making any sound.

Raising Ji Wu high with his right arm, Ji Hao looked at Fei Water City and roared, "Sadly, Lord Ji Wu was killed by those two men with an evil magic. His body was destroyed, and his soul perished...I am Ji Hao. Under the order of Emperor Shun, I am now in charge. Lord Ji Wu has died already. Therefore, I will be taking over all the powers and resources in this Fei Water City!"

Hearing Ji Hao, Ji Wu's body twitched intensely. He looked at Ji Hao in despair. He tried to scream for help, and he also wanted to curse Ji Hao for lying. He was still alive. He was grabbed in Ji Hao's hand, but he was alive, so how could Ji Hao...

Ji Hao suddenly clenched his five right fingers. Crack! Ji Wu's neck bones were crushed in Ji Hao's hand. Before Ji Wu could heal himself, Ji Hao gave a resonant roar and released a raging essence sun fire from his right palm, burning Ji Wu's head.

Ji Wu couldn’t stop twitching. A red armor coiled by nine dragons flew out of his body and clanged loudly, seeming to land on Ji Wu’s body. However, once the armor flew out, Shaosi suddenly showed up beside Ji Hao, just like a ghost.

Shaosi did nothing but silently stand beside Ji Hao, with her hands hiding in her sleeves. Coldly, she just looked at the armor.

A gray silhouette emerged above Shaosi’s head. It was a hazy but enormous man, who lowered his head and slowly glanced at this red armor. The armor let out a shrill scream, as the soul seal left in the armor by Ji Wu was erased. The armor was am ownerless piece now.

Standing aside, Man Man had a strong fire rising from her body. The red armor clanged again, transformed into nine dragon silhouettes, and flew to Man Man. Following a few dragon roars, a beautiful armor appeared on Man Man’s body.

"Hmm..."Sensing the armor’s power, Man Man curved her lip corners down and said, "Not as good as the armor Abba gave me... But, it’s not bad though, can serve as a backup!"

More defensive treasures flew out from Ji Wu’s body one after another. But Shaosi was standing right in front of Ji Wu, erasing all soul seals left in these treasures. Ten breaths later, Ji Wu ran out of treasures.

By now, he could only fight Ji Hao’s essence sun fire with his strong but bare body. Ji Hao was already a half-step Supreme Magus, and his essence sun fire could even burn the sky and destroy all living creatures. However, Ji Wu was a carefully cultivated genius, and was much older than Ji Hao. He was only a breath away from the level of Supreme Magus, and had an incredibly strong, tough body.

Being burned for about ten breaths, Ji Wu was still twitching, without dying.

Sighing deeply, Ji Hao emphasized, "People, see clearly, these two priests killed Ji Wu!"

Pointing at the two priests, who had their teeth gritted tight and had been trying to boost up the power of the datura poison, Ji Hao activated the Pan Gu bell, tied Ji Wu with the fifteen meters tall bell, then clenched his fists and rang the bell with full strength.

Followed by an echoing bell ring, large streams of Chaos power surged out of the bell. Amidst a shrill howl, Ji Wu's body was suddenly swallowed up by the Chaos power and disappeared.

A golden, glowing soul flew out from Ji Wu's collapsing body. Ji Wu's soul...No, his primordial spirit, viciously stared at Ji Hao and screamed out loud. It transformed into a golden beam of light, attempting to run.

"Primordial spirit? Hehe, not bad!" Ji Hao saw it clearly. Just like himself, Ji Wu had been cultivating himself as a Qi cultivator. However, Ji Wu's primordial spirit was far weaker than Ji Hao's.

Facing Ji Wu's primordial spirit, Ji Hao punched again on the Pan Gu bell.

Another bell ring was generated, resounding through the clouds. Ji Wu's primordial spirit was crushed. A five-colored glow emitted from Ji Hao's palm, which swallowed Ji Wu's original soul and sent it into the five-colored caldron. The five-colored flame wrapped up that original soul and soon melted it.

Ji Wu was destroyed for good. No bit of his remained in the world. Ji Hao even took the opportunity of reincarnation away from him.

"My friends, it's your turn now!" Looking at the two priests on the city wall, Ji Hao said blandly, "How dare you kill Ji Wu? He was a descendant of Emperor Ku! You...You should die!"

The faces of the two priests turned purely dark.

Growling resonantly, Ji Hao held up the Pan Gu bell with both

hands and threw the bell at the city gate with all of his power.

Countless layers of magic shields glowed, as great defensive formations activated one after another. But the Pan Gu bell bumped in, it shattered everything, as if those defensive formations never even existed.

Followed by an earth-quaking boom, the thick bronze city gate collapsed, and a miles-long section of the city wall was torn down as well.

Chapter 1225: Heavy penalties during Rough Times

The city gate collapsed. In hundreds of large vats before a series of buildings near the city gate, over a thousand blooming lotuses suddenly shattered, as if a giant heavy hammer had smashed right on them. Petals were torn apart, and those vats were crushed.

Dust rose in clouds. The two priests with lotuses on their heads screamed in panic. They darted up into the sky, and desperately fled westward.

However, they only reached hundreds of meters high before Shaosi teleported herself to them. The long spear in Shaosi's hands sparkled with an ice-cold light and heavily poked into their chests.

The two priests' bodies emitted a golden light, which condensed into two thick light shields, fending against the spear. Bang! Bang! The two light shields exploded, and the long spear easily penetrated their shoulders. Meanwhile, Shaosi flashed to before their faces.

"You're just a little girl! How dare you!" The two priests cursed out loud together. They endured the piercing pain from their shoulders and waved their broad sleeves, releasing eighteen golden beads and a twelve-story silver tower, rumblingly flying to Shaosi.

Shaosi cast a deep roar, dropped the spear, and pressed both her hands down. The enormous, gray, hazy shadow behind her moved slightly, then both the two priests sensed a strange coldness, as if something important had been taken away from them by some mysterious and extremely powerful being.

Weirdly, they suddenly lost the control of those golden beads and the silver tower. Being blown by the wind, those beads and the silver tower swished backward and smashed right on the two priests. The priest sent out those golden beads was hit on the head

by the silver tower, while the one who sent out the silver tower had all eighteen golden beads land on his face.

They screamed in pain, vomited blood, and fell on the collapsed city wall.

Before they could even struggle back up, Yuan Li dashed up to them, leaving a silver beam in the sky. Raising the dragon staff high, Yuan Li bashed violently on their chests. All the ribs of these two priests were broken, and as a consequence, blood spurted out from their mouths, ears, eyes and noses, in sharp streams. From the dragon staff, the earth, water, fire, and wind power struck into their bodies together, crushed their internal organs, and almost shredded their entire bodies.

"Who are you?! How dare you hurt my brothers!" Angry shouts came from the top of Yue Dai Mountain. From a few stone palaces on the mountaintop, nearly a hundred beams of light flashed across the sky and approached swiftly.

Those were all Qi cultivators, with simple long robes and brightly shining eyes. Their faces were glowing, which made them look especially energetic. Their bodies were wrapped in a warm mist. Clearly, they were all not weak.

Ji Hao opened his erect eye and scanned these people with a clear beam of light, then gave a cold sneer.

Among these people coming in a formidable array, only three to five had attained primordial spirits, while the others were still working on absorbing natural powers. As Qi cultivators, these people were still beginners.

Ji Hao didn’t want to waste any time talking to these disciples of Priest Hua and Priest Mu. He was clearly aware of the fact, that he might not win a verbal battle against these people. Perhaps, this was a special gift that all Priest Hua and Priest Mu’ disciples were top-grade talkers.

Breathing deeply, Ji Hao clenched his fingers. The Pan Gu bell flew up from the ruins of the city gate at lightning speed. Ji Hao held the bell with both arms and aimed at those people flowing down the mountain, then threw out the bell once again with all his strength.

Another earth-quaking boom was generated. The Pan Gu bell shattered the air and caused tens of air-blasts, then unstoppably smashed on those people who had been diving down aggressively. The space hundreds of miles in radius was crushed. Over a hundred Qi cultivators died right on the spot. Their bodies were smashed to pieces, and souls were shredded by the Chaos tides roaring out from the space crack.

Silently, the bell flew back to Ji Hao, floating above his head as it released Chaos power streams and shielded Ji Hao’s entire body.

Ji Hao descended from the air and landed before the two priests with lotuses on their heads. Stomping his foot on their knees, he crushed those knees. Hearing their screams, Ji Hao started talking in a cruel tone, "I don’t want to know your names, neither do I want to know your relationship with Priest Hua and Priest Mu...I want the antidote of the datura poison, and...How much of that poison do you have right now?"

The two priests hesitated briefly. Without hesitating, Ji Hao raised his sword and swung down, beheading these two people. Their heads flew up, as blood splashed all over the ground.

Ji Hao dropped his left hand and clenched his fingers. Following his move, two primordial spirits flew out from the two dead bodies, covered in blood. Like evil ghosts, the two priests screamed hoarsely, "Ji Hao! How dare you hurt our bodies?! You, you, you... The hatred between you and us is as deep as the sea. We will..."

"Noisy!" Ji Hao laughed, then released the extremely negative power from his left hand. One primordial spirit paused all of a sudden, as it was frozen, sealed in a blue ice block. Along with a

sizzling noise, the extremely negative power drilled into that primordial spirit, slowly turning it into a strand of extremely negative power.

The sealed priest stared at Ji Hao in a soul-deep fear, but he couldn't make any sound. His power was fading rapidly. What he could do at the moment was nothing but watch himself melt in the extremely negative power, and sense his ultimate death.

The other priest was scared to death. He looked at Ji Hao, deeply frightened. "Right in our bags! A calabash-full of ointment, made from golden-rim datura flowers! The antidote in a black jade bottle...We also-also have twelve golden-rim datura seeds! We were going to plant them on this mountain!"

Ji Hao didn't move, because Yu Mu had already flown to the dead bodies of the two priests. He rummaged impatiently, and found two bags soaked in blood. Carefully searching for a while, he excitedly took out a golden calabash and a black jade bottle, and a fist-sized transparent jade box. He even cheered out loud.

"Alright, you're useless now." Ji Hao released a raging stream of essences sun fire and burned the two primordial spirits to death. As same as the last time, a five-colored light emitted from his palm, which caught the two dead primordial spirits and sent them into the cauldron. Ground by the five-colored flame, their original souls were burned down.

"Don't blame me, blame your master Shifu." Looking where the two primordial spirits died, Ji Hao said coldly, "The one who attacked me in that Star Guard's palace was Priest Mu, wasn't he? I said, he hit me, so I will slaughter his disciples. There is no right or wrong about this."

In Fei Water City, all ministers, commanders, and people under Ji Wu's command watched Ji Hao killing everyone.

All this happened in a very short span of time. Within a couple of breaths, over a hundred 'powerful strange people' died, and so did

Ji Wu. Even their city gate and city wall was torn down by Ji Hao.

"Revenge for Lord Ji Wu!" An old man in a luxurious long robe burst with an infuriated roar."

"Revenge for Lord Ji Wu!" countless people living in the city growled.

Ji Hao sneered, waved his hand and said, "We have to use heavy penalties during rough times. Fei Water City people were fooled and used by evil people. They betrayed the humankind and killed their leader Ji Wu! Every one of them bears the blame!"

Breathing deeply, Ji Hao wielded his sword, pointed at the city, and shouted, "Commander Si Wen Bing, follow me and kill!"

Chapter 1226: All in the City Are Slaves

Under the Pan Gu bell, surrounded by Chaos power streams. Ji Hao rushed into Fei Water City with bare hands.

Through the city, two 'Z' shaped roads started before Ji Wu's palace, extending from the mountaintop to the mountain foot. These two roads were connected with all streets in the city.

At the moment, on the two roads, large groups of Fei Water City warriors wearing crocodile-skin armors, marched down the mountain, mounted on jade-horn antelopes. The clear hoofsteps even quaked the mountain.

Dai Yue Mountain was the core of Fei Water territory. The mountain was tall and rugged. Therefore, common mounts couldn't be used in this area. Jade-horn antelope was a special kind of mount in this area. Jade-horn antelopes were gigantic in shape, had superior jumping abilities, and were especially good at climbing cliffs and running in mountainous areas. Therefore, the mounts of all Fei Water City warriors were jade-horn antelopes. Large numbers of enormous ancient crocodiles lived by the Fei Water. These ancient crocodiles were violent and brutal, even strong enough to hunt flood dragons. Ji Wu's people made the skins of these crocodiles into armors. This kind of armor was soft yet strong, with an incredible defensive power, but almost weightless, almost as good as dragon-skin armors.

Hundreds of thousands of warriors stationed in this city were led by a few Divine Magi. The army marched down in an overwhelming way. Far away from Ji Hao, these warriors raised their sparkling long spears and heavy axes and threw them towards Ji Hao.

Ji Hao rushed up with big steps. Waves of flying spears and axes swished down, bumping on the Chaos power streams around him. Muffled booms could be heard without an end, as those axes

shattered against the Chaos power streams, fragments darting everywhere. More flying axes came from all directions. Soon, metal fragments piled up around Ji Hao's feet, over three-feet in height.

"Break!"

Ji Hao gave a loud growl. He dared not to release his power in the city. Instead, he carefully wielded his fists, restrained his power, and punched the surrounding air. The air was vibrated intensively, caused a shrill buzzing noise. Waves of air blasts roared out in all directions.

Following a rumbling noise, all buildings seven to eight miles in radius around Ji Hao were torn down.

Bricks, wooden roof beams, straws, all exploded into pieces. People hiding in those buildings were rolled up, thrown far away like drifting leaves. Under the effect of Ji Hao's air-punches, these people felt that their hearts were shaken, then they all blacked out.

Ji Hao's power landed on these citizens softly and stunned them, but on those warriors, who had been throwing spears and axes to Ji Hao from a distance away, the power was violent and destructive. Following muffled thuds, large groups of Fei Water warriors were sent flying backward while vomiting blood. They were thrown to the ground with their armors shattered, unable to resist at all.

Coughing out blood, these warriors found out that they were only slightly wounded. Their internal organs were shaken, limbs were softened, but except for vomiting some blood and the temporary powerlessness, nothing worse happened to them.

"B*stard! Marquis Yao! This is not a place for you to mess around!"

The seven to eight commanders finally approached Ji Hao. This city was their homeland, and a slight leak of their powers could

flatten a big half of the mountain, and kill millions of people in the city. But they ignored all this and launched attacks on Ji Hao with all their powers.

Their powers were released from their heads, rising straight up into the sky, and even created a million-miles-wide hole in the dense dark clouds in the sky. The heavy rain and the strong wind stopped, as all raindrops and water streams in this area paused under the strong powers of these Divine Magi. Not a single drop of water could fall down.

The mountain began quaking intensely. In the river, the flowing water stopped, then all three tributaries began shaking. Fish-scale-like ripples emerged on the water surface, growing larger and larger. A true disaster seemed to happen right now.

Ji Hao pointed his finger up. The Pan Gu bell suddenly expanded its Chaos power and enveloped the few Divine Magi. Their surging power hit against the Chaos power streams, generating muffled booms, but could no longer affect the outside.

"You should all die!" said Ji Hao angrily, "Helping the evil ones, betraying the humankind, you can still blame Ji Wu for that. But ignoring the lives of your people, using your powers in the city without a second thought? You are frenzied! You should die!"

Ji Hao raised his fist and launched the combined move of ‘sky-opening’ and ‘earth-splitting’.

With his current power, the combined move was powerful enough to shake a Supreme Magus. Strange lights shone from his fist, because the space power and time power of Pan Gu world were both activated by him.

"Die!" Recklessly, the few Divine Magi stepped up and attempted to kill Ji Hao joint handedly.

With a thunderous bang, Ji Hao’s fist landed heavily on their bodies.

All surrounding Fei Water warriors cried out in alarm, some even screamed in fear. Their weapons clanged against the ground one after another — What did they see? The most powerful few Divine Magi in the city were killed by Ji Hao with a single punch!

With a single punch, Ji Hao crushed their bodies, destroyed their blood, and even burned their souls with a strand of golden flame. Among them, one was a peak-level Divine Magus, and three were high-level Divine Magi. Yet, none of them manage to survive a single punch from Ji Hao?!

"We surrender! We surrender!" A few Magus Kings screamed in despair. They didn't run, and instead, kneeled straight on the ground, shouting about surrendering.

They deeply understood that the ones powerful enough to kill Divine Magi with a single strike were either freaks among Divine Magi, or Supreme-level beings, who were no longer human beings.

Whether Ji Hao was a 'freak' or a 'Supreme-level being', they could never run away under his nose, no one could!

"Kneel and surrender, you will live; fight back or try to run, your will die, and your families will die because of you!" Treading on a fiery cloud, Ji Hao rose into the air, looking at the city as he shouted, "You betrayed the humankind, so you all have to bear the blame!"

"The flood is weakening the humankind. Your Fei Water City is powerful, yet you never tried to do your part to fight the flood with all the others. On the contrary, you helped the evil ones and delayed the flood-control plan for your own best interests! If you are too innocent to die, who isn't?"

"However, we are all human beings after all. So, I will not take your lives." continued Ji Hao coldly, "All of you, everyone from Fei Water territory, from this day on, you are slaves. You will join flood-control troops and fight on the frontline. When the flood is controlled, we will decide your fate according to your

contributions!"

Si Wen Bing rushed into the city with a large troop and brought all commanders in the city under control.

Chapter 1227: Hunt Him Down With Full Strength

Fei Water City people were crying. Even the sky was shaken by their cries. Standing on top of every tall building in the city were heavy armored elite warriors that came from Pu Ban City under Ji Hao's order. These warriors were under the direct order of Emperor Shun. Expressionlessly standing in the city, some of them were even staring at those Fei Water people with angry eyes.

Human beings were facing a destructive disaster, but as a strong human force, Fei Water people refused to tide over the difficulty with everyone else. Even worse, they tried to ruin the flood-control plan for their own benefits. These people should die. They might live, but they should pay for their crime, even though these people didn't make the call.

Thousands of melting pots stood in the city, glowing-red. Hundreds of searing irons with long handles were placed on each pot.

Crying and screaming, Fei Water people were dragged to those melting pots by strong warriors, one by one. Torturers with black outfits and blood-red belts picked up those searing irons and heavily pressed on the face of each Fei Water people. 'Slave', that was the word seared deeply onto their faces.

Those searing irons were made from dark metals and the ancient toxic gas from the earth core, dipped in a secretly concocted magic drug. Once the sear was made on the skin, nothing could make it fade. Even if these enslaved people cut off their faces, the sear would still sink deeply into their bones.

In extreme conditions, some weaker ones would even have the sear on their souls. Even after they died and reincarnated, faint slave marks would still be on their faces. In human clans, newborn babies with slave marks on faces would certainly be thrown into

forests and be eaten by wild beasts.

They cried loudly. Ji Hao expressionlessly stood on the mountaintop, looking down at those Fei Water people crying, wailing, and begging. Males, females, the old ones, young ones, the kind ones, and the evil ones, their leader made the wrong choice, and they had to be punished for that.

Amidst the cries, wails, and screams, Ji Hao also heard people praying.

Many Fei Water people were still praying to Priest Hua and Priest Mu, begging Priest Hua and Priest Mu to show up and to save them, and bring them to the 'eternal paradise' that those disciples mentioned before.

On the square Ji Hao stood on, a giant number of full-length portraits of Priest Hua and Priest Mu on leather scrolls were piled up. Tens of human warriors poured a pungent smelling oil on the pile. Some of them threw torches on the pile, and started the fire.

Fei Water territory had the population of hundreds of millions. If every family had twenty people, tens of millions of families existed in this territory. Every family had a portrait of Priest Hua and Priest Mu on their altar. Thus, tens of millions of portraits were found.

When all these portraits kindled together, the fire was so raging that no one could approach the pile.

Dense black smoke was puffing out from the fire. All of sudden, a suffocating power vibration was released from the fire. Deep spell-enchanting voices could be heard, while golden light shone from the fire. Within the golden light, Priest Mu sat under a linden tree, legs crossed, with Priest Hua smilingly stood behind him, holding a lotus.

Once this happened, countless Fei Water people began screaming. Strugglingly, they kneeled towards the mountaintop,

kowtowing as fast as they could to Priest Hua and Priest Mu. With hoarse voices, they begged Priest Hua and Priest Mu to save them and their families.

Ji Hao clearly saw thigh-thick streams of faith power rising from those people' heads, merging together into a purple-golden torrent, flowing to Priest Hua and Priest Mu in the golden light.

In the golden light, Priest Hua and Priest Mu started moving. Both of them smiled faintly.

The leaders of these Fei Water people were killed, and so were all commanders. They themselves and all their families were becoming slaves. These people were so despairing and scared right now.

The two masters they had been worshiping suddenly showed up from the fire. Seeing this, these people believed that they were saved. At this moment, the faith they had to Priest Hua and Priest Mu reached a crazy point.

These people had weak souls indeed, but after all, they were all owners of the natural fortune of Pan Gu world. When their faith power reached an extreme point, their souls suddenly grew strong, almost to an extreme degree.

At the moment, their souls were shining, strong and determined; this moment, guided by Priest Hua and Priest Mu, the souls of these Fei Water people became powerful. No other evilness could affect their souls anymore. Meanwhile, a precious and great faith power had been releasing from their souls, towards the two priests.

Fei Water people were like a herd of livestock, while Priest Hua and Priest Mu were farmers, who raised the livestock. Without even knowing, Ji Hao turned himself into a sharp blade, a harvesting tool, and a good helper of Priest Hua and Priest Mu.

"How ridiculous! Don't you dare to fool human beings like this!"

Looking at the rapidly flowing torrent of faith power, Ji Hao was infuriated. He roared thunderously and sent the Pan Gu bell up into the sky. The bell buzzed, expanded to hundred-miles, and enveloped the giant Priest Hua and Priest Mu in the fire.

The faith power descended. The bell released the Chaos power and created thousands of swirls, swallowing all the faith power. No matter how much faith power Fei Water people could produce, the bell would swallow it.

The faith power was ‘marked’ clearly, as it was offered to Priest Hua and Priest Mu. However, the bell ringed, erased all the ‘marks’ from the faith power. In Ji Hao’s lower belly, the five-colored cauldron was spinning happily, while waves of golden-purple faith power flowed in. The five-colored flame covered the faith power, and soon, golden-purple, heavy and pure streams of faith power surged into Ji Hao’s body.

His red sun primordial spirit began shrinking speedily, while the three embryos of Dao suddenly burst with dazzling lights.

Ji Hao was shaking intensely. Marks of the great Dao flashed across his eyes. All of a sudden, he gained so much deeper understanding to Yin, Yang, and the great Dao of destruction. Within a single second, he harvested more than he could gain through three to five months of severe cultivation!

His spirit power was soaring as well. Thunder was blasting in his spiritual space, while the red sun primordial spirit glowed brightly. His spirit power was highly condensed, sweeping across the spiritual space like a tsunami.

Far, far away, Priest Hua was chasing a dragon horse and a dark turtle. Abruptly, he quivered and turned around with a grim look, casting a glance towards Fei Water City.

"Ji Wu, my good disciple, you died so miserably. Ji Hao, you killed so many of my disciples!" Priest Hua gritted his teeth and shouted coldly, "You are also looting our faith power...This is

unacceptable! Even though you are Yu Yu’s disciple...How dare you?!"

As he turned around and paused briefly, the dragon horse and the dark turtle had darted far away, seeming to disappear from Priest Hua’s vision.

Priest Hua hurriedly chased up. A lotus petal drifted down from his body and airily rose into the sky.

"All disciples in my sect, follow my order. Kill Ji Hao at all costs!"

Chapter 1228: Fame

A big half a year had passed after what happened in Fei Water City.

Ji Hao did some optimization and integration of all powers and resources he had. Based on the right of being in charge as any occasion required, the right that Emperor Shun gave him, and with the power of the golden bridge, Ji Hao had been traveling all over Midland.

Nests of water-kind creatures were flattened one after another, and water-kind armies were slaughtered. Strong, enormous water-kind spirit creatures, even Chaos monsters, were killed by Ji Hao. People worshipping Priest Hua and Priest Mu were forcibly moved out of their villages and sent into flood-control troops. Cities and towns controlled by Priest Hua and Priest Mu were broken one by one, and all their citizens were enslaved.

There were other people like Ji Wu as well, some earls and marquises. They were born in rich families with noble bloodlines, but with the lure of stronger powers and longer lives, they were fooled by disciples of Priest Hua and Priest Mu, and became their disciples as well. The territories of these people were taken down by Ji Hao, and all wealth they had were sent into the public treasury in Pu Ban City, to be used on the flood-control mission.

All people who lived in those territories were enslaved by Ji Hao and sent to the frontline.

No matter what excuse or reason or grievance they had, males, females, kids, old ones, all who had betrayed the spirit of human beings and hindered the flood-control mission when they should be fighting the flood with everyone else were cruelly sent to the frontline by Ji Hao. Even thought among these people, some were old and weak, and some were newborn infants, even through some of them would certainly die in the front line, they were all sent

away to fight.

"Heavy penalties in rough times... I don’t care about my reputation! The future of the humankind is all that matters! Everyone who betrayed the humankind should die!" After Fei Water City, Ji Hao broke Yin Mountain territory. Facing hysterical curses from tens of millions of people, he flew up into the sky, holding the Taiji divine sword, he shouted thunderously. His voice quaked the sky and the earth, and shocked these people in the hearts. No one could ever say a bad word to him after that.

The flood was waving restlessly.

Dead water-kind creatures floated on the water. Large numbers of dead snakes and serpents released toxins before they died, which corroded the corpses in the water and created a horrible odor.

Ji Hao, Man Man, Shaosi, Taisi and the others sat on the nine dragons chariot. Leading thousands of powerful Ji Clan warriors, Yemo Shayi guarded around the chariot. Thousands of thumb-sized, cyan-purple chains were grabbed in Yuan Li’s hands. At the moment, this ape was smirking loudly, while lashing a priest with a dragon-tendon whip thunderously.

Hearing a sudden whip snap, on the other end of a chain, a priest, whose neck was locked by the chain, trembled intensely. The whip lashed on his back and left a three-inches-deep bleeding wound, which was almost splitting his entire body into two.

"Priest Wuna, do your job! Quick! Or, I will beat you to death and then feed you to the rats!" Yuan Li was wagging his head proudly as he laughed to thousands of priests, who were all locked by chains.

Ji Hao sat on the chariot, expressionlessly looking at those priests.

All the way, he broke tens of thousands of cities, towns and villages and over a hundred super-scale territories. At least two to three disciples of Priest Hua and Priest Mu were stationed in each

village, town and city, and tens to a hundred in those super-scale territories.

When those cities, towns, villages, and territories were taken over by Ji Hao, most of those disciples refused to surrender, and were killed. Even their original souls were crushed by the cauldron.

But, around five-thousand of them were controlled by Ji Hao with a special magic.

Ji Hao cursed these people' souls. With the help of Shaosi and Taisi, he used the cruelest dark soul curse on them. They were also poisoned by Yu Mu with three to five thousands of, different types of magic poison. Not only that, Yu Mu had also taken a slight trace of their original souls into the Disease God Streamer, which meant, the lives of these people were in Yu Mu's hands.

Added with the deadly soul curse Ji Hao created with the cauldron, these priests were perfectly controlled by Ji Hao, and were being used by him as tools. Whipped by Yuan Li violently, all of these priests howled in pain. With strong voices, they howled, then incanted a spell and locked their fingers together. Waves of magic power were released from their bodies. Warm mists rose, and lotuses floated in the air. From the warm mist, a rain of golden light fell and landed on the dirty, stinky, water surface.

Ji Hao had just carried out a massacre in this area. Together with Yemo Shayi, with the help of Man Man and Shaosi, added with thousands of Jia Clan warriors, a giant water-kind army was wiped out in this place. Even the weakest one among those Jia Clan warriors was at the level of half-step Divine Magus.

Corpses piled up, and toxins spread rampantly. If no one did anything about it, the surrounding environment would be severely polluted.

Under this flood was fertile land belonging to human beings. Therefore, Ji Hao could never let the toxins seep into the soil,

because that would leave more troubles for the future work.

Priest Hua and Priest Mu' disciples were indeed no good people, but they did have the abilities to 'clean'. The golden light rain fell on the water surface and instantly generated a refreshing aroma. Within a blink of an eye, the dirty and foul water area turned crystal clear, as all dead bodies, toxins, and venoms, became streams of white smoke, puffing up and being blown away by the wind.

When the whole area with a thousand miles in radius was cleaned, a jade token suddenly buzzed in Ji Hao's hand. Glimpsing at the line of characters that emerged on the token, Ji Hao let the golden bridge out of his forehead, transformed into a clear stream of light, and rolled up his friends and himself as he flashed away, immediately turning into a faint light spot on the end of the sky.

In his journey, Ji Hao had also burned countless portraits of Priest Hua and Priest Mu, and looted a giant amount of faith power which should have belonged to Priest Hua and Priest Mu. The faith power was 'unmarked' by the cauldron, then saved in Ji Hao's body. Although he only managed to absorb less than ten percent of it in the past months, his power was already largely improved, and his embryos of Dao were strengthened surprisingly.

Before, he could only take around ten people with the golden bridge. But now, he could take tens of thousands of people flash across the sky. Clearly, he had made a giant progress.

Ten-thousand miles away, a bright clear light descended from the sky. Thousands of priests sighed together, while a raging fire spread in the air. From the fire, the nine dragons chariot flew out.

Down below, in a series of villages on top of a mountain that extended for over a thousand miles, around ten young men with long robes suddenly screamed out loud in panic, "Ji Hao is here! Ji Hao, the slaughterer! Brothers, run!"

Golden beams of light shone to the sky, as these young priests ran

desperately towards the south, at their highest speed.

Far away on the water surface, a small-range flood-control troop was staying silent. Warriors in the troop raised their heads, looking at Ji Hao on the nine dragons chariot, with weird looks.

Ji Hao grinned pretty embarrassedly at those human warriors, then glanced at those fleeing priests, sneered and said, "Where do you think you can run? I am just in need of some slaves to help cleaning battlefields!"

The golden bridge wasn’t activated this time. Instead, the nine dragons chariot flew rapidly to those young priests, raising giant, glowing, fiery clouds.

Chapter 1229: The Infinitude Lotus World

Behind him, a heavy city gate opened on top of the mountain. The leader and a large group of ministers walked out in panic, surrendering the city. The leader of the flood-control troop sighed, then raised his right arm. Under his order, a troop of human warriors marched into the city, captured the citizens, and confiscated a large number of portraits of Priest Hua and Priest Mu.

Wails and cries could hear from everywhere. Over five-thousand priests with necks locked in chains were crying heartbreakingly, their tears shedding like the rain.

They were Qi cultivators. They had been away from all kinds of worldly affairs till now, and were all people of Dao. They had primordial spirits, which meant they would no longer be limited by their physical bodies, and they could all live long lives.

Without suffering any natural or unnatural major disaster, these people could live almost forever. They would be living peaceful and free lives in forests, with their friends and the most beautiful scenery.

Normal human beings were threatened by diseases, wild beasts, and all kinds of natural disasters, along with the non-humankind beings. How could they ever compare with these priests? But sadly, thee poor priests encountered Ji Hao, such a monster, who treated them so cruelly and brutally.

He chained them on the nine dragons chariots like animals. Day after day, these priests were forced to clean battlefields for Ji Hao. Every now and then, their primordial spirits were tortured by the dark curse, while their bodies were suffering from tens of different types of magic poisons.

They couldn’t sleep at night, and they had nothing to eat or drink. Their clothes were ragged, and they were all covered in dirt

and stinky smell. When had these priests ever suffered like this? Even back then when they traveled around the world, helping people to earn the natural reward power, they were treated as saviors; they never suffered. Their fingers never dipped in dirty water, and their feet were never stained by any dust.

Seeing Ji Hao driving the chariot, chasing after their brothers and sisters, these priests cried and screamed, "Run, run, run as fast as you can...Do not let Ji Hao catch you...Ji Hao, you cruel, evil little man...Our Master Shifu will never spare your life...You are doomed, you know it!"

Ji Hao laughed out loud. He looked at these noisy priests coldly, then walked to Yuan Li and took over the dragon-tendon whip from his hands, violently lashing these priests.

He didn’t even want to say a word. Engaging in a verbal fight against these disciples of Priest Hua and Priest Mu? That would be the most meaningless thing to do. To deal with these people, hacking or bashing them directly to death was the most efficient way. Talking? Totally a waste of time.

Ji Hao was much stronger than Yuan Li. The whip landed on these priests and generated shrill howls instantly. The bones of hundreds of priests were lashed broken, which made them fall on the cloud, twitching but unable to move.

The thousands of priests shut their mouths immediately and started hurrying. They were fuelling the cloud with their powers, chasing after their brothers and sisters at their highest speeds. The chains tied around their necks were straightened, such that at first glance, one might even think they were actually pulling the nine dragons chariots forward speedily.

Closer and closer, the nine dragons chariot was less than ten miles away from those fleeing priests. Among those priests, a middle-aged one with long silver break threw a glance back, then suddenly took out a golden and shinning linden leaf magic

talisman. As the middle-aged priest waved the magic talisman, it instantly transformed into a wisp of fiery light.

Dense golden clouds puffed out of the light, transformed into a cloudy boat and carried all those fleeing priests up.

Puff! The tens of meters long golden cloudy boat speeded up and left a long space crack in the sky. The cloudy boat was surprisingly fast, immediately darting over a hundred miles away.

"Hmm?" Ji Hao smiled. A linden leaf from Priest Mu? He had killed or captured tens of thousands of Priest Hua and Priest Mu' disciples, but only a handful of them, who were stationed in super-scale territories, had things like this. Ji Hao didn't think that these disciples stationed in this small town could have treasures like that.

"How generous, Priest Mu! Does every disciple of his have a leaf from him? Isn't he afraid that he might run out of leaves and become bald?" Ji Hao laughed loudly. His voice was thunder-strong, and even those priests on the cloudy boat heard it clearly.

The man with a silver beard turned around, straightened his right forefinger and middle finger, and shouted, "Ji Hao, your reckless behavior has ruined the great plan of our sect. You are a sinner. Even though your Shifu is Priest Yu Yu, your life cannot be saved!"

Breathing deeply, he pointed at the front, and continued shouting, "Don't come any closer! We have built a boundless great formation over there, for no one else but you! Don't come closer, or you die!"

Ji Hao raised his eyebrows and grinned in a very weird way.

Wasn't the man encouraging Ji Hao to follow up? Hearing the man with silver beard and thinking of what he had done in the past few months, all the severe damages he caused to Priest Hua and Priest Mu, Ji Hao believed that a trap was indeed waiting for

him.

"Priest, what are you talking about? How can you possibly frighten me with your silly threat?" Laughed Ji Hao, "The scarier you make it sound, the more I want to see it!"

Narrowing his eyes, Ji Hao murmured in his head, ‘In the previous life, my name was Qing Long, and I would seek revenge for the smallest grievance. How can I be frightened by these small tricks of yours?’

The nine dragons chariot sped up as well. Mr. Crow stood on top of the chariot and expanded to thousands of meters. He spread his wings and cawed with a bright voice. He released a golden raging fire, spreading in all directions. Waves of Gold Crow caws could be heard from the chariot. Led by Mr. Crow, the chariot flew faster and faster, and soon caught up with the cloudy boat.

After all, the boat was only transformed from a linden seed. How could it ever be compared with the chariot?

As the chariot approached the boat bit by bit, Ji Hao turned around and smiled to Man Man and Shaosi as he asked, "There is a trap over there. Are you afraid?"

Man Man and Shaosi were giggling to each other, and didn’t even answer the question. Taisi was in a daze, while Yu Mu and Feng Xing were smiling at Ji Hao; one had a simple and honest look, while the other one had a cunning face. They trusted Ji Hao, and they cared nothing about any traps.

Ji Hao nodded, smiled, then glanced at Yemo Shayi.

Yemo Shayi showed an evil smirk, then transformed into a dark shadow and merged with Ji Hao’s shadow.

Moving forwards for thousands of miles, Ji Hao saw thousands of mountaintops on the water surface, down below. Floating above each mountaintop was a small dark cloud.

This area was strangely quiet, without the wind, rain, or

thunder.

Once the cloudy boat and the chariot flew into this area, thunderous voices came from all directions.

"Ji Hao, today, you will die here!"

Following those rumbling voices, dazzling golden light shone, and soon covered the sky. Meanwhile, on the water surface down below, countless golden lotuses bloomed upon jade-green leaves. Sitting in each lotus with legs crossed was an energetic priest.

"Ji Hao, this infinitude lotus world is created especially for you. Even though you will die, you will die a worthy death."

Chapter 1230: Complicit

On the vast water surface, tens of thousands of golden lotuses bloomed, each with a priest sitting in it.

All these priests seemed to be full of spirit and energy. From the tops of their heads, multicolored mists were rising into the sky, turning into different sized clouds that shielded their bodies. All kinds of treasure floated inside those colorful clouds, surrounded by translucent lotus petals.

Viciously, tauntingly, and proudly, these priests looked at Ji Hao and laughed out loud, instead of activating the formation and attack Ji Hao immediately. Perhaps, on seeing Ji Hao rush into their well-designed trap, they believed that Ji Hao would die for sure.

They laughed at Ji Hao scornfully and looked at him relaxedly, like hunters looking at wild boars in their traps. Some artistic priests even started playing music with all kinds of instruments, or ringing golden bells. The even composed a beautiful, touching melody.

Sound waves swept across the sky, and a nice aroma spread out, with warm clouds drifting all over the sky. The sky was covered in dark clouds, but magically, a light came from all directions and illuminated the entire formation.

High up in the air, dark clouds floating above those mountaintops suddenly changed colors and became golden, silver, and colorful. Standing on each cloud were a group of muscular men.

These men were wearing silk clothes, baring their strong chests. They had red skin and glowing eyes, and surprisingly, their bodies were translucent. Even an ordinary human being could see their internal organs through their translucent skin and muscles. Even their faintly cyan brains were visible, squirming in their heads.

When Ji Hao encountered Sky Devils the first time, he saw a warrior like this, back in the Southern Wasteland. They were not living creatures; instead, they were puppets created by Priest Hua and Priest Mu with their powers and extremely precious materials.

They could move, fight, think, and talk; they were just like human beings, except for the fact that they had no soul. In the end, they were lifeless. With enough materials, countless of them could be produced. To any sect, these puppets could serve as strong guards.

These puppets were holding all kinds of glowing flags, with drawings of legendary creatures, ancient divine gods, or stellar and landform maps. Some flags had strange golden spell symbols sparkling on them, releasing strong power vibrations. With a single glance at those flags with spell symbols, one would feel a heavy pressure, as heavy as a mountain.

Affected by those priests, these puppets laughed out loud as well. Every one of them seemed to laugh louder than the others. Their waves of laugher sounded like thunder, and also like lion roars, striking violently towards Ji Hao and his friends.

A bright red light emitted from the chariot and made it look like a sun, floating in the sky. The sound waves bumped in and stirred ripples on the ‘sun’.

The red light faded layer by layer, but in the meanwhile, new layers of red light were generated. The chariot used to belong to Taiyi, the East Emperor. It was a pre-world spirit treasure, born in the sun along with Taiyi himself. It was unimaginably powerful. How could it ever be shaken by the shouts of a group of puppets?

An old priest with a lotus on his hair bun, wearing a long coarse shirt, trod on a white cloud and slowly rose into the sky. He was holding a sword with the left hand and a small wooden club with the right hand.

He bowed to Ji Hao politely and said with a deep voice, "Ji Hao,

my friend, I am Red Lotus. Nice to meet you."

"Cut the crap. My sword can't wait to taste your blood." Holding the sword with his right hand, Ji Hao gently flicked the sword edge with his left fingers and caused a silvery tinkle. A fierce wave of sword intent drilled into the sky in the form of golden and silver beams, and cut a dark cloud into pieces.

"Our two Master Shifu have a great plan. They want our sect to rise and expand. Therefore, everyone is welcome to join us." said Red Lotus mildly, "My friend, your hands are stained by the blood of our brothers and sisters. You should have been killed. However..."

Before Red Lotus could finish, Ji Hao laughed and interrupted him, "However, the world is merciful. Priest Hua and Priest Mu think that I am a talented one. Therefore, as long as I am willing to join you, do whatever you want me to do just like a dog, betray the humankind and sell the humankind, you can spare my insignificant life today, right?"

Red Lotus opened his mouth, but said nothing, only staring at Ji Hao.

That was indeed what he intended to say, but how come Ji Hao said it before he did?

Looking at Red Lotus's stunned face, then glancing at the other priests sitting in lotuses, Ji Hao boosted up his power and laughed out loud. He was already a half-step Supreme Magus. He had absorbed a drop of Pan Gu's spirit blood, which meant that he had basically built himself a Pan Gu body. Therefore, Ji Hao was now incredibly strong. Earth-shaking waves of laughter were released from his chest rumblingly, like the thunders from the clear sky. Immediately, the sound waves from those puppets were dispelled.

Hearing Ji Hao laughing, a small half of those priests in lotuses trembled, with blood surging out of their eyes, noses, ears and months. Ji Hao injured these priests by simply laughing. With a

soul-level shock, they stared at Ji Hao as if he were a total freak.

The other priests had also been shaking. Their brains were shaken by Ji Hao's voice, which made them feel dizzy. A few among them already had embryos of Dao, and were much more powerful than the others, not to mention that they were also protected by all kinds of powerful treasures. Nevertheless, their faces were especially dark too. How old was Ji Hao, and how long had he been cultivating himself? How could he be so terrifyingly powerful?

This was...completely unreasonable! Unless he was a reincarnation of a fallen devil god, he shouldn't improve so fast!

Ji Hao laughed thunderously again. After disabling all the priests by laughing, he shouted, "How shameless you are! You know that my hands are covered in the blood of your own kind, yet instead of avenging them, you want me to join you?"

"Have you ever thought about your dead brothers and sisters?"

"Do you even know what shame is?"

"Aren't you afraid that one day, when you are killed too, your Shifu, your brothers, and sisters, would try to hold hands with your enemies, instead of avenging you?"

Ji Hao raised his head, pointed at the sky, and yelled, "Priest Hua, Priest Mu, I despise you for what you are doing! Master Shifu? Prehistorical powerful being? Go to hell! You don't deserve to be mentioned in the same breath with my Shifu!"

Hearing Ji Hao, Red Sun's face even turned green in anger. He tremblingly pointed at Ji Hao, yet failed to say a word for a rather long while.

A sneer could be heard from the sky, while a rainbow descended. On the rainbow, eighteen sky devils stood in a line. Some of them had three heads and six arms, some had four faces and eight arms, and some had three feet, four arms, or wings.

Chapter 1231: Kill, Kill, Kill

Eighteen sky devils, all at the level of ‘Zun’.

They were hundreds of meters tall, with different body shapes, yet all wearing brightly glowing pearls and jewels which looked quite resplendent. They silently stood on the rainbow, looking at Ji Hao with eyes shining with five-colored lights. No one knew what they were thinking.

"Outer space sky devils!" Looking at these sky devils, Ji Hao sighed to Red Lotus and said, "Back then in Southern Wasteland, your Master Shifu denied admitting that your sect has anything to do with these sky devils. Look what happened today. You guys are officially working together, aren’t you?"

Red Sun threw a slightly fearful glance at those sky devils, then smiled in a complicated way and responded, "Ji Hao, stop talking nonsense. How can we work together with these sky devils? Don’t you know that, you..."

A sky devil laughed. This sky devil was surrounded by an extremely pure white light, and had a sacred, serious face. He was wearing a long white robe, decorated with all kinds of pearls and gemstones, sparkling splendidly. The snow-white pair of wings slowly spread behind his body as he smiled, "Red Lotus, my friend, we are allies now. You don’t need to deny our relationship anymore, do you? Indeed, he killed some of us...But hatred is not so important in our eyes. We value nothing but actual profits. If your Master Shifu didn’t invite us, we would not have faced this troublesome enemy."

Ji Hao sneered, while Red Lotus’s face turned awfully red as he looked at Ji Hao embarrassedly.

He tried to protect the reputation of his sect by denying the fact that they were not working together with those sky devils. He was trying to tell everyone that these sky devils arrived without

invitation. They came for an opportunity to take revenge on Ji Hao for their dead friends.

Nevertheless, sky devils were unpredictably smart and cunning. Before Red Lotus finished his lie, the truth was exposed by a sky devil. Red Lotus was a thick-skinned one, but still, he blushed in shame.

But soon, the redness faded from his face, as he stared at Ji Hao with his calm, confident face, and yelled with a deep voice, "Ji Hao my friend, you are so impenetrable. If you insist on being like this, don't blame me for..."

'Being merciless', before he said the last few words, Ji Hao gave a resonant roar while the Taiji divine sword held in his right hand suddenly transformed into a golden and a silver beam, and dazzled out. Shockingly, because of the great progress Ji Hao had made, a faint, thin stream of white mist was added around the golden beam, while a sharp dark mist stream emerged, coiling around the silver beam.

The dark and the white mist coiled around each other from time to time. As the golden beam and the silver beam flashed across the sky, a black and white Taiji diagram emerged underneath.

Glowing red clouds rose against the two beams of sword light. Red Lotus pointed out the sword held in his left hand and released a three-hundred-meters long flood dragon, transformed from a red light, roaring towards the two light beams.

Meanwhile, the white jade club held in his right hand flew up into the sky. Followed by a thunderous boom, the club expanded, and turned thousands of meters long and hundreds of meters thick, bashing down towards the nine dragons chariot.

"Brother Red Lotus, amazing!" Tens of thousands of priests sitting in lotuses on the water surface all cheered out, and even applauded, especially those who vomited blood under the pressure caused by Ji Hao's laughter. Seeing the proud grins on their faces,

one might believe that Red Lotus had already defeated Ji Hao.

"So stupid!" Standing behind Ji Hao, Man Man gave a long sigh. "Abba said that in battles, if you are at an advantage, you should destroy your enemies as soon as possible. Only then you win. These idiots, they built such a great formation, yet they didn't activate it. Are those people all here to watch a show?"

Ji Hao smilingly sent up the Taiji Universe mirror and released a clear light. Hearing an ear-piercing noise, the space was cracked, and a three-hundred-meters-wide, transparent path was created.

Ahead of the two sword light beams, the clear light shone on the red cloud around Red Lotus's body, generating a sizzling noise. The red cloud disappeared immediately under the clear light. Before Red Lotus could make any other reaction, the two light beams dazzled straight in through the transparent path and landed fiercely on Red Lotus's body.

Red Lotus screamed. A giant red lotus flew out of his body and defended against the sword lights with layers of lotuses.

The black and white, giant Taiji diagram surrounded the red lotus and spun, slowly like a milestone. The lotus withered, and the light beams penetrated Red Lotus's chest.

"Ouch!" Red Lotus burst with a shrill howl while the two light beams drilled into his chest. The golden one brought out a burning stream of blood from his body, and the silver one sent out a sparkling cold light.

The power of the sun burned everything, while the extremely negative power froze everything. Both these types of power erupted inside Red Lotus's body simultaneously. At the moment, he was wrapped in both the golden fire and the cold silver light. Extreme heat and extreme cold clashed inside his body. Consequently, his body was suddenly covered in cracks.

"Activate the formation, kill this monster!" A stream of red light

rose from Red Lotus's collapsing body. That was an eight-feet tall, entirely red and glowing embryo of Dao, which looked like a red jade statue.

Before Red Lotus and his brothers and sisters could flee, Yu Mu waved the Disease God Streamer from behind Ji Hao. Thousands of differently sized lotuses were released along with a dense poisonous cloud, enveloping Red Lotus's embryo of Dao. The nightmare-like screams never ended, while the poisonous cloud dragged the embryo of Dao back into the streamer.

The Disease God streamer was the spirit treasure of the ancient Disease God. It was a magic treasure, naturally crafted in the Chaos, and was unimaginably powerful. Red Lotus didn't have a powerful treasure to defend himself. How could he ever survive?

The giant white jade club fell down from the sky. Conveniently, Ji Hao threw out the Pan Gu bell. The bell expanded to thousands of meters tall, right above the tens of thousands of stunned priests down below.

The giant white jade club rang the bell. The club was a spirit treasure gifted by Priest Hua and Priest Mu, and was considerably powerful. As it fell, an earth-shaking bell ring was successfully generated.

The sound wave swept across thousands of miles in radius, shattering all the golden lotuses and leaves on the water surface, and throwing all the priests into the water. In the water, they vomited blood.

"Activate the formation!" A familiar voice came these priests. With his erect eye, Ji Hao threw down a glance, and saw Priest Corpse's twitching face.

Ji Hao laughed again. He took out all thunder bombs and magic talismans that he didn't use in the life and death game in Pan Xi world. Powerful or not, no matter what function they had, Ji Hao threw everything down towards those priests in the water.

All of a sudden, he saw nothing but warm clouds around him, but not a single priest. Hazy lotuses drifted in clouds, as a dreadfully strong force landed on the nine dragons chariot. Ji Hao could still control the chariot, but the chariot could only move slowly forward, no faster than even a turtle.

Hearing a bright roar, countless puppets with all kinds of weapons marched over.

"My friends, kill as much as you want...Try to destroy every last one of them!"

Holding the Taiji divine sword, Ji Hao flicked his wrist and sent out thousands of sharp sword light beams.

Chapter 1232: All Worlds

Were they confident?

Arrogant maybe!

When Red Lotus and Ji Hao were talking, those tens of thousands of disciples of Priest Hua and Priest Mu didn't activate the formation. Instead, they were watching, laughing, and being proud.

Therefore, when Ji Hao threw down all those thunder bombs and magic talismans, the formation was just activated. In a warm light, the space began folding and twisting intensely. The space with a radius of tens of thousands of miles was compressed into a small sphere, but the space as tiny as a grain of dust was expanded, and turned into a tens of miles long distance.

The time was disturbed as well. Sometimes, the time was fast, but sometimes, it was frozen. In some areas in the great formation, a breath could be as long as ten-thousand years, but in some areas, the time was almost stopped.

Incalculable faults were caused by the disturbance of time and space. Every fault became a beautiful lotus. Countless lotuses gathered together, which was the true secret about this infinitude lotus world. No one could break out from this great formation unless he or she was as powerful as worlds creators like Saint Pan Gu, or the Masters of a large sect.

Nevertheless, these priests were way too confident or arrogant. They activated the formation, but it was already too late.

Red Lotus was killed by Ji Hao, and even his embryo of Dao was devoured by the Disease God streamer. After that, they activated the formation in a hurry. When the formation was fully activated, all thunder bombs and magic talismans exploded.

Those thunder bombs and magic talismans were made by Priest

Dachi himself. Every single bomb was powerful enough to shatter the sky, while every magic talisman could replay the prehistorical Chaos.

Along with muffled thunderous booms, all lotuses withered within the warm light and clouds. The priests leaned out their upper bodies from the warm light, seeming to be frightened to death, then suddenly disappeared.

From the formation, Priest Corpse's hysterical voice could be heard, "Ji Hao! These are Priest Dachi's works...How cruel you are!"

A buzzing noise lingered in the air, while millions of lotuses bloomed and then withered.

Standing on golden clouds, those puppets waved large flags as quickly as they could to draw star powers into the infinitude world of lotus. No one knew how this formation worked, but strangely, some thunder bombs and magic talismans directly flew out from around these puppets.

A series of boom was generated, while a large number of puppet were torn into pieces. Crystal-like body parts flew all over the sky. Many large flags were broken. Therefore, those starlight streams pouring down were instantly dimmed.

No one knew what exactly had been happening. But judging from Priest Corpse's hoarse, fury voice, this so-called infinitude lotus world suffered great damage from those thunder bombs and magic talismans. Standing on the chariot, Ji Hao even sensed a faint scent of blood.

The strong force was still suppressing the chariot. The great formation was quaking violently, and so was the force. The nine dragons chariot was shaking slightly as well. In the front, those priests chained on the chariot heard the screams of their brothers and sisters, and all cried out, struggling and releasing their powers, shaking the chariot even harder. Moreover, the fiery clouds

around the chariot even started burning.

Countless puppets rushed over to Ji Hao and his friends, waving all kinds of weapons. Ji Hao’s sword lights dazzled across the air and landed on these puppets violently. Clear popping noises could be heard without an end, as large groups of puppet were shredded by the sword lights.

"Priest Corpse, is this all your infinitude lotus world can do?" Wielding the sword, wherever Ji Hao reached, body parts of those puppets flew in the sky. He sneered.

"Ji Hao, don’t you dare!" Priest Corpse sounded enraged. With a dry voice, he screamed, "You! You! You killed our people with Priest Dachi’s thunder bombs and talismans...You will die today! You will!"

Layers of warm cloud blocked Ji Hao’s sight. Somewhere Ji Hao couldn’t see, Priest Corpse and a group of his brothers and sisters, who were all at his level, had been looking at their dead brothers and sisters with twitching faces.

Priest Hua had given his order. He had ordered his disciples to kill Ji Hao at all costs.

Following that order, a few disciples gathered all available ones in Midland. Nearly eighty-thousand well-cultivated priests built this infinitude lotus world together.

Nevertheless, Ji Hao didn’t do what they expected. He didn’t fight, neither did he defend with any other formation. Instead, he directly threw out a big handful of thunder bombs and talismans, all made by Priest Dachi himself.

These disciples of Priest Hua and Priest Mu didn’t manage to react timely. As a result, nearly eight thousands of them were killed, and twenty to thirty thousand had their arms and legs broken. By now, these poor ones were screaming and crying, swallowing magic pills and spraying ointments on their wounds,

waiting for their broken limbs to grow back.

Priest Corpse and the group of relatively stronger ones felt their hearts aching when they looked at the dead and injured ones. Priest Hua and Priest Mu were not as picky as Yu Yu and his brothers when selecting disciples. Basically, every ‘lucky one’ could become their disciple. But with a single strike of Ji Hao, so many disciples were killed...How should they explain this to their two Master Shifu?

"Brother Gold Water, why didn’t you activate the ‘all worlds monument’ given by Master Shifu?’ Priest Corpse and the other few encircled a man angrily, whose body was faintly glowing with a golden light and rippling like water.

Since this had already happened, and was totally inexplicable, they should find someone to bear the blame!

The ‘all worlds monument’ was a pre-world treasure which could contain space, and even worlds. Just now, if the man had activated the ‘all worlds monument’ timely, the power of the formation would rise by thousands of times. Also, no matter how powerful those thunder bombs and magic talismans were, with the ‘all worlds monument’, they could be able to send out all disciples nearby before those bombs and talismans went off.

The ‘all worlds monument’ wasn’t activated timely, which meant Priest Gold Water was the one to blame for all damages they suffered!

Gold Water also responded angrily, "Are you saying that it was my fault? Didn’t you all agree to let Red Lotus to try to persuade that Ji Hao kid just now? Otherwise, I would have fully activated the formation long ago! How would I ever let that Ji Hao kid take any advantage?"

They yelled at each other for a while, but no one won. They argued for a longer while, then one of them suddenly said, "Stop this! Just activate the ‘all worlds monument’ now! Ji Hao kid is

cruel and evil. He has already damaged tens of thousands of puppets...How many did we bring in total?"

The group of priest raised their heads, all stunned. Around the nine dragons chariot, those puppets had been rushing up wave after wave like tidewater. Ji Hao flicked his wrists and sent out the sword lights, shredding countless puppets at a time. Body parts of puppets floated around the chariot in the burning fiery clouds. Man Man was holding a small string bag, collecting these twitching body parts. These puppets were made from top-grade materials. Throwing these body parts back into the melting pot, one could make nice pieces.

Watching this, Gold Water dared not to waste a second. He hurriedly raised his arms and sent a three-foot-square bronze board up into the sky, coiled in purple mist.

The infinitude lotus worlds slightly vibrated, while countless different sized doors suddenly appeared around the nine dragons chariot.

Smoke puffed out from each door, from inside which, waves of brightly glowing lotuses flew out. The smoke covered everything else, and soon, nothing but these doors remained visible.

Chapter 1233: Divine Flame Bead

The all worlds monument was a pre-world supreme treasure that could disorder the space and turn the universe upside down.

Within the warm clouds, countless doors were faintly visible. Every door led to a lotus world created by the monument itself, and every world was dangerous. More importantly, whichever door one chose to walk in, one would always be under the monument's control.

This was an exit-less maze. Once one fell into this maze, his life would be decided by whoever was controlling the monument.

Ji Hao stopped the chariot, silently observing the surrounding area. Once the all worlds monument was activated, the pressure he sensed became hundreds of times greater. The warm light grew brighter, with lotuses blooming in it. From each lotus, a golden beam of light was darting up, within which was a muscular man or a beautiful girl.

Those muscular men roared like beasts, vibrating the nine dragons chariot. Those flying beautiful girls were holding all kinds of instruments, dancing and playing, releasing waves of soul-shaking, magical power. Everyone who saw these girls would feel dizzy, as if even their soul was being drawn away by them.

Slight voices came from the air and sounded like snowflakes landing on the roof, flower buds blooming in the spring, or devout believers asking the sky about the secret of the universe, late at night, with low voices. One would feel that his heart was hanging on a thin thread, and through the thread, one could hear a soft, gentle, beautiful melody.

One wouldn't be able to help oneself and want to listen to the melody; one would be forced to do so.

Listening carefully, one would hear nothing, nothing real.

Therefore, an intense curiosity would be triggered. The deepest desire buried in one's heart would be embalmed, burning and controlling the primordial spirit with a strong, evil power, until one's bones, blood and flesh all burned out. When one woke up, his cultivation would be gone, and the primordial spirit and embryos of Dao would be dead.

From Ying Zun's memories, Ji Hao found a sky devil magic similar to what he was looking at right now. This was called 'primordial-spirit-devouring devil sound', the most often used one. With this magic, sky devils could hurt their targets easily, who wouldn't even realize what happened. This was a cruel, and especially evil magic.

"Duo!" Raising both hands in a multicolored cloud, Ji Hao clapped them loudly and cast a spell with a low voice. In the air, the faintly audible voice started fading. With the magic he learned from Ying Zun's memory, Ji Hao interfered with the 'primordial-spirit-devouring devil sound' pretty seriously.

Yuan Li was almost hunted by the 'primordial-spirit-devouring devil sound'. In panic, he burst with a shout, raised his whip, and madly lashed on those chained priests. He seemed to be waking up from a nightmare, as he was covered in cold sweat, with his primordial spirit soaked in a great fear. Therefore, he didn't restrain his power when lashing those poor priests. Those priests cried in pain and struggled for their lives on fiery clouds, with broken bones.

"Ji Hao, you will die today!" Priest Corpse's bright voice came from all directions, "You are trapped in our infinite lotus world. You have no chance to run. Why don't you kneel and surrender? What are you waiting for?"

Gold Water's voice could also be heard, "Ji Hao my friend, if you surrender, we will treat you well as your brothers. Just hand out all treasures you have. You killed so many of our brothers and sisters, so hand out your treasures, and we will accept your

apology."

Ji Hao sighed. ‘Can Priest Mu and Priest Mu’ disciples ever have a bigger goal? Why do they never forget about my treasures?’ thought Ji Hao.

But thinking of Priest Hua’s greedily glowing eyes when he saw any treasure, Ji Hao realized that he couldn’t blame those disciples for that. After all, their two Master Shifu never had a bigger goal either.

"Do whatever you can. Let’s me see what Priest Hua and Priest Mu’ disciples can do. Don’t use those nasty sky devil magic and humiliate your Master Shifu for nothing."

With the Pan Gu bell floating above his head, Ji Hao held the sword, looking at the boundless warm light and clouds around him as he laughed aloud, "Why are you fighting with sky devil magics? Aren’t you ashamed?"

Hissing laughter echoed in all directions. The eighteen sky devils were hiding in unknown places and laughing. They sounded enchanting, as every chuckle they made could shake your primordial spirit and take away one’s life-force.

Ji Hao gave a deep shout and defended against the laughter of those sky devil with the same magic.

"My friends, please hold for a second. We cannot let a kid despise us. My brothers, together, let’s show this kid what we can do."

Following a shout of Priest Corpse, from all the surrounding doors, three-hundred and sixty doors glowed, and from each of those, nine priests walked out, holding longswords. They bowed to Ji Hao, and each launched a hack forward, then turned around and disappeared in those doors.

The all worlds monument quaked slightly, and fiery clouds around the chariot exploded all of the sudden. The chariot was shaking slightly, but all of a sudden, thousands of sharp sword

lights penetrated the space, and even the defense of the chariot, merging into a lotus while descending towards Ji Hao and his friends.

Ji Hao was stunned. Could the all worlds monument actually break the defense of the nine dragons chariot?

Even though Ji Hao wasn't powerful enough to fully release the chariot's power, the all worlds monument held in Gold Water's hand was way too powerful! No wonder these disciples of Priest Hua and Preist Mu were so confident about killing Ji Hao.

The sword light lotus dazzled down, as Ji Hao burst with a roar and prepared to defend against it with the Pan Gu bell. But before him, Man Man made her move.

Sixty-four human-head sized, purple-red beads flew out of Man Man's sleeve, along with a sky-devouring fire. The fire condensed into a flaming door above the heads of Man Man and her friends. The door was embossed with dragons and phoenixes, and all kinds of legendary creatures with a nature of fire.

"Man Man, are those given by the man your Abba sent you the last time?" Ji Hao surprisingly raised his eyebrows. Days ago, Zhu Rong unexpectedly sent a man to Man Man, who brought her a lot of things. Ji Hao asked because he never saw Man Man using these purple-red beads before.

The flaming door opened, and a ferocious beast head roared out, widely opening its jaws and biting on the sword light lotus. The lotus clanged resoundingly, then collapsed into sword light beams as it fell into the flaming door. Those sword light beams were no longer fierce and lethal.

"Yeah, yeah, those are sky flaming beads sent from my Abba. Interesting, interesting!" Man Man laughed and waved her hand, sending the sixty-four beads to a door.

"Man Man, be careful!" Ji Hao failed to stop her. Man Man sent

out those beads, then saw the door sparkle with a strange light. All the sixty-six beads flew in, but nothing happened after that.

"Hehe, nice treasures! Thank you, my dear friend. In the future, our brothers and sisters will certainly use these well!" Priest Corpse's laughter came from a long distance away. He couldn't even hide his delight.

Ji Hao's frowned. Looking at Man Man's badly shocked little face, he released a clear stream of light from his erect eye.

Chapter 1234: The Golden Bridge Breaks It

Those doors created by the all worlds monument had been swiftly switching positions. Countless doors flew around Ji Hao and his friends, leaving shreds of afterimages in the air, silently creating a dazzling golden glow.

From time to time, a large group of priest would walk out from those doors and release sword light beams, thunder-flames, or other attacks. Some threw out all kinds of treasures or weapons to attack Ji Hao and his friends. The space seemed to collapse, and Ji Hao felt like he was in the middle of a black hole, with bright light streams pouring down straight on his face.

The nine dragons chariot was shaking intensely. Waves of fiery clouds surged out and turned into strong defenses that shielded the whole chariot. Sometimes, the chariot suppressed the monument. Attacks launched by those priests failed to break the chariot's defense, and ended up bumping on the fiery clouds, blasting into a heavy light rain while causing thunderous booms.

Sometimes, the monument suppressed the chariot. All weird kinds of attack struck direct onto the chariot, towards Ji Hao and his friends. Ji Hao let the Pan Gu bell release Chaos power streams to protect everyone. Heavy strikes landed on the bell and generated thunderous noises, shattering all surrounding warm clouds.

Jia Clan warriors guarding around the chariot helplessly watched all this happen. Jia Clan warriors were good at close combat, but knew nothing about all kinds of magics. They had no clue about such a giant-scale formation.

The non-humankind invaded Pan Gu world. Xiu Clan people were responsible for dealing with all kinds of formation, and these Jia Clan warriors didn't need to use their brains at all. At the moment, facing the infinitude lotus world and the all worlds

monument, these Jia Clan warriors were almost driven crazy.

Feng Xing, Yu Mu, Shaosi, Taisi, and Man Man could do nothing either. Those priests kept flashing out of those random doors. They attacked swiftly and then disappeared immediately, which left no chance for anyone to strike back.

Feng Xing pulled open his bow and released over ten-thousand arrows at one time. Those arrows swished out, yet the space was twisted by the monument, which made his arrows fly windingly. He aimed at those priests, yet before they could touch them, they had already disappeared again in those doors.

Lotuses rose from the ground. Strong forces lingered on those arrows. Feng Xing watched those powerful arrows be coiled in colorful light streams and slowly shredded into pieces and bits.

Seeing Feng Xing's arrows all ground up, Yu Mu chuckled, patted on his large belly, and said, "Don't waste arrows. Those are all money...Let me try!"

With a dark face, Feng Xing dropped the bow, crossed his arms over his chest, and looked at Yu Mu. Yu Mu gave a glance at the right-front. Tens of doors in that direction opened. A large group of priest rushed out together, and activated a transparent, colorful glass bottle. It released thousands of fist-sized crops of 'three light divine water'. Those water drops transformed into thunderbolts, striking towards Ji Hao and his friends.

'Three light divine water' was the magical product condensed from the essence lights of all stars in the sky. It was especially heavy, and almost as powerful as the essence of Yin.

The thunderbolts transformed from the three light divine water was soft yet strong, and could hurt people without a sign. This kind of a thunderbolt would hurt the souls and primordial spirits instead of physical bodies. It was negative yet not evil; it was a descending, strong natural power, that could highly suppress all kinds of evils.

Thousands of bolts of splendidly colorful thunder struck on the chariot and generated a series of popping noise. Dense fiery clouds around the chariot shattered, while hundreds of Jia Clan warriors around the chariot were hit by the explosive force and forced to vomit blood. Their two pairs of large eyes were almost shaken out of their eye sockets.

"Good treasure!" After years of traveling and fighting with Ji Hao, Feng Xing and Yu Mu had grown their ability to recognize great treasures. Seeing that giant glass bottle and so much three light divine water, their eyes were even glowing.

Without saying a word, Yu Mu raised the Disease God streamer and released a wave of gray mist containing countless tiny locusts, silently approaching those priests who had been controlling that bottle joint-handedly.

Those priests attempted to turn around and run immediately back into those doors once they released a wave of thunderbolt. However, the bottle was way too heavy, and obviously, they couldn’t control it freely. They had to combine their powers to activate the bottle. Therefore, they were unavoidably slowed down. But those locusts flew out from the Disease God streamer were as fast as lightning. Along with a barely sensible toxic mist, these locusts soon approached those priests.

But when those locusts were only around thirty meters away from those priests, a door suddenly showed up before them, and the large group of locusts flew in and disappeared.

Those priests shouted out together, boosted up their powers, and dragged that giant bottle into the door behind them.

"Eh!" Yu Mu showed a shocked look on his chubby, round face. He stared where those locusts disappeared, and couldn’t say a word for a long while.

Shaosi knitted her eyebrows and threw a violent elbow strike on Taisi’s back, who was still in a daze.

All of a sudden, Taisi was dragged out of some ‘inexplicable state’. Wiping the saliva from his mouth corners, he looked around confusedly, said, "Eh? Are we taking the beating? No, this can’t be. No one can bully us!"

Taisi pulled out a white bone wand and started a weird dance on the chariot. While dancing like twitching, he incanted an ancient and mysterious spell.

Behind him, a faintly sensible power vibration spread. Meanwhile, a dark, hazy shadow emerged. Even by taking a quick, unnecessary glance at that shadow, one might feel that one was doomed. The shadow glanced around, then raised his arms, and sent an invisible curse power to those doors.

A deep, long howl descended from the sky. Nine strangely shaped sky devils silently showed up and incanted a spell together towards the sky. Seven-colored light streams poured down from the sky. Around the chariot, golden datura flowers bloomed.

The pistils of these flowers had been spinning swiftly. Tremendous forces firmly blocked the curse power released by the dark shadow and pulled it back, attempting to drag it into those flowers.

Taisi’s face suddenly turned pale. He screamed out shrilly, then a sharp beam of light flashed across the eyes of the shadow behind him. Deep, thunderous roars came from every direction, while the curse power was raised by one thousand percent.

The nine sky devil quivered; they were shaken, and almost fell down from the sky. Within a bright glow, the other nine sky devils showed up one after another, combined their powers with their friends, and generated more datura flowers, fighting against the curse power.

Datura flowers bloomed suddenly, then withered suddenly. At the same time, all the eighteen sky devils and the dark shadow behind Taisi had been shaking intensely.

Behind Taisi was Si Ming, a fallen devil god. With his slight trace of original soul that remained in the world, he created a shadowy body for himself and shielded Taisi and friends from a whole eighteen sky devils at the level of ‘Zun’!

Ji Hao released that clear light again from his erect eye. When Feng Xing, Yu Mu, and Taisi fought against the infinitude lotus world, he activated the golden bridge, which shone the entire space with the clear light, and had been darting in and out of those doors.

"I found you! All worlds monument, big deal?" Ji Hao laughed, while the golden bridge dazzled with a bright light, wrapped up the chariot, and suddenly disappeared.

The next moment, the chariot reappeared on a giant lotus.

Standing before the chariot were Priest Corpse, Gold Water, and a few others.

Chapter 1235 - Priest Corpse Disintegrates

A hundred-miles wide golden lotus had been emitting a warm and comforting light.

Gathered in the middle of the lotus were Priest Corpse, Gold Water, and around twenty other priests, who were all at the same level. With glowing eyes, they looked at the sixty-four flaming beads floating in the air.

Waves of heat had been spreading from those human-head-sized beads. Priest Corpse and his brothers and sisters gathered in here were all powerful ones, but even they couldn’t stand the heat, and had to cast a cooling spell or activate fire-proof treasures to protect themselves.

The all worlds monument floated above those beads. If the monument wasn’t there to suppress those beads, they would have cracked the space and escaped long ago. But still, those flaming beads had been constantly releasing dazzling fiery light beams, stirring up large ripples in from the air, and even on the surface of the monument.

"Such powerful treasures are indeed rare to see!" Looking at those beads, Priest Corpse’s eyes even turned greedily green.

"Brother, you were an ancient corpse when you started your cultivation. Treasures with pure positive powers like these are naturally against you." Gold Water looked at Priest Corpse, said seriously, "These..."

"You’re right, brother Gold Water." Another priest interrupted him smilingly. This priest was wearing a long coarse shirt, with a dark wood hairpin stuck in his hair bun. The dark wood hairpin was inlaid with a thumb-sized, fire-red gemstone. "These precious beads have a purely positive power. They are powerful treasures of fire. These should belong to our young brother, Priest Flame."

Priest Flame hurriedly bowed to all his brothers and sisters and said bitterly, "Brothers, sisters, you know me. I was a strand of spirit flame in the Chaos. Luckily, I learned about the great Dao. However, I wasn't born strong. I have indeed managed to transform into a human shape, but I am like a tree without a root, water without a source. I still need a physical body, a real body!"

Swallowing his saliva, Priest Flame looked at those flaming beads pitifully and said, "I can plant my true spirit in these precious beads and turn these into a physical body of mine. Then, I will finally have a solid foundation for my cultivation!"

Some priests, including Priest Corpse, sneered but remained silent.

A while later, Priest Corpse said in a dry voice, "Priest Flame, even you know that you are not strong enough. Since you are not strong enough, these precious beads would be misused in your hands, wouldn't they? Why don't you let me turn these into a drought zombie spirit bead? I have the confidence to add another supreme treasure to the world!"

The faces of the other priests all twitched. Priest Corpse was good at making all weird kinds of zombie and puppet, but no one thought that he would be powerful enough to make legendary ones like a drought zombie.

If he truly turned these flaming beads into a drought zombie spirit bead...that would be his very own treasure, that no one but himself could activate and control. Even if he did turn these beads into another supreme treasure, would that have anything to do with any of the others?

Glancing at each other, Gold Water shouted out first. Following him, a quarrel was started. Everyone wanted these flaming beads, wanting to turn these beads into an important, spirit treasure.

For these beads, Gold Water even forgot to keep an eye on the all worlds monument. No one cared what exactly was happening in

the infinitude lotus world now. This great formation built by the eighteen sky devils and themselves was greatly powerful anyway, and Ji Hao and his friends could never run away from it.

Compared with killing Ji Hao, these highly valuable flaming beads right before their eyes were obviously more important.

While arguing, a five-colored glow flashed in. A sky devil with an eagle head and a human body and six pairs of wings showed up above the group of priests and yelled with a deep, grim voice, "What are you doing? That kid has already..."

With the power of the all worlds monument, this sky devil directly showed up on the golden lotus, which was the core and the controller of the entire great formation.

Meanwhile, Ji Hao activated the golden bridge and dazzled across the space. He broke all magic seals with the golden bridge's magical power and instantly darted through countless doors with the giant nine dragons chariot and over ten-thousand people, reaching the golden lotus as well.

Ji Hao was a second later than the winged sky devil. Before the sky devil finished his sentence, rumbling fiery clouds descended, and the giant chariot suddenly appeared from a bright clear light, falling like a mountain.

Mr. Crow stood on top of the chariot, spread his wings, and cawed towards the sky. The chariot sensed Mr. Crow's pure Gold Crow bloodline and instantly dazzled with a blinding golden light. It raised a sky-burning fire that stirred up scorching hot airstreams, roaring towards the group of priests.

"Ji Hao! How can you be in here?!" Priest Corpse, Priest Flame, Gold Water, and all the others screamed out loud in shock. Their faces were twisted, their smiles frozen. They stared at Ji Hao, stunned, unable to believe their own eyes.

Tens of strong spirit powers reached to the chariot. Priest Corpse

and the other priests dared not to believe their own eyes. Therefore, they released their spirit powers to see if they had fallen into some kind of high-level illusion.

Ji Hao sneered closed his eyes. His left eye turned golden, and right eye turned silver. Then, he opened his erect eye. In that eye, a golden light and a silver light wove into a Taiji diagram. Following a buzzing noise and golden, silver lights, an especially sharp spirit power had already reached forward.

He swallowed the original souls of Ying Zun and the other four ‘Zun’-level sky devils in a row. Although he hadn’t managed to absorb all the five originals souls, his embryos of Dao and primordial spirit had improved amazingly. His understanding of the great Dao of sun and the great Dao of Yin had now reached a much higher level.

His spirit power was highly concentrated now, looking like crystal. Wave after wave, his golden and silver spirit power spread out like sharp blades. The golden spirit power was burning hot, while the silver spirit power was freezing cold. The golden and silver spirit power flashed out, bumping against the spirit powers of Priest Corpse and the other priests

In his spiritual space, in the core area of this red sun primordial spirit, which was now half in size, the silhouette of a longsword flashed across.

A thought popped up in Ji Hao’s mind. He opened his erect eye, and his spirit power began spiraling, merging into thousands of meters long, silver and golden sword, that looked exactly like the Taiji divine sword.

Once again, Ji Hao combined the moves of sky-opening, earth-splitting, everything-grow and everything-perish. The enormous long sword hacked down along with a frigid beam of light, generating a shrill howl. Blood spurted out of the eyes of all priests as they trembled and drew back as quickly as they could.

Those priests felt that their embryos and Dao and primordial spirits had been hacked into pieces by Ji Hao. Dark, gray, or colorful mist puffed out from their heads. The relatively weaker ones, such as Priest Flame, had already sat on the ground, twitching and howling, seeming to be completely crazy.

"The sword of wisdom will kill the evil in your hearts." murmured Ji Hao, "This sword of mine is created for the evils, desires, and all the distracting thoughts in your hearts. Call it ‘heart-examining sword’!"

Before Priest Corpse and the others could catch their own breaths, Ji Hao wielded the Taiji divine sword and released a sharp beam of sword light, sweeping across the entire area. Priest Corpse and Gold Water screamed out loud while their heads flew up into the sky. Two bleeding embryos of Dao darted out of their broken necks.

Chapter 1236 - Transmigration

"I hate you!" Priest Corpse and Gold Water's embryos of Dao screamed in the air. Below the two embryos of Dao, their bodies were shattering, melted by the sun power and the extremely negative power.

Their hatred to Ji Hao would never fade, even until the end of the world.

They cultivated their bodies for countless centuries, with no efforts spared. Their bodies were the foundations of their cultivations. With those bodies, they survived countless major natural trials, ever since the prehistorical era. Every inch of those bodies was built with their immeasurably great efforts. However, Ji Hao destroyed their bodies.

Their embryos of Dao remained existing, which meant their cultivation was still there. Just now, they were laughing at Priest Flame, but at the moment, they were just like him. They had lost their body, the foundations of their cultivations. In the future, it would be almost impossible for these two embryos of Dao to make any progress.

"Ji Hao! How cruel you are!" Priest Corpse's embryo of Dao screamed hoarsely. Coiling in a dark mist, a skinny silhouette reached out a pair of long and thin arms towards Ji Hao.

"Brother, be careful!" All these years, these priests had been intriguing against each other for benefits, and they were used to it. But now, seeing Priest Corpse putting up a desperate fight against Ji Hao, the group of priests couldn't help but shout out loud. Their primordial spirits were all injured seriously too.

Priest Corpse was powerful because of his physical body. Without that body, Priest Corpse was no longer outstanding among his peers. On the contrary, he was even weaker than some of the others. Fighting a life-risking battle against Ji Hao with his embryo

of Dao, but without a physical body to shield it? This was just like hitting a steel blade with a piece of tofu, completely suicidal.

Priest Corpse was woken up by his brothers and sisters. He attempted to draw back, but it was already too late.

Ji Hao laughed out loud. His eyes shone with golden and silver lights while he growled, "Since you are already here, don't go. Priest Corpse, you've lived long enough."

Countless thoughts flashed through Ji Hao's mind. Ji Hao thought of his first encounter with Priest Corpse, his first battle against him, and all troubles this guy had caused him.

Laughing again, Ji Hao's erect eye sparkled. Another enormous sword condensed from his spirit power darted out. Priest Corpse's embryo of Dao fled fast, yet he could never be faster than a thought of Ji Hao.

The sun power and the extremely negative power merged together. The four moves were combined again, and the tremendous, dazzling sword descended. It seemed to cleave all impediments, even seemed to create a whole new world.

Along with a heartbreaking scream, Priest Corpse's embryo of Dao was chopped open. Sparkling dark mist rose from his broken embryo of Dao. Golden and silver flame lingered on that embryo of Dao, burning out all evil thoughts, desires, and darkness hiding in his soul.

In the air, nothing but Priest Corpse's original soul remained, glowing brightly.

Pointed his finger out, Ji Hao prepared to perish that original soul for good. But all of a sudden, a dazzling golden light shone from Priest Corpse's burning body, releasing a golden linden leaf magic talisman that wrapped up Priest Corpse's original soul and rose straight into the sky.

A thin crack appeared in the sky. From the crack, a strange power

drilled in. Priest Corpse's original soul trembled in the golden light, then was dragged into the crack.

"That is..." Gold Water's embryo of Dao quivered and murmured. His translucent face suddenly turned extremely dark.

"That is...The Netherworld, the place of transmigration." Ji Hao raised his eyebrows, recognizing that strange power. Priest Corpse's embryo of Dao and primordial spirit were both destroyed by Ji Hao, but his original soul was sent to the place of transmigration!

The magic talisman flew out from Priest Corpse's body was made from a linden leaf from Priest Mu himself. Priest Mu was an unimaginably powerful one, and so was his linden leaf magic talisman. Protected by that talisman, Ji Hao should not have been able to kill Priest Corpse easily.

But Ji Hao did it, easily indeed. The linden leaf magic talisman activated itself suddenly only when Priest Corpse's embryo of Dao was destroyed and Ji Hao intended to kill his original soul. Protected by the talisman, Priest Corpse's original soul was sent to the place of transmigration.

"Master Shifu!"

"Your Master Shifu wants you to reincarnate, to live and cultivate again!" Absorbing the powers from the original souls of five 'Zun'-level sky devils, Ji Hao's mind was never clearer. Immediately, he figured this out.

Priest Mu let Ji Hao kill Priest Corpse intentionally, then protected his original soul and sent it into the place of transmigration. After that, Priest Corpse would reincarnate. Under the protection of the linden leaf magic talisman, he would certainly become a human being. Once Priest Corpse attained his second life, Priest Mu would take him as a disciple again. With his previous-life cultivation, it wouldn't take too long for him to regain his powers.

Then, Priest Corpse would be a human being.

Human beings were chosen by the world. They were the owners of the natural fortune. A human disciple, a powerful human disciple, would bring the sect a much greater fortune and much more benefits than Priest Corpse, a Chaos monster, could ever do.

Ji Hao immediately figured it out — If Priest Corpse and his brothers were powerful enough to survive, it would be good; after all, they were powerful beings and were highly helpful for the sect. But if they were killed, Priest Hua and Priest Mu would let them die, as long as their original souls can be sent to the place of transmigration. Thus, a few years later, Priest Hua and Priest Mu would have a large batch of elite disciples under their command, and those disciples would all be pure-blood human beings who could benefit the sect even more.

"Hehe, hehe, hehe!" Holding the Taiji divine sword, Ji Hao looked at Gold Water, and laughed coldly.

Obviously, Gold Water had figured it out as well. With a twisted face, he looked at the sky and burst with a hoarse roar, then bumped into Ji Hao.

Without hesitation, Ji Hao wielded his left hand and released a Yu Yu divine thunderbolt. The thunderbolt struck directly on Gold Water’s embryo of Dao. Gold Water didn’t fight back, and neither did his defensive treasures trigger themselves. He did nothing but let Ji Hao destroy his embryo of Dao.

"Thank you, Master Shifu!" Gold Water gave one last sigh. Afterward, a linden leaf magic talisman flew out from his burning body, wrapped up his original soul, and drilled into the netherworld.

"You, who wants a hack from me?" Easily killing Priest Corpse and Gold Water, Ji Hao tinkled the sword with his finger. The silvery tinkle vibrated the air, while Ji Hao smilingly looked at Priest Flame and the others, who were all vomiting blood.

Remaining silent for a while, a priest with a light-cyan skin screamed, "Ji Hao, you killed our two brothers only because you have those supreme treasures...Fight us with your own power if you dare to!"

Ji Hao laughed out loud. ‘My treasures? Didn’t you try to trap us with the monument? Isn’t that a treasure?"

Slightly shaking his head, Ji Hao launched another hack without hesitating.

Man Man, Shaosi, and the others moved together. At the same time, a swift dark silhouette flashed out of Ji Hao’s shadow like a nimble fish.

Chapter 1237 - Be Smitten With Fear

The infinitude lotus world was agitated. Seeing Ji Hao rush up, all priests in the lotus world growled out, boosted up their powers as much as possible, and launched a life-risking counterattack.

Without Gold Water, the all worlds monument began losing control, releasing its power without limitation.

Different sized doors flashed around. Countless priests screamed like a group of startled ducks while rushing in or out of those doors. Meanwhile, colorful clouds had been rising from all doors. The eighteen 'Zun'-level sky devils, and nearly ten-thousand sky devils, who suddenly showed up, had also been flashing around with the power of the all worlds monument. All kinds of sky devil magics were cast towards attack Ji Hao.

Man Man took back the sixty-four flaming beads, turned them into a thousands of meters long flaming door, and shielded Shaosi and herself while constantly launching attacks. All kinds of attack were swallowed up by the ferocious beast in the flaming door. Sword lights, magic talismans, thunder bombs, nothing could ever touch Man Man and Shaosi beside her.

Occasionally, the beast would pounce out of the door. Every time, three to five poor and slow priests would always be dragged into the flaming door and burned into ashes.

Shaosi's eyes had been sparkling with a faint, gray light. She incanted a spell with a low voice, ceaselessly looting those priests' fortune. Everyone targeted by Shaosi had his or her fortune declining speedily. Soon, many priests turned extremely unlucky. Some of them were injured by sword lights or thunder bombs released by their brothers and sisters, while some saw Man Man push the giant flaming door over. They turned around and attempted to run into a door, but ended up bumping on the doorframe!

All kinds of unimaginable unlucky situation happened. By simply making eye contact with Ji Hao and his friends, these priests would be hunted by bad luck, and be injured without knowing how.

Taisi was holding the Nailhead Seven Arrow Book, surrounded by a layer of gray air-ripples. Following his spooky spell-incanting voice, those priests that rushed out from the doors around him all fell not he ground with their faces turned pale, before they could even launch any attacks.

Feng Xing's arrows darted all over the sky. From time to time, a large number of priests would fall to the ground, twitching and struggling, with hundreds of arrows stuck in their bodies.

From Yu Mu's Disease God Streamer, strange waves of roars could be heard. Everyone who heard that strange roar would shake, then colorful, sticky liquid would begin oozing out of their pores. Some priests had been twitching, vomiting and being purged. Meanwhile, their skin was covered in pustules. Within a couple of breaths, these people were turned into dehydrated dead bodies.

More surprisingly, Yuan Li gripped his whip, and was madly lashing the few thousands of priests chained on the nine dragons chariot. These priests cried, but at the same time, activated their flying swords and daggers. Those flying swords and daggers transformed into strong light shields, defending the chariot against the attacks launched by their brothers and sisters.

While doing this, many chained priests had been crying and wailing heartbreakingly, "Brothers...Sisters...Run, just run. You can never defeat these monsters...Run...Ji Hao is cruel and evil. Look what he did to us!"

Groups of priests had still been flashing in and out of those doors, attacking Ji Hao and his friends, in cooperation with the eighteen sky devils.

Priest Corpse and Gold Water were both sent down to the netherworld by Ji Hao. All their efforts had been wasted, so these priests wanted to run. They didn't want to put up any desperate fight against Ji Hao, but they had to, because Priest Hua had given his order!

Even worse, without Gold Water, the all worlds monument was almost out of control now. All the other priests who built this infinitude lotus world together alarmedly realized the fact that they could no longer find the exit. They had no idea how to walk out of this disordered giant formation.

Restrained by Priest Hua's order, these people dared not to run.

The all worlds monument was out of control, which meant they couldn't run.

Therefore, they could only fight desperately! Supported by the power of the great formation, countless sword lights transformed into long rainbows and descended along with waves of thunder bombs. In the great formation, the powers of these sword lights and those thunderbolts were hundred times greater than usual.

However, Ji Hao protected the entire chariot with the Pan Gu bell. No matter how strongly those priests attacked, Ji Hao stood on the chariot and remained unmoving. Occasionally, he would release one or two beams of sword light and make a large group of priests cry hysterically while jumping around.

The golden bridge floated before Ji Hao's forehead, with countless tiny spell symbols sparkling on it.

Extremely thin beams of light shone from the golden bridge, scanning across the slowly rotating all worlds monument. Exposed under the light of the golden bridge, the all worlds monument was gradually turning transparent and hazy.

Many priests as powerful as Priest Corpse and Gold Water rushed up and tried to bring the monument back under control. However,

a faint, scary, dark shadow existed around the monument. Any priest who dared to approach the monument would be killed suddenly by an invisible sword.

Yemo Shayi was hiding in the air, killing every enemy who dared to approach.

Among those priests, some became Priest Hua and Priest Mu' disciples in the prehistorical era, and were even more powerful than Yemo Shayi. But, they were so frightened by Ji Hao and his friends that their hearts were shaken. As a result, their will became weak, and they almost died under Yemo Shayi's sword many times.

An hour passed like this. Ji Hao laughed, "Thank you for this great treasure. It would be so rude to reject, so I will accept it."

Roaring resonantly, the golden bridge dimmed its light, shaking slightly, then released a thumb-sized stream of clear light which drilled into the monument. Dense clouds rose from the monument. Along with a rumbling friction noise, the monument quaked intensely and flew to the golden bridge inch by inch.

All surrounding doors disappeared one after another, and countless priests suddenly showed up in all directions, deeply confused.

Within a few breaths, the monument became a tiny jade talisman, swallowed by the golden bridge. After that, the golden bridge dazzled with a blinking light. Ji Hao's embryos of Dao trembled intensely, as he sensed a wild joy from the golden bridge which was not concealable.

The all worlds monument was highly nourishing to the golden bridge. On swallowing the monument, the golden bridge was much more powerful than before, and was even more magical and mysterious.

Most importantly, by now, this infinitude lotus world was

completely under Ji Hao’s control.

The golden bridge replaced the monument and became the core of this great formation. So now, all the changes of the formation were controlled by Ji Hao now.

"People, you spent so many efforts and came all the way here to give this all worlds monument to me. For such a great kindness, I can only thank you by taking your lives!" Looking at tens of thousands of priest and nearly ten-thousand sky devils who suddenly showed up, Ji Hao laughed out loud.

Next, he pointed up his finger. Following his move, two beautifully glowing doors appeared in front and behind those priests and sky devils. These two doors gently yet swiftly moved towards each other while generating a long series of puffing noise. At least eighty percent of those priests were crushed by the compressed space, and even thousands of sky devils were shredded, turning into colorful smoke and dissipating in the air.

The rest of the priests and sky devils howled together, falling into despair and fear.

Chapter 1238 - Sweep Through

"Man Man, Shaosi, you don’t do anything. Let me try this new golden bridge!"

Ji Hao clearly sensed that the golden bridge had completely merged with the all worlds monument. In other words, the golden bridge had entirely devoured the monument. The golden bridge had the power of flashing across the space and flying around the world in a moment, but after it merged with the monument, it became even more magical.

Locking a desperately running priest with his eyes, Ji Hao then closed his eyes and randomly lunged his sword, releasing a beam of sword light.

A door coiled in a mist suddenly opened in that direction. The sword light darted into the door, and then blood splashed out from it. Over ten miles away, a door suddenly opened before that running priest, then the sword light dazzled out and penetrated his chest.

Before that priest could make any reaction, Ji Hao locked his left fingers together and sent out a Yu Yu divine thunderbolt. Once the thunderbolt flashed out, a foot-long door opened before it. Then, Ji Hao saw the injured priest tremble suddenly. He lowered his head in panic, trying to look at his waist. He couldn’t see it, but he clearly sensed that a tiny door had opened inside his body.

That Yu Yu divine thunderbolt went off inside this priest’s body. A cyan-purple bolt of thunder struck out from his stomach and tore his body apart. A bleeding primordial spirit flew into the sky, screaming ear-piercingly.

Ji Hao smiled and pointed out his finger. Above that primordial spirit, another door suddenly appeared and opened. The primordial spirit moved about five times faster than its physical body. It didn’t manage to stop, and consequently rushed into that

door.

A warm light flashed across the nine dragons chariot. A door opened, and that primordial spirit rushed out, right before Ji Hao's face. The primordial spirit screamed as if it suddenly saw a ghost. It locked its fingers together and attempted to escape at the highest speed. But standing aside, Man Man chuckled. A flaming door appeared behind that primordial spirit, from which, a fire wolf reached out its head and gripped the primordial spirit with its sharp teeth.

"Ji Hao my friend! Please, please don't kill me! Please!" The primordial spirit screamed sadly, as loud as possible, "I've cultivated myself, with no pains spared, for three thousand years!"

Ji Hao raised his eyebrows, looking at the primordial spirit as he responded blandly, "Only three-thousand years? No wonder you're so weak."

Pointing out his finger, Ji Hao sent out another thunderbolt which struck straight on the primordial spirit's head, making dark smoke puff out from it. Baring its teeth, the fire wolf gripped the primordial spirit tightly with those sharp teeth and swiftly dragged it into the flaming door.

Floating behind Ji Hao, the golden bridge flipped slightly. Following a thought of Ji Hao, warm clouds rose from all directions, while countless lotuses bloomed in them. Golden, silver, cyan, and red, lotuses with all colors gathered together and merged into a thousand-miles-wide sphere that wrapped this whole space up.

The eighteen 'Zun'-level sky devils screamed in panic. They cast all kinds of magic, trying to tear apart the space and run with the other surviving sky devils. However, the infinitude lotus world was a great, powerful formation, built by tens of thousands of Priest Hua and Priest Mu's disciples with great efforts. Now, it was being controlled by the golden bridge, a genuine supreme treasure.

Without a doubt, no matter how hard those sky devils tried, they couldn’t shake the formation, not even slightly.

Over ten-thousand surviving priests had been running desperately in the formation like headless chicken. But led by the golden bridge, the formation changed gradually, and a strong sealing force came to these priests from every direction.

Soon, only around ten powerful ones could still move freely, while all the others were frozen in the air with weird gestures, like flies in amber. Those powerful ones were famous since the prehistorical era.

Ji Hao waved his hand. The few doors around him disappeared. He took a few steps forward, standing on the nine dragons chariot as he said, "Surrender, then you can live! You are guilty of all kinds of evil. You harmed human beings. You may not die, but you will suffer for what you’ve done. If you are willing to repent sincerely and serve our humankind, you may live!"

A powerful priest glowered at Ji Hao. A cold light shone above his head, within which, a bead was faintly visible. Harshly, he shouted to his peers, "Don’t believe him! We have to remember that..."

Ji Hao raised the Taiji divine sword and launched a fierce hack.

No sword light flashed across the sky, and no sword power could be sensed. Instead, a door opened before Ji Hao’s body, and at the same time, another one opened before that priest’s face. Through the door, the Taiji divine sword penetrated the priest’s forehead, right through the middle of his eyebrows.

That bead above his head flew up and brought his embryo of Dao into a spinning golden lotus.

If the infinitude lotus world didn’t change, according to the priest’s calculation, this golden lotus should be an exit. By breaking the lotus, he could escape and survive.

Ji Hao shook his head and pointed his finger out once again.

Following his move, the golden lotus became a golden door. Under the protection of the bead, the priest's embryo of Dao flew into the door, then came out from another one, right in front of Ji Hao.

"Man Man, you and the others go outside and wait for me!" Ji Hao's eyes sparkled with a dangerous light. An extremely strong intent of killing rose from his heart. Were Priest Mu and Priest Hua planning to borrow a knife from Ji Hao and send all these disciples of theirs to the netherworld, to let them reincarnate and become human beings? Were they planning to take a greater natural fortune, that belonged to the humankind, through this method?

Ji Hao sneered. The golden bridge started shaking, releasing a clear light that wrapped up the nine dragons chariot. The light sparkled; except for Ji Hao, all the others and the chariot itself were sent out from the infinitude lotus world.

"You stupid things. You colluded with sky devils and hurt human beings. You are so stubborn and impenitent. I think you should die!"

Raising the sword high, Ji Hao injected all of his power into the sword. The fierce sword intent swept across the entire space while dazzling sword light beams were generated. Before every beam of sword light, a tiny door appeared. Coming next were long-lasting screams and howls. Before each sky devil or priest, a door appeared as well.

Through the space, Ji Hao attacked tens of thousands of enemies with a single sword strike.

The bodies of all the priests were crushed. Their primordial spirits intended to escape, but ended up being stuck in the infinitude lotus world, unable to move.

Ji Hao swung the sword down over and over again, as sword light beams fell like a storm. The eighteen 'Zun' level sky devils had been roaring in rage. Their bodies were penetrated by sword lights, as the sun power and the extremely negative power drilled into

their bodies, burning them up. They were powerful indeed, but a big half of their life-force was consumed by the two extreme types of power already.

Looked around, Ji Hao then raised his hand. Behind those primordial spirits and sky devils, a five-colored swirl emerged.

Inside Ji Hao's body, the five-colored cauldron released a strong suction force. Colorful light streams dragged those primordial spirits and all the sky devils slowly into the cauldron.

The five-colored flame spun swiftly in the cauldron, burning ragingly. Soon, the original souls of a batch of priests were melted completely.

Ji Hao gripped the sword, facing the sky. He knew that this time, he had truly infuriated Priest Hua and Priest Mu. The original souls of tens of thousands of their disciples were destroyed, and their great plan about reincarnation was thwarted.

'They might want to kill me themselves now.' thought Ji Hao.

Chapter 1239: The Eruption of The Intent of Killing

Northern Wasteland, on the vast North Sea...

Same as the other continents, Northern Wasteland suffered a rampant flood too. But unlike the rest of the people, the ones in Northern Wasteland had gotten used to the life on the water.

Enormous wooden cities floated on the water. Countless strong human warriors mounted on all kinds of water-kind beasts, darting while cheering on the broad water surface. High up in the air, lighting bolts flashed across the sky. Every time that happened, a large number of human warrior would leap up and excitedly chase the bolt.

Dark turtles, dragon whales, mix-blooded Kun Peng birds, enormous ancient devil sharks, all kinds of mountain-sized water-kind creatures were roaring in the water and raising giant waves.

On the backs of these giant creatures, large groups of human beings had been building cities under the heavy rain.

Deep working songs could be heard from far distances away. Ground coral, fish bones, hawksbill carapaces, and other special materials were melted by the extremely negative flame and poured on perfectly polished reef rocks. Soon, numerous cities were built under the heavy rain.

Mounted on water-kind creatures, many clan elders who were wearing long black robes had been patrolling in the rain, checking on the progress.

From time to time, some elders would yell out to tell those workers to guarantee the quality, and also to speed them up.

"Lord Gong Gong is going to ascend the divine throne, and we, are his private guards! We cannot disgrace him!"

"All battle beasts have to be strong, all cities have to be unbreakable! All armors and weapons have to be shiny! No one can be sluggish! We all have to work hard!"

"Northern Wasteland warriors! You are the bravest men in the world! You are the strongest! Summoned by Lord Gong Gong, we will conquer those weak human beings in Midland, Eastern Wasteland, Northern Wasteland, and Southern Wasteland!"

"Boys, you should have the wealth of those weak people. You should enjoy their best wine and their daughters, kill their sons and grandsons...All this will be the fortune that Lord Gong Gong will give you!"

Hysterical growls echoed through the curtain of rain. From all directions, shouts of elders could be heard. They sounded like a pack of starving wolves, gathered together and preparing to hunt.

On the vast North Sea, scenes like this happened everywhere. These Northern Wasteland people had decided to follow Gong Gong, and were already demented.

Across the North Sea, further northward, the wind was bone-piercing cold. All raindrops were frozen into ice beads and snowflakes before landing on the ground.

The water was frozen, generating a strong ice power. When the ice power was concentrated to an extreme point, the ice glowed with a frigid, white light. Compared with the dark North Sea, the ice was even blindingly bright.

Across the frozen area, deeper in the north was a series of icebergs. Layer by layer, giant icebergs stood on the frozen water surface like walls. No human beings or wild animal could climb over these icebergs, and not even birds could fly across. Strong gales blew across, which threw down differently sized ice pieces onto these icebergs, causing muffled rumbling noises endlessly.

In the core area, a tens of thousands of miles tall iceberg stood

like the king, seemingly worshipped by all the other icebergs.

Hurricanes and dark clouds roared to this enormous iceberg over and over again, yet no harm could ever be done to it. Tens of miles away from the iceberg, those hurricanes and dark clouds were blocked by a soft yet strong force, and could no longer approach.

On top of the iceberg, an entirely silver-blue ice dragon curled quietly in a giant ice cube.

With an indescribable faint smile, Priest Mu sat on another giant ice cube. A green sphere of light drifted behind him. Within the hundred-meters-wide green light, a large linden tree was faintly visible.

Beside the ice cube that Priest Mu sat on, the Flood Dragon King sat on an ice jade hassock with crossed legs, eyes closed, with a golden bottle slightly slanting above his head. The bottle was decorated with gemstones. Drop by drop, a sticky liquid glowing with a seven-colored light had been dripping slowly from the bottle onto his head.

The liquid emitted a faint aroma as it seeped into the Flood Dragon King's body once it touched his scalp. The Flood Dragon King quivered slightly while thin strands of cold mist puffed out of his pores. Between his chest and stomach, a silver-blue light had been spinning swiftly. The liquid dripping into his body transformed into a strong force, being swallowed by the light.

As the liquid was absorbed by his body, the sense of power released from the Flood Dragon King's body grew stronger and stronger.

He was a powerful being who lived ever since the prehistorical era. Not even the Gong Gong Family wanted to be his enemies. But right now, his power was growing and purifying at an unreasonably high rate. A new power was growing inside his body, thousand times purer than his original power.

"Flood Dragon King, you have accepted many benefits from our sect today. In the future, when our disciples reincarnate, you shall pay back for what you are given with." said Priest Mu with a gentle voice while smiling, "The enlightening dew contained in this golden bottle is extracted from ninety percent of life-force and power from your 129600 brothers and sisters in the sect, with immeasurable natural reward power."

"With this enlightening dew, your body will be remolded, and your power will soar. In the future, when they reincarnate, you will be their guide, and you will lead them back to our sect to restart their cultivation." Keeping that faint smile, Priest Mu looked at the Flood Dragon King, abruptly took out a colorful glowing branch, and gently patted on the Flood Dragon King’s head.

"Flood Dragon King, aren’t you going to wake up? What are you waiting for?"

The Flood Dragon King trembled instantly. Next, a cold beam of light darted up into the sky from the top of his head. Hearing a resonant roar, a silver-blue, five-clawed flood dragon flew out of the light, took three circles around the Flood Dragon King’s body, then roared again towards the sky. After that, a priest flew out of the cold light, wearing a long white robe, and looking exactly like the Flood Dragon King’s human shape.

The priest also took three circles around the Flood Dragon King’s and the silver-blue flood dragon, then roared together with the flood dragon. A thunderous boom happened afterward, and a nine-meters tall giant appeared in the cold light. The giant had three heads and six arms, wearing all kinds of jewels.

"Marvelous! This supreme magic is finally done. Flood Dragon King, if you can do it, those reincarnated disciples will also be able to do it in the future!" Priest Mu nodded and praised. He couldn’t help but laugh delightfully. "In this way, we are creating a whole new method of cultivation. We will have a bright future. Good,

good!"

While he was laughing, tens of leaves on the colorful branch holding in Priest Mu's hand suddenly exploded.

Priest Mu's face twisted immediately. As he quivered slightly, the towering iceberg disappeared all of a sudden.

"Ji...Ji Hao...You, you, what did you do?! How did you destroy the original souls of my fifty-seven-thousand disciples?!"

With an intensely twitching face, Priest Mu looked at the south and murmured, "You, you, you, you're dead... You..."

A world-destroying intent of killing rose from Priest Mu's heart. Within the area thirty millions of miles in radius, all icebergs disappeared suddenly.

Chapter 1240: The Confusion After The Battle

‘Dong! Dong! Dong!’

After a quick series of explosive sounds, the beautiful glow in the sky faded, and Ji Hao walked slowly out of the disappearing infinitude lotus world. Flags and other treasures, which were used by those priests to build this great formation, flew into Ji Hao’s left sleeve like birds flying into the woods.

"Yeah! Ji Hao won!" Seeing nothing was left behind Ji Hao, Man Man excitedly waved her arms and leaped up. If Shaosi weren’t smilingly holding her hand, she would have bumped straight into Ji Hao’s arms.

Yemo Shayi walked out of the air, hands dropped on both sides of his body and head slightly lowered. He politely and closely walked by Ji Hao’s side, looking at Ji Hao’s dark face.

"My dear master, you seem to not be happy. Are you unhappy? Is anything wrong?" asked Yemo Shayi gently.

Ji Hao frowned. He walked back into the nine dragons chariot and sat in a golden armchair on the top deck, supporting his chin with his both hands while gazing at the vast water down below.

Of course, something was wrong. In fact, something was very wrong.

Those disciples all had Priest Mu’s linden leaf magic talismans. But, those powerful talismans showed no sign of saving their lives. Instead, those talismans did nothing but protect their original soul and send them into the netherworld.

This looked like Priest Mu had made the plan long ago, and he sent these disciples to die on purpose.

More importantly, something was badly wrong about the powers

of those priests.

Ji Hao was indescribably lucky. He was taken as a disciple by Yu Yu, then guided by Priest Dachi and Priest Qing Wei and a large group of brothers and sisters. Those brothers and sisters of his almost generously taught Ji Hao everything they had ever learned. More importantly, the mysterious man who lived in Ji Hao's spiritual space, that powerful old freak with an unknown background story, had led Ji Hao onto a thoroughly different path. For all the above reasons, Ji Hao improved stunningly fast not long after he started his cultivation. By now, he was no weaker than those powerful beings who lived since the prehistorical era.

"I clearly understand that no matter how largely I have improved, I shouldn't be able to defeat powerful beings like Priest Corpse and Gold Water easily." Ji Hao slowly nodded and pondered upon his confusion.

He killed Priest Corpse with one single sword move, then easily destroyed his embryos of Dao. Somehow, Ji Hao felt that Priest Corpse was like a balloon, large but empty. His cultivation was still there, but his power and life-force were not even ten-percent as powerful as before.

In the infinitude lotus world, Priest Corpse was far weaker than before when Ji Hao met him the first time. He was weakened awfully. Nevertheless, Priest Corpse never realized that.

Ji Hao had met Priest Corpse before. Therefore, he could tell that Priest Corpse was weakened, so it was reasonable for Ji Hao to kill Priest Corpse with one move with his powerful Taiji divine sword.

Gold Water's background story was unknown. But, as he was powerful enough to control the all worlds monument, he should be more powerful than Priest Corpse. However, Gold Water was killed by Ji Hao so easily too, with one single sword move. He didn't even manage to trigger his life-saving treasures before he died.

Except for these two powerful ones, who were already famous back in the prehistorical era, all those priests Ji Hao met in the infinitude lotus world seemed to be weakened and exhausted.

Ji Hao indeed had a few top-grade supreme treasures. As a mysterious treasure from the Chaos, the golden bridge suppressed the all worlds monument. Therefore, Ji Hao should be able to easily break the infinitude lotus world and leave. But killing tens of thousands of elite disciples of Priest Hua and Priest Mu at one time? Even Ji Hao himself felt it unbelievable. Those priests were too weak. Their powers were way under their cultivation levels. It seemed that their powers were taken away by someone through some special method.

"They were too weak." Smiling at his friends surrounding him, Ji Hao said, "I'm fine, I just felt that, they were too weak. Those priests, they had cultivated for at least a thousand years..."

Yemo Shayi frowned as well. Today, he killed at least three-thousand priests with his sword. He also felt that it was a bit too easy.

"Whatever, we won!" Man Man proudly raised her head. The sixty-four flaming beads had been slowly hovering around her, covering her body with a red light. She chuckled and continued, "Strange or not, we won, and that's good!"

Ji Hao smiled too.

Man Man's personality hadn't changed at all. But her words made sense. No matter how weird it was, they won, didn't they? Priest Hua and Priest Mu set such a large trap and tried to do something to Ji Hao. But as a result, tens of thousands of their elite disciples were turned into ashes, while Ji Hao was the only one who benefited.

From the five-colored cauldron, extremely pure original soul power was slowly released, merging with Ji Hao's embryos of Dao.

Ji Hao’s embryos of Dao had been growing rapidly. In his spiritual space, thunders were blaring, and lights and shadows were shaking. Ji Hao had been stably growing stronger.

"Next time, if they send the same number of people, I will tear them in a frontal fight!" Gradually, a gray mist spread out around Ji Hao’s body, surrounding him up. He looked like an evil dragon hiding in a bottomless chasm, such that no one could ever see him clearly.

In his spiritual space, aside from the three embryos of Dao, a hazy silhouette slowly emerged.

The golden bridge devoured the all worlds monument, after which, the connection between the golden bridge and Ji Hao himself was suddenly tightened. Through the connection, Ji Hao started understanding the great Dao of space, and in the meanwhile, his fourth embryo of Dao, the embryo of Dao of space, was gradually generated.

Because of the embryo of Dao of space, the broad spiritual space of Ji Hao, and the boundless void inside his body that contained three enormous spheres of light, started expanding speedily. Ji Hao faintly sensed that the immeasurable space was now becoming clearer and clearer, closer and closer.

Glancing at the location of the disappeared infinitude lotus world, Ji Hao waved his broad sleeve and said with a deep voice, "Let’s head back, we have other things to do."

The nine dragons chariot gave a rumbling roar. Standing on top of the chariot, Mr. Crow cawed brightly.

Yuan Li raised his whip and lashed down violently. Hundreds of chained priests screamed shrilly. The chariot slowly turned around and raised dense fiery clouds, flying to a flood-control troop which had sent Ji Hao an SOS message just now.

But before the chariot moved, a translucent lotus quietly

bloomed in the air.

With a grim look, Priest Hua walked out of the lotus in big steps. Seeing Ji Hao, he flicked his wrist and sent out a golden bolt of thunder, without saying a word.

Chapter 1241: The Strangeness of Preist Hua

Priest Hua was so powerful that once he moved, even the world sensed him. Dense dark clouds silently pressed down towards the water surface, bringing a despairing sense of destruction.

The dark atmosphere surrounded everyone. Thousands of chained priests and thousands of Jia Clan warriors guarding around the chariot popped out their eyes, but saw nothing; they listened carefully, but heard nothing; they wanted to shout, but couldn't make even the slightest sound.

Their sensibilities were taken away. These priests and Jia Clan warriors were thrown into a despairing darkness, and within a single moment, their souls had reached the verge of collapse, all because of power of destruction contained in the thunderbolt released by Priest Hua.

Yemo Shayi suddenly burst with a high-pitched growl. A dark mist puffed out of his head, then a hundred-miles-wide dark swirl began spinning slowly above his head, releasing a strong power of destruction that seemed to devour and destroy everything.

The power of destruction delivered by Priest Hua's thunderbolt intensively clashed against Yemo Shayi's dark swirl. The purely dark swirl quaked intensely, and soon was compressed into a flicking, twisting, dark line, that seemed to break at any time.

Suffering the power of destruction, Man Man released a fiery light from her head. Within the light, a crystalline, burning silhouette was seen reaching hundred-miles high. The fire giant roared towards the sky and released a raging flame in all directions, burning half of the sky red.

Behind Shaosi and Taisi, hazy shadows emerged as well, faintly visible. Standing by the side of Man Man's fire giant, they tried their best to twist the space and to ease the strong pressure caused by Priest Hua's thunderbolt.

Yu Mu's fat had been shaking quickly. He shouted out loud while a gray stream of smoke rose from his head, reaching hundreds of miles high into the sky. A hazy silhouette appeared in the smoke; this silhouette was invisible to ordinary human beings, and only people with special eye powers and powerful magics could see it.

This giant silhouette was holding the Disease God streamer, standing behind Man Man's fire giant while waving the streamer and releasing an extremely toxic mist. It spread out into an enormous shield that covered the entire nine dragons chariot, defending everyone against the dreadful power of destruction.

At last, Feng Xing gave a resonant growl. His eyes shone with a blinding light as he raised his bow and forcibly pulled it open.

A hundred-miles-tall, muscular giant showed up above Feng Xing's head. The giant was blurred; he had a piece of hide wrapped around his waist and his arms raised, as if he were also pulling open a bow. Following a shrill swishing noise, a sharp beam of arrow light darted out from between this giant's hands and struck on the thunderbolt released by Priest Hua.

The thirty-meter-thick, tens of thousands of meters long thunderbolt was stopped for a second.

Bang! Bang! A fiery light blasted before the thunderbolt. The arrow light was shattered, and Feng Xing snorted heavily in pain. He was sent flying backward, vomiting blood. Bone cracking noise came from his body, sounding like popping corns. After that, he weakly fell to the ground and couldn't move anymore.

When the others combined their powers to fight against the thunderbolt, Ji Hao stood up with difficulty.

The target of the thunderbolt was no body else but Ji Hao. Those priests, Jia Clan warriors, Man Man, Shaosi and Ji Hao's other friends, they had only been suffering from the afterwinds of the thunderbolt.

The pressure and the power of destruction that Ji Hao had been taking were over a hundred times greater than for Man Man and the others.

Inch by inch, Ji Hao straightened his body. He stood up against the pressure purely with his physical strength. Above his head, layers of transparent space-ripples were shattered by his body, causing a buzzing noise.

"Priest Hua!" Ji Hao raised his head and stared at Priest Hua.

Looked at the thunderbolt which was flashing over, Ji Hao sensed a piercing pain from his eyes. Instinctively, he closed his eyes.

"Duo!" He shouted. The golden bridge darted out from his erect eye and released a clear light. The light was shaking slightly. All of a sudden, a thousands of meters tall door coiled in colorful warm clouds opened before that thunderbolt, which disappeared without a trace.

"The all worlds monument!" Priest Hua trembled slightly. Staring at Ji Hao, he asked coldly, "Ji Hao, this supreme treasure belongs to our sect. How dare you take it?"

"Priest Hua, the all worlds monument is destined to be mine!" Ji Hao opened his eyes, raised his right hand, and responded seriously, "Under the witness of the world, the all worlds monument is indeed destined to be mine. It was destined to be sent to me by Gold Water."

While grinning, Ji Hao continued blandly, "If you don’t believe me, ask the world itself. Ask the world if it agrees with me."

Man Man and Shaosi chuckled together. The lingering power from that thunderbolt hadn’t faded yet, and Ji Hao’s friends were still suffocated by it, their hearts still drumming. But what Ji Hao said just now as way too shameless and naughty, which made Man Man and Shaosi unable to help but laugh.

"Hehe." Yu Mu and Feng Xing laughed with a simple and honest look. They nodded at Priest Hua and said, "Isn’t that right? The world is our witness. The all worlds monument is truly destined to be ours! Old man, if you don’t believe us, ask it, just ask the world itself."

Priest Hua gazed at Ji Hao in the eyes. That intent of killing in his eyes was evident.

Since forever, ‘the treasure is destined to be ours’, this sentence was even a tagline of Priest Hua and Priest Mu. With this sentence, how many treasures that did have owners were looted by him? But today, Ji Hao used this sentence against Priest Hua!

"Good, good, good! Yu Yu has been upright for his whole life, but he took you, such a shameless thing, as a disciple. Enough about the all worlds monument for now. You killed tens of thousands of our disciples. This is..."

Ji Hao smiled, interrupted him, and said, "Please, don’t say anything you want only because you are old. Those disciples of yours were evil, so the thunderbolts descended from the sky struck them to death. I didn’t do it."

Ji Hao continued while smirking, "If you don’t believe me, ask the sky. Ask the sky if it sent down thunderbolts to kill your disciples or not.

Priest Hua paused briefly. Then, he abruptly raised his head and pointed at Ji Hao, seeming to say something. But his look changed slightly.

"Brother...How can I forget about things like this?"

"No, how can I forget about it? You have taken ninety percent of the powers and life-force of those disciples to make the enlightening dew for them to use after the reincarnation! You told me about this days ago."

"But, how can I forget anything like this? No, this is not right. If I

knew that you had taken their powers, I wouldn’t send them to kill Ji Hao. I told them to kill Ji Hao at all costs and with all their powers, but they were all weakened by over ninety percent...They didn’t even have all of their powers anymore."

"I should never have made a mistake like this, but, but..."

Priest Hua started murmuring to himself with a panicked look. All of a sudden, a stream of blood spurted out from his mouth and splashed tens of meters away.

Chapter 1242: The Holy Seed of Sky Devils

Ji Hao waved his sleeve. The nine dragons chariot emitted a blinding light, flashing backward for over ten-thousand miles while he stayed motionless. The Pan Gu bell released streams of Chaos power, which shielded his entire body. Treading on a fiery cloud, Ji Hao flew to Priest Hua.

High up in the air, from thirty miles away, Ji Hao looked at Priest Hua, who had a thin stream of blood on his mouth corner.

Priest Hua let out a mouthful of seven-colored, sparkling blood. The blood fell from the sky, dropped into the vast water. An enormous three-headed boa dashed over and swallowed the blood.

The water surface was white while the sky was dark. The heavy rain made everything hazy. Strong gales lashed on everything in the world along with large raindrops. After swallowing Priest Hua's blood, the three-headed boa trembled suddenly, then three giant boa heads reached out of the water surface. A golden light spread out from its heads to its tail. Within a blink of an eye, the boa's scales all turned golden.

The boa's scales were originally sticky and dark, looking a bit evil. But, after being swept across by the golden light, all the shapes of all scales changed into a shield-shape, and they turned crystalline, looking even sacred.

A dragon roar could be heard. The body of that three-headed boa suddenly expanded to tens of thousands of meters long. Within a very short span of time, the body of this boa changed thoroughly. It became a three-headed golden dragon and flew into the sky.

The dragon hovered in the sky. Gales grew stronger and dark clouds gathered together; dazzling thunderbolts flashed across the sky, shredding all the dark clouds.

Ji Hao and Priest Hua were thirty miles away from each other.

They looked at each other while the shining golden dragon flew into the higher sky between them. Countless water-tank-sized thunderbolt descended from the sky and struck violently on the dragon's body. This lucky boa became a dragon so quickly, it seemed that even the world couldn't stand it. It intended to kill it with those thunderbolts.

A seven-colored flame burned out of the dragon's body. Along with shrill howls, the dragon's body was burned into a strand of ash. A sphere of colorful light flew out of the dragon's burning body and quickly condensed into seven-colored beads.

Priest Hua pointed out his finger. Following his move, these beads flew into his sleeve. The power vibration released from these beads was strong and pure. Scanned by Ji Hao's spirit power, these beads looked even like the blazing summer sun. Priest Hua covered his mouth with his left hand and coughed slightly.

"Something is wrong with you." Ji Hao hid his hands in sleeves, looking at Priest Hua blandly.

"Who gave you the courage to talk to me like this?" Priest Hua dropped his hand. A few seven colored drops of blood slowly flew down from between his fingers. When the blood was dripping down, it glowed and also turned into seven-colored beads, then flew into Priest Hua's sleeve.

"Is talking to you such a big deal that I need someone to give me the courage for that?" Smilingly, Ji Hao shook his head and said, "Besides, something is very wrong about you, don't you know that?"

Priest Hua stared at Ji Hao with a dark look. Being stared by him, Ji Hao sensed the surrounding space was freezing, and even time had stopped. The whole world seemed to have become a cage because of Priest Hua's gaze.

Ji Hao couldn't sense any natural power anymore. He sensed nothing but his own body. He felt his physical body, primordial

spirit, and embryos of Dao barely, which were like a tiny grain of dust, glowing faintly in an endless darkness.

A pressure came down from everywhere, layer by layer. Ji Hao could be crushed by this pressure at any time.

The Pan Gu bell rang itself strongly and resonantly. The bell ring dispelled the pressure, shattering the frozen space and stopped time.

Originally surrounding Ji Hao, the darkness faded away like tidewater. Ji Hao saw the dark sky, white water, and endless rain again. A strong gale blew across Ji Hao's body along with countless water drops as Ji Hao realized that his back was covered in cold sweat.

"Good treasure!" Looking at the Pan Gu bell, Priest Hua sighed and said, "Qing Wei took a small half of Buzhou Mountain, and the rest of the mountain was made into this bell by you, right?"

Before Ji Hao answered the question, Priest Hua slightly shook his head and continued, "It was indeed the remains of Pan Gu, a supreme treasure. With this bell on your head, I'm afraid that my brother and I cannot hurt you easily in Pan Gu world, unless we make some solid efforts for that.

"Therefore, you shouldn't send your disciples to die..." Ji Hao laughed, "What is the enlightening dew?"

Ji Hao changed the topic too suddenly. Normally, Priest Hua wouldn't answer any question asked by Ji Hao, but he was obviously in a wrong state right now. Hearing Ji Hao, he responded almost subconsciously, "My brother took the powers of those not so talented non-human disciples under our guidance. Those disciples had shallow foundations, and were far away from the great Dao..."

Priest Hua seemed to be slightly struggling. His body trembled, and his face twitched obviously.

"My brother combined a sky devil magic and his own power to create a peaceful lotus world. He guided those untalented disciples in, then took ninety percent of the powers of their primordial spirits and embryos of Dao, and their life-force. With my brother's own natural reward power and spirit fire, he purified what he took, and te final product is called enlightening dew."

"The enlightening dew contained the foundation of the great Dao of our sect... It can be considered as the seed of our great Dao. Every single drop of enlightening dew contained an immeasurable amount of power; it was extremely pure and powerful...After those disciples reincarnated, they would be empowered with the enlightening dew. With the enlightening dew, they would regain ninety percent of their previous life cultivation within ten years."

Priest Hua's eyes shone with a strange light as he murmured to himself, "My brother had told me about this long ago! Those disciples should die and reincarnate in this flood...but, I shouldn't gather them up... I shouldn't order them to kill you with all their powers...I shouldn't, shouldn't let you destroy all their original souls."

Locking his right fingers together, he gently knocked his temple, then continued murmuring with a bitter look, "I shouldn't have made a mistake like this...Tens of thousands of disciples, tens of thousands...Those were not our core disciples, but every one of them was capable and powerful...They were all good disciples. How could they..."

All of a sudden, Priest Hua screamed shrilly out, then shouted hysterically, "What is this?! What is this?! A sky devil holy seed?! Why do I have this in my heart of Dao?!"

"Sky devils, when did you do this to me? You, you..."

Priest Hua suddenly sat on the ground and crossed his legs, trembling intensely. A giant lotus with tens of thousands of petal bloomed in the sky and shielded Priest Hua in the middle.

Ji Hao opened his erect eye and looked at Priest Hua. He saw a fist-sized colorful sphere of light slowly spinning in Priest Hua's heart, beautiful and transparent like a crystal.

Chapter 1243: Reap As One Has Sown

It was indescribably, unspeakably beautiful.

Glancing at that transparent, stunning sphere in Priest Hua's heart, Ji Hao's embryos of Dao trembled in his spiritual space. He couldn't help but want to fly into that light, like a flying moth wanting to fly into a blazing fire.

The Pan Gu bell rang again. Ji Hao felt cold, as cold sweat poured down his head in streams, making him quiver. The bell ring echoed around his ears, and Ji Hao felt that someone had poured a bucket of ice water straight down on his head. As he calmed back down, his embryos of Dao were stabilized.

He dared not to take another glance at that light. He sat in midair and crossed his legs, quietly looking at Priest Hua, who was sitting in the giant lotus. What happened to Priest Hua? He was curious about it.

Priest Hua was one of the most powerful few in Pan Gu world.

According to Yemo Shayi's memory, when the non-humankind being invaded Pan Gu world, a few top-grade powerful none-humankind beings once crossed the space and came to Pan Gu world to fight powerful beings in this world. Estimated by those powerful non-humankind beings, Priest Hua and Priest Mu had reached the stage of 'immortality' back then at least.

So-called stage of immortality meant a cultivator had attained his or her final result of the great Dao. At this level, the soul of this cultivator coexisted with the world itself. Even if the world was destroyed and the soul died, the original soul would still keep existing, which meant this powerful cultivator could still come back alive.

In other words, even if the Pan Gu world is destroyed completely, Priest Hua would still have a chance to live. He was such a

powerful being. Therefore, Ji Hao was very curious about what happened to him. Earlier, he vomited blood, and now, something seemed to happen to his heart of Dao.

The heart of Dao…Ji Hao clicked his tongue. By now, he felt that his heart of Dao was as strong and sturdy as steel. It was pure like a crystal, perfectly stainless and flawless. Based on his current cultivation level, his heart of Dao was perfect.

He had no way to find out the level of Priest Hua's heart of Dao, but he could imagine. In Ji Hao's imagination, Priest Hua's heart of Dao wouldn't be shaken even if he watched the flowers bloom and wither, the oceans dry and the continents sink, or the sky collapse, the earth split, and the universe die.

What could shake his heart of Dao?

Priest Hua was surrounded by layers of lotus petals. Bright lights flashed across those petals, while a deep spell incanting voice could be heard. Those petals released beams of colorful light, and on each petal, layers of swiftly spinning images emerged.

Ji Hao saw clearly that the images emerging above each petal were similar. At first, mountains rose from the earth; nine-hundred, ninety-nine-story towers stood in the middle of those images, reaching to the sky like the Buzhou Mountain.

Next, in the east, south, west, and north, a shorter tower emerged in the multicolored light. Earth powers, fire powers, wind powers, water powers; all natural powers were released from the four short towers. Soon, soil, fresh water, breeze, sunlight, all natural elements were generated.

A short while later, tens of thousands of new, tiny worlds emerged on those petals.

Priest Hua's face twisted, then those tiny worlds began moving. The earth quaked, and more mountains rose; the grounds sank, and rives, lakes, and oceans emerged. The storms started, as the

rainwater nourished the soil, and then all kinds of plants began growing under the warm sunlight.

Linden woods were broad, and lotuses bloomed on the water surface.

Beautiful and rare plants were growing in those linden woods, and golden fishes were swimming happily in the water.

Silvery tinkles could be heard from those images. Breezes blew across linden woods, making jade-like leaves tinkle against each other. The tinkling noise was peaceful and beautiful, which could make people concentrate on the cultivation of Dao, and make all desires fade.

Ji Hao was suddenly enlightened. Was this that legendarily great magic that he had read about from a Daoist scripture in his previous life?

Coughing slightly, Ji Hao started talking with a deep voice, "Priest Hua, nice trick. So many illusions... The world in each illusion is tens of millions of miles wide...Did you take Boy Chen's spirit bead?"

Back then, Gong Gong sent a group of Chaos monster to kill Si Xi, and Boy Chen was one of them.

Priest Hua was knowledgable and experienced, so he surely knew about Boy Chen. Hearing Ji Hao call those small worlds on his lotus petals 'illusions', Priest Hua opened his eyes and threw him a complicated glance. "Ignorant little kid, this is my spirit magic, in combination with...with the secret, supreme outer space magic, generating 'supreme peaceful lotus worlds'! A petal, a world; a petal, a peaceful realm...In the future, all disciples of our sect can come into my peaceful lotus worlds to cultivate themselves. They will no longer be disturbed by the evilnesses in the world, nor suffer natural disasters and natural trials. This magic if the foundation of the bright future of our sect!"

Priest Hua sneered scornfully, then pointed at Ji Hao and taunted, "What is that Boy Chen? Nothing but a Chaos monster. How could his illusion trick ever be compared with my supreme magic?"

Breathing deeply, Priest Hua continued proudly, "In the future, all living beings can live in my peaceful lotus worlds and be happy forever, without natural disasters, diseases, coldness or starvation...And I, will attain immeasurable natural reward!"

Ji Hao coughed again and said, "This magic of yours sounds indeed great. But you said that it's a combination of your own spirit magic and a secret outer space magic. Hehe, as I thought, you have indeed colluded with those sky devils!"

Priest Hua's face suddenly twisted viciously. He stared at Ji Hao and yelled, "How dare you! Stupid little kid, what do you know? My brother and I travel across the universe for the final result of the great Dao. Faintly, we sensed those sky devils. Their magics were powerful, so we..."

Priest Hua's face twitched. He couldn't finish speaking.

Ji Hao clapped his hand and laughed out loud, "That day in Southern Wasteland, Priest Mu denied the fact that those sky devils were brought to this world by him on purpose. Finally, you have told the truth. You brought these sky devils to Pan Gu world intentionally, and let them rag in this world. You even colluded with them and plotted against our humankind!"

Ji Hao stood up and pointed at Priest Hua, sneering as he continued, "Look at what you've done. How's your heart of Dao now?"

Priest Hua's face was still twitching. The bright light in his eyes dimmed, but he narrowed those eyes and stared straight at Ji Hao. Laughing in a weird tone, he said, "What do you know? Those sky devils, we brought them here on purpose to cultivate the hearts of Dao of our disciples, and help them master the great evil-

suppressing magic. What do you know? Those things, how can they..."

Before he finished, Priest Hua vomited blood again.

Along with a strange melody, a beautiful girl showed up in the peaceful lotus world, on each lotus petal. Those girls were singing and dancing, airily flying all over the sky. Simultaneously, on top of the tallest tower in each lotus world, a strangely-shaped, brightly glowing tall silhouette appeared.

"Priest Hua, my friend, you’re in my hands now!" said a voice from Priest Hua’s heart.

Chapter 1244: True Freedom

That voice came out of Priest Hua's body. What that voice said was simple and ordinary, but enchanting and irresistible.

Hearing this voice, Ji Hao felt that the world in his eyes was suddenly illuminated. Suddenly, the dark sky, misty water surface, and the storm, were all gone, without a trace. Green mountains and water, warm sunlight, and fruit trees were everywhere, with red, yellow, purple, and light-green colored ripe fruits hanging on the branches.

A gently flowing stream was in front of Ji Hao. Flowing in the stream was not water, but milk. This was a true milk stream. Ji Hao looked around and found a few more streams in the front, with honey, oil, goat milk, or wine flowing in it. One could find all the most delicious, nourishing things, and the best liquor in these streams.

Pan Gu world was cold and sad. The sunlight had been absent for a long time. The air was moist and freezing, which made Ji Hao feel cold from his bones.

But right now, Ji Hao felt nothing but comfort and warmth. His clothes were made from luxurious silk, as soft as the palms of a little girl. Ji Hao raised his head and saw a great red sun, shining brightly and warming up the whole world. Somehow, Ji Hao felt this sun wasn't bright enough. But right in the next moment, the sun shone brighter, and the air was even warmer.

Ji Hao looked around and felt a bit lonely.

Instantly, silvery laughter could be heard from the fruitwoods in the surroundings. Faintly, he saw the slim bodies of many young girls in the woods. Large groups of birds flew into the sky, singing beautifully, without sounding noisy at all.

Refreshing aroma of grass and fruits suffused the air, mixed with

the aroma of wines and honey flowing in the streams. The air in this world was so sweet.

"Mister!" Someone called Ji Hao.

Turning around, Ji Hao saw beautiful girl looking at him smilingly, holding a bouquet of pink roses. The girl stood by a honey stream, under a tree with golden loquats, wearing a thin veil. She had shiny dark hair and eyes glowing like stars; her lips were red like fire, and teeth were shiny white.

"Mister, my sisters and I are playing a game in the woods. Do you want to join us?" The girl smiled sweetly. Ji Hao looked around again. He looked at this perfect world and this flawless girl, then suddenly quivered. His skin was even covered in goosebumps.

He fell into such an illusion, but he wasn't confused. He was tightly connected with the Pan Gu bell, and through the 'eye' of the bell, he clearly saw that he was still floating in the air, in the wind and rain. Everything before his eyes was not real.

He clearly remembered that before he was dragged into this illusion, he heard the voice come from Priest Hua's body. Fortunately, his embryos of Dao were under the protection of the Pan Gu bell. Otherwise, he would have sunken in this illusion already.

"How powerful!" Ji Hao quivered again and sighed with respect.

Opening his mouth, Ji Hao released a golden light beam and a silver light beam, which coiled together and violently penetrated the girl's chest. The girl paused. She lowered her head, looking at the bowl-sized wound on her chest,then screamed, "Mister..."

"Piss off!" Ji Hao burst with a thunderous growl.

Ghost screams could be heard from all directions when Ji Hao growled out. The surrounding fruit woods suddenly turned into woods of blades and swords. Tender grasses on the ground became countless dried bones. Flowing in those streams were no longer

honey, juices, or milk. Instead, it all became stinky blood with a thick layer of blue fire on the surface.

Those beautiful girls in the woods turned into badly decayed corpses. Their faces were mostly decomposed, but their halfway decomposed eyeballs hung around their eye sockets, rolling along with their moves.

These skeletons still had dirty wisps of hair on their heads, moving like snakes as these skeletons jumped to Ji Hao.

Looking at these filthy skeletons, Ji Hao took a deep breath. He dared not to release his embryos of Dao in this illusion. Instead, he could only activate all of his power. A thunderous boom was generated. From Ji Hao's chest, red light shone, then expanded to hundred-miles within a blink of an eye. Strong, pure, positive essence sun fire burned all over the sky, causing a ceaseless sizzling noise. From around Ji Hao's body, a rainbow-colored flame rose, which burned out some strange, faintly sensible power in the air.

"Evil things, piss off! You can never shake my heart of Dao!" Ji Hao's eyes shone dazzlingly as a clear light illuminated the sky. Ji Hao saw a faint seven-colored mist in the air. He couldn't grasp that colorful mist with his spirit power and his human eyes, but he could see it with his erect eye of Dao that was cultivated by Yu Yu and Priest Dachi.

Following Ji Hao's growl, Priest Hua quivered intensely.

The giant seven-colored lotus he sat on started to shake slightly. In the peaceful lotus world on each petal, a strong golden light was generated, dazzling towards the strong creature on top of the tallest tower.

However, the oddly-shaped creature in each lotus world laughed out loud and remained completely unmoved under the golden light.

Following a long series of metal-clangs, fire sparkles flashed out

from their bodies, but no wound was left on them.

That voice talked again from inside Priest Hua's body, "Priest Hua, my friend, why are you struggling? Many living beings have fallen in my hands, and most of them died... even those world creators, not to mention you, my friend."

Before Priest Hua responded, that voice's owner started paying attention to Ji Hao.

"Such a positive, passionate power. It burns all evils. Is it the great Dao of sun in this world? My little friend, you are so talented. I am Great Freedom... Are you willing to follow my lead? If you are, you will be benefited greatly."

"Great Freedom?" Ji Hao narrowed his eyes.

"Call me Holy Master Great Freedom, or Sky Owner Great Freedom." Great Freedom laughed in a gentle tone and continued, "Open your heart and let me gift you a supreme seed of Dao, then you will gradually learn the reason why you should follow me."

Ji Hao sneered, and Priest Hua burst with a resonant roar, which sounded like the roar of a lion.

Chapter 1245: Priest Hua's Lecture

Lion roars could dispel evils.

Priest Hua was powerful, and as he suddenly roared out, his roar covered Great Freedom's voice.

The dark sky, the water, the gale and the storm, and streams of water pouring down from the sky, everything disappeared. Dark clouds in the sky were gone, and so was the water; mountains were exposed again in the air, after soaking in the water for months.

The warm sunlight descended from the air and illuminated the wet mountains, pouring on the bodies of Priest Hua and Ji Hao, who were sitting in midair with their legs crossed. A life-like lion head floated in the sky, entirely golden, and roaring thunderously and unstoppably in fury. Ji Hao looked at the tens of thousands of miles wide lion head behind Priest Hua, stunned. In his eyes, and wherever his spirit power could reach, nothing was left but this enormous, majestic lion.

An especially strong power of great Dao drilled into Ji Hao's spiritual space, and his primordial spirit started absorbing it speedily. Between the eyebrows of his four embryos of Dao, a tiny, faint, lion-shaped symbol emerged.

The power of that enormous lion was pure and strong, almost same as the power of the great Dao. This was the best version of 'Lion Roar' created by Priest Hua. The enormous lion head floating behind Priest Hua was like a searing iron, forcibly imprinting all the secrets of 'Lion Roar' in Ji Hao's embryos of Dao.

Priest Hua made the roar in a moment of desperation; he didn't try to hide it. Therefore, the secrets of 'Lion Roar' leaked just like this, and Ji Hao learned it all. By now, he could make the same roar, as powerful as the roar made by Priest Hua himself.

The attack range of Priest Hua's lion roar wasn't too large, about

tens of thousands of miles in radius. That golden lion head floated in the sky, releasing a strong power vibration. In the coverage of the lion roar, all natural powers were driven away, all magic powers were suppressed, and all evilnesses were shredded or sealed.

Hearing the lion roar, Man Man, Shaosi and all the others on the nine dragons chariot fainted. They were not the targets of the roar, but they did glance at the golden lion head. Their souls couldn't absorb the power of the lion roar, and therefore, their bodies fell unconscious to protect their souls from being crushed.

In an area tens of thousands of miles in radius, only Ji Hao managed to stay conscious. Sitting face to face with Priest Hua, he learned all the secrets about the 'Lion Roar'.

The sunlight shone, as the giant golden lion head quietly floated in the sky. An upright, strong, and sacred power suffused the air. The space was shattered by the Priest Hua's lion roar, and at this moment, this area was sealed up temporarily, becoming a small world.

Priest Hua sat on a colorful cloud, with is scrawny face covered in bitterness.

He quietly and blandly looked at Ji Hao. Right now, he seemed to care no more. He looked at Ji Hao from head to toe, and a long while later, he sighed slowly an said, "Why can my friend Yu Yu have such an excellent disciple?"

"I am flattered." Ji Hao humbly cupped his hands and responded, "Priest Hua, you are an eldership of mine, and you flatter me. I am truly not a great cultivator."

Ji Hao was never afraid of Priest Hua when the latter was hysterical, evil, cruel, hypocritical, and greedy. But he was indeed afraid of Priest Hua when he was careless, bland, and mysterious like this. The feeling that Priest Hua had been giving him right now was even as mystical as the universe itself.

Somehow, Ji Hao felt that this Priest Hua before his eyes was the true Priest Hua, and the true Priest Hua was undoubtedly scary. Being stared at by the true, scary Priest Hua, Ji Hao sensed a coldness from his bones.

Therefore, Ji Hao hurriedly said bad things abut himself, "I am greedy. I have desires, many desires. I want to be rich, I want powers, and I want to be immortal. I never thought about leaving the mortal world, focusing on my cultivation. I may have improved a bit, but that's all because of my good Shifu, elderships in my sect, and my brothers and sisters. It has completely nothing to do with myself."

"Greediness, desires!" Priest Hua smiled. Smilingly, he nodded and said, "These are the original motivation for all cultivators to pursue the great Dao of nature. Otherwise, why are we pursuing immortal lives? Why do we want to be free? Why do we chase after the mysterious, unpredictable, great Dao of nature, even by doing things against our true hearts?"

"I am very greedy, and so is my brother!" Priest Hua pointed at the sky and started telling his story. At the moment, he looked gentle and mild, completely different from the Priest Hua, that Ji Hao was familiar with. "But we are not the only greedy ones. Aren't your Shifu and his two brothers greedy? The one behind us, our Shifu, who is known as the man closest to the great Dao of nature, you can ask him if he also has endless greed and desire in his heart!"

Breathing deeply, Priest Hua continued slowly, "I was a lotus, and my brother was a linden tree. We were parasites on Pan Gu's amniotic sac. Back in the Chaos, life wasn't easy. Those creatures, which were born powerful with the abilities of flying and running, ninety-nine percent of them died. My brother and I couldn't move, couldn't talk, but brother Pan Gu looked after as. Because of him, we survived in the Chaos, in the endless time."

"Later on, brother Pan Gu created the world. He shared his

natural reward power with us, with which, we were able to transform into human shapes, able to talk, move, and protect ourselves."

"I was a lotus. I had no worry, no fear, no emotion, no desire. When I transformed into a human shape for the first time, I saw brother Pan Gu being attacked by millions and millions of Chaos creatures, and then die. I was frightened... I was worried. After that, I started to have endless greed and desires. I am afraid of death; I want to live forever... I want the greatest powers and the final result of the great Dao. I want the eternity."

"But I made a mistake. I fell into the hands of sky devils." With a faint smile, Priest Hua lowered his heart ad looked at the colorful flame in his heart, then continued, "Live? Die? This is my trial. If I survive, I will grow stronger, but if I don’t..."

Sighing slightly, Priest Hua looked around and said in a deep voice, "This is such a beautiful world, but I haven’t taken a good look at it. Ah, forget it. At the moment, I have no disciple to inherit my power. I can barely suppress Great Freedom, but not for long. My Dao, cannot end here."

"My Dao, ‘evolvement’. Developing, changing, generating, without an end; it can lead you to ‘variation’, to ‘multiplicity’, to ‘wideness’. Therefore, my Dao is immeasurable to the others. My disciples are all powerful and capable, but none of them can attain the Dao of mine."

Sighing again, Priest Hua pointed at Ji Hao with his right forefinger.

Before Ji Hao could react, a misty light spot was sent into Ji Hao’s forehead from Priest Hua’s fingertip.

A pure, sweet, and refreshing aroma spread into Ji Hao’s spiritual space. Surrounded by his four embryos of Dao, a transparent figure emerged quietly, with a constantly changing, colorful luster.

All of a sudden, this figure turned clear and solid, looking like a diamond statue. This figure was far clearer than Ji Hao’s embryos of the great Dao of sun and the extreme negative, which were his strongest two embryos of Dao.

Chapter 1246: Sum Up

Sighing slightly, Priest Hua gave a complicated glance at Ji Hao, then all the lotus petals folded back together, and he disappeared abruptly. Ji Hao had no way to find out where he went to resist the erosion from Great Freedom.

"How lucky you are!" In his spiritual space, the mysterious man showed up. Lowering his head, the mysterious man’s eyes shone with a bright blue light as he carefully observed Ji Hao’s new embryo of Dao.

"Lucky?" Ji Hao had lost his eyesight temporarily, his body softened. Silently, he was even cursing Priest Hua. All that Priest Hua had learned about the great Dao of evolvement ever since he was still a lotus, growing in the Chaos, was forcibly ‘injected’ into Ji Hao’s body, to form a new embryo of Dao. This new embryo of Dao knew everything that Priest Hua knew regarding his great Dao. It had all Priest Hua’s power, his secret magic, and his final results of the great Dao. It had everything that belonged to Priest Hua. As a direct result, Ji Hao’s primordial spirit power was drained by this new embryo of Dao.

Every embryo of Dao of Ji Hao needed his primordial spirit power. Simply speaking, his embryos of Dao needed to be nourished by his primordial spirit. If one compared embryos of Dao to fruits, the primordial spirit would be the tree. Only when the tree was strong and healthy enough, it could grow large and juicy fruits. This new ‘fruit’ Priest Hua gave Ji Hao was way too large, and Ji Hao’s primordial spirit couldn’t even afford it.

This embryo of Dao of evolvement was already mature, and Ji Hao’s primordial spirit power was drained already. At the moment, in Ji Hao’s body, no primordial spirit power was left for him to use. Therefore, he couldn’t benefit himself from the embryo of Dao of evolvement, not even a little bit.

He didn’t have enough energy to control his own body now, nor cast any magic based on the great Dao of sun or the extreme negative.

Priest Hua might seem to have given Ji Hao so much, but in fact, he pushed Ji Hao into trouble. If Ji Hao were an average cultivator, the embryo of Dao of evolvement would become his deathly burden. With that embryo of Dao, he wouldn’t be able to use his primordial spirit power anymore; he wouldn’t be able to think or move, and at last, he would fall into an everlasting sleep. In this way, Ji Hao would become a storage, for Priest Hua to preserve his powers and Dao.

Perhaps, Priest Mu or a disciple of Priest Hua would find Ji Hao, and then take back everything belonged to Priest Hua...

After that, Ji Hao would finally have a chance to wake up. But, one must remember that the embryo of Dao of evolvement was generated by Ji Hao’s primordial spirit power. Therefore, after it was taken out of his body, Ji Hao’s primordial spirit would suffer a great loss. As a result, his cultivation might be downgraded by a few levels, and in worse cases, his primordial spirit might even collapse.

"How could Priest Hua give me all this for no reason? He knew that I couldn’t withstand his great Dao of evolvement. He made me keep his Dao for him, in case he dies in Great Freedom’s hands...In the meanwhile, he disabled me by doing this, easily taking out a major enemy for his disciples."

An extremely pure original soul power had been flowing out of the five-colored cauldron, into Ji Hao’s spiritual space like an endless river, being absorbed by his red sun primordial spirit and his five embryos of Dao.

Gradually, Ji Hao could feel his body again. The darkness before his eyes faded slowly, as his body and powers were all back under control.

"Unfortunately Priest Hua, you don't know that I have such a powerful treasure inside me. Eighteen 'Zun'-level sky devils, over ten-thousand regular sky devils, and tens of thousands of disciples of yours..." Ji Hao stood up slowly, with a faintly visible, seven-colored lotus spinning in each of his eyes.

The seven-colored lotus had tens of thousands of petals which glowed with a mystical light. When the lotus appeared in his eyes, the power vibration released from his body suddenly turned faintly sensible, as if he had merged with the entire universe. Through every single move of his, Ji Hao sensed a response from the universe itself.

In a way, Ji Hao had now become another Priest Hua, because he had all the results of Priest Hua's great Dao. But, he was only an awfully weakened Priest Hua. After all, the real Priest Hua was far more powerful than him. Not to mention the fact that even through Ji Hao now had all Priest Hua's results of great Dao, it still required an immeasurably long period of time for him to absorb it all.

"If he knew that I can already move again, would he still give me all this?" Ji Hao stretched his limbs, and asked the mysterious man while laughing.

Remaining silent for a short while, the mysterious man murmured, "Kid, you are way too lucky. Unreasonably lucky. But this makes sense somehow."

"Eh? Are you saying that I am supposed to be so lucky?" asked Ji Hao curiously.

The mysterious man didn't answer this question. Instead, he continued murmuring to himself, "Priest Hua, Priest Mu, they were only two drifting seeds in the Chaos in the beginning. They had an incredibly strong power of creation and thriving life-force. Therefore, they were almost eaten by those ferocious Chaos creatures many times. They looked after each other and suffered

through countless disasters.

"Later on, they drifted to Pan Gu, who was not yet born. Pan Gu found those two pitiful seeds, and allowed them to root on his amniotic sac. Nourished by a trace of Pan Gu's spirit blood power, they began to grow, and became a linden tree and a lotus with ten-thousand petals."

"The tree was stable, while the lotus was variable. Not to mention their natures, the friendship between them and Pan Gu was profound...Therefore, after witnessing Pan Gu's death, they changed."

"Eh?" Ji Hao exclaimed out of curiosity.

"They always believed that they were true brothers with Pan Gu...The dragons, phoenixes, human beings, those prehistorical creatures, and even Yu Yu, Dachi and Qing Wei, those were later generations...They don't like Dachi, Qing Wei, and Yu Yu."

"The dragon-kind inherited Pan Gu's body, the phoenix-kind inherited Pan Gu's soul, and human beings inherited Pan Gu's bloodline and wisdom...Dachi, Qing Wei, Yu Yu, they were generated from a trace of Pan Gu's true spirit after Pan Gu's soul faded away. Priest Hua and Priest Mu, they hate all of them."

Sighing slightly, the mysterious man disappeared, but his long and deep sigh lingered in Ji Hao's spiritual space, "Their hearts changed, and so did their methods. If they didn't take the initiative to gang up with those sky devils, how could the lotus be entrapped? Great Freedom has planted a seed in him. Unroot it? Hehe!"

Nothing could be heard from the mysterious man anymore.

The original soul power released from the cauldron grew stronger and stronger. It gradually became a torrent, and rapidly flew into Ji Hao's red sun primordial spirit.

The dim red sun was nourished, glowing brighter and brighter.

The five embryos of Dao were nourished as well, becoming clearer to look more like real human beings. Especially the strongest one, the embryo of Dao of evolvement, it had even been walking around in Ji Hao’s spiritual space like a true human being. With every step it made, a golden lotus would be left behind him.

"Wonderful!" Ji Hao straightened his body and waved his hands.

All of a sudden, within the area ten-million-miles in radius, thin golden light beams descended from the sky and struck on the head of all water-kind creatures, burning them into ashes.

Chapter 1247: Meeting Again After A Long Separation

Priest Hua's great Dao was the Dao of evolvement, which was also the Dao of variation, of creation. All in all, Priest Hua's Dao was the summation of all 'unstable' Dao in Pan Gu world; it was inclusive, and was the foundational Dao of the development of Pan Gu world.

Attaining Priest Hua's results of Dao, Ji Hao fell into a strange, half-asleep, half-awake state. In his spiritual space, the embryo of Dao of evolvement was shining like the ancient moon, illuminating the entire space like an ice mirror. All his thoughts and ideas were concentrated on this ice mirror. He was thinking with it, and the most of his life-force was absorbed by it.

With nothing else but his unreasonably strong physical body, he instinctively controlled the nine dragons chariot, then flashed across the space with the power of the golden bridge. He felt nothing, no happiness, anger, or sadness; all emotions had faded away. At the moment, Ji Hao was like a puppet, a walking dead.

On the rapidly flowing, turbid river, ninety-nine spirit white-dragons sealed the river water with enormous chains, blocking the way of a flood control troop. Ji Hao drove the nine dragons chariot and descended from the sky. The ninety-nine white dragons raised mountain-huge waves and attacked with their combined power.

Through that ice mirror in his spirit space, Ji Hao saw every single move made by those white dragons. Like a gust of wind, he darted between all kinds of weapons wielded by those dragons airily, while easily throwing heavy punches onto their lower bellies, shattering their spirit Dan. Every spirit Dan was gained through years of severe cultivation. The ninety-nine spirit white dragons transformed back to their original forms and roared towards the sky, then captured by the flood-control troop.

On a boundless lake, thousands of giant boas raised the waves. Under the lead of around ten Xiang Liu snakes, they had been devouring human beings.

Ji Hao came all the way to help. Flicking his fingers, he cast thousands of different type of magic within a single second. Every boa and Xiang Liu snake was hit by a different magic. They were all killed instantaneously, with only their enormous bodies left as the food of the flood-control troop.

On top of a magnificent mountain range, large groups of water-kind creatures built a great city, which extended for tens of thousands of miles. With the high altitude, they blocked tens of violently flooding rivers, and the flood-control troops.

Ji Hao received a message and came over in a rush. Standing high in the sky, he clenched his fingers towards the mountain range and flattened it. Within a blink of an eye, the mountain range became a tiny grain of sand and disappeared in his palm. Millions of water-kind creatures were swallowed by the five-colored cauldron along with the mountain range. All water-kind creatures were burned out, both their bodies and souls. There were no survivors at all.

Rushing and slaughtering, Ji Hao's hands were stained by blood, while screams and howls could be heard from every corner of Midland. Midland was vast, and flood-control troops that had encountered problems sent messages to Ji Hao to ask for help from every area. Ji Hao never rested, and was alway on the run. He had no time to eat, nor to sleep. Wherever he reached, nothing happened but slaughter, crazy, merciless slaughter.

Time flew by. Years passed in a blink of an eye.

Ji Hao had always been busy rushing about in Midland. He killed countless evil beings, and saved incalculable human beings. In the eyes of water-kind spirit creatures, Ji Hao was already the scariest devil in the world, but in the eyes of human beings, Ji Hao was just like Si Wen Ming, because they both saved lives and gave chances.

Led by Si Wen Ming, flood-control troops had already dredged and connected ninety-nine percent water veins in Midland. When the last few, which were also the most important channels, were connected, it would be the completion of Si Wen Ming's great flood-control plan.

All the floodwater in Midland would flow into the Final Land, and would no longer harm human beings. The unwanted moisture coming from the twelve water worlds would also be drawn into the Final Land. The air would start drying, and the flood in the four wastelands would gradually, naturally fade.

In addition to that, when the strong water power started gathering in Midland from the four wastelands, the four wastelands would be dragged towards Midland by the water power, like giant liners on an ocean. Soon, the four continents in Pan Gu world would merge into one!

This day, Ji Hao drove the nine dragons chariot and flashed across the sky. Abruptly, Si Wen Ming called his name from down below.

"Ji Hao! Long time no see! Come down and have some water! Haha! Only nine channels are left! Our work is going to be completed!"

Standing on the chariot, Ji Hao's face was bland and expressionless. But on hearing Si Wen Ming, that ice mirror quietly melted in his spiritual space. Afterward, all kinds of thoughts and emotions surged out from the deepest area of his primordial spirit.

From his cold and stiff body, which was like a dead tree, a thriving life-force was generated. Ji Hao rolled his eyeballs, then shook his head hard, and landed the chariot. Wielding his broad sleeve, the chariot disappeared. Treading on a fiery cloud, Ji Hao looked down.

"Phew!" Man Man, Shaosi and the others had been rushing about,

fighting and slaughtering with Ji Hao restlessly for years. They also had blood on their hands, and their eyes were also bland. But following Ji Hao's moves, life-force sparkled in their eyes too.

Following a series of metal-clangs, a Jia Clan battle king standing beside Ji Hao loosened his hands and let his heavy sword fall from the sky, smashing thunderously on the ground. This powerful battle king looked at his ten twitching fingers, then raised his head while gazing at the sky. "What time is it? These years...The killing was so exhausting." He murmured to himself.

"Ah, I'm starving! I want to eat, I want to sleep!" Man Man dropped her pair of hammers, lied straight on the fiery cloud, and immediately fell asleep.

"I'm a bit tired too, really." Shaosi smilingly sat beside Man Man, with her eyelids constantly dropping. But, she forced herself to not sleep. Her eyes were still fixed on Ji Hao, full of warmth, even through she still had that bland and exhausted look on her face.

Ji Hao wielded his sleeve again and released a gentle but strong life-force that warmed and nourished his friends, who had also fought like a machine for years. Carrying them with that fiery cloud, Ji Hao slowly landed on the ground.

On a gentle mountainside, countless scrawny human warriors with ragged clothes were sitting on the ground, resting. Surrounding them were a group of women, who were also skinny. They raised bonfires and boiled soups in broken clay pots.

While laughing, Si Wen Ming walked to Ji Hao with big steps. He had a ragged piece of hide wrapped around his waist, baring his upper body. His skin was pale as the belly of a dead fish. He still had hair, but no fine hair, which were all soaked off by the water.

"Uncle!" Ji Hao gasped for air. He was such a strong man now, but still, he felt like he was swallowing sand. Even after trying pretty hard for a while, he failed to secrete any saliva to moisten his throat.

Calling out ‘uncle’, Ji Hao couldn’t help but let out a strange noise from his throat because of the dryness. He couldn’t say one more word.

"Ji Hao! You must be exhausted these years!" Si Wen Ming walked up to Ji Hao smilingly. He was not walking steadily. Even as a Divine Magus, he nearly stumbled and fell to the ground. Fortunately, Ji Hao held him up.

They gave each other a giant hug, then Ji Hao grinned, looked at Si Wen Ming, and smiled, shaking his head as he said, "I’m good... I’m still alive!"

Si Wen Ming nodded heavily and responded, "Alive is good!"

Chapter 1248: The Nine Water Gates

The rain was heavy. In one's line of sight, one could see countless streams of water pouring down from the sky.

The rain seemed to know that human beings were only a breath away from the final success. Therefore, the storm was crazily strong, many times stronger than two years ago. Heavy curtains of rain smashed down from the sky, seeming to even suffocate all living beings.

The mountainside that people were resting on was protected by a formation. An invisible screen blocked the rain. It was still awfully cold and humid, but a lot better than other places. Wet firewood was slowly dried by the bonfires. Amidst dense smoke, the flames grew stronger and stronger. A few iron pots were hanging above the fires, and the tea was boiling.

Everyone was holding a large clay bowl with breaches and cracks. On higher or lower positions, they all sat on the ground together. They poured the thick and hot tea into their mouth, and let the warmth spread in their stomach. Smiles emerged on everyone's face — The aroma of tea made them believe that they were truly alive.

Ji Hao sat side by side with Si Wen Ming, on a wet log, surrounded by many of his friends.

Huaxu Lie, Lie Mountain Kang, and many princes who chose to support Si Wen Ming, and family ministers from You Chong Clan... Everyone was sallow, completely exhausted. Some of them were princes from super clans and families, some were earls and marquises with ordinary family backgrounds, while some were commanders. They were all respected ones at high positions, but right now, they looked even more miserable than beggars.

Ji Hao even saw a floating grass coiled in Huaxu Lie's hair, and a tiny frog squatting on Lie Mountain Kang's head. These two

princes were supposed to be the ones to be taken care of, but at the moment, they didn't even have to time to clean themselves. They were sitting on the moist ground, gulping tea like two old farmers.

These years, Ji Hao let his mind sink into the embryo of Dao of evolvement, trying to understand and absorb the immeasurable great Dao possessed by it. He left a small part of his spirit t control his body, but still, he heard many stories about Si Wen Ming and his followers.

In one story about Si Wen Ming, he passed by his home three times, but never went in...Ji Hao clearly knew that 'three' was an unreal number. Si Wen Ming had been rushing around between Pu Ban City and all the 'battlefields'; he passed by his own home countless times, but he never went back to that home, not even to take a single, short glance.

Before the flood, he married Tushan Princess, and days later, Tushan Princess got pregnant. Years had passed until now, yet Si Wen Ming didn't even have the time to take a look at his son, who could already run.

Tasting the bitter tea, Ji Hao glanced at Si Wen Ming.

Si Wen Ming was wearing nothing but that ragged piece of hide. His body was covered in scratches and bite wounds. A few large wounds were left by venoms, but more scarily, a bowl-sized piece of his left thigh was bitten off, and his right rib area was deeply dented. At least three ribs of his were missing.

Si Wen Ming was a Divine Magus, who was supposed to be able to regrow a body from a single drop of blood. Reasonably, no wound should be left on his body at all.

"Uncle, your wounds?" Ji Hao was shocked. Looking at Si Wen Ming's wounds, then glancing at Huaxu Lie and Lie Mountain Kang, who were also covered in injuries, Ji Hao couldn't even imagine what they had been through in the past two years, and how many battles they had fought when they rushed all over

Midland.

Ji Hao was protected by the Pan Gu bell and the Taiji cloak. He also had supreme treasures like the nine dragons chariot and the golden bridge. No ordinary living being could easily hurt him. Therefore, these years, no wound managed to find a place on Ji Hao's body.

But, Si Wen Ming and his followers were not as lucky as him.

"Ah, nothing!" Si Wen Ming laughed with a dry voice, then carelessly shook his head and said, "Hm, under Gong Gong's command, many powerful beings existed aside of the eight senior ministers. Their curses are not easy to deal with...But, when the flood is gone, I'll fix all these in a few years. These are nothing.

Ji Hao clicked his lips, then took out a calabash-full of magic pills and put it in Si Wen Ming's hands.

"Uncle, you know that apart from those tutors of mine in the Magi Palace, I have another Shifu. These healing and life-saving pills are really good." Ji Hao gave Si Wen Ming all Priest Dachi's magic pills he had. These pills didn't mean too much to him. After all, he was almost impossible to be hurt now. But to Si Wen Ming his followers, every single pill could mean a life.

"Hmm, thank you then! I'll take these." Glancing at Ji Hao, then at Huaxu Lie, Lie Mountain Kang, and his other followers, Si Wen Ming accepted the calabash with a bright smile.

A strong woman walked over, carrying a wooden bucket containing a warm meat soup. In the soup were fist-sized water-kind beast meat pieces.

Si Wen Ming grinned and waved his hands, then told everyone to start eating. A thousand miles away in the east, thunderous, muffled battle drums suddenly echoed to the clouds. The aggressive drum vibrated the water surface and raised three-thousand-meter tall waves, roaring over like a giant water wall.

Under the mountainside, hundreds of human warriors leaped into the sky. They were also scrawny, with ragged clothes, but they wielded their weapons strongly. They roared like beasts while launching hacks. Hundreds of arc-shaped, sharp airstreams swished out, and cut the water wall into pieces.

"Woo-ha!" Following a thunderous growl, a bright beam of light darted up to the sky from the dark series of mountains in the front. A dense dark cloud spread in the sky, from which, a, hundreds of miles wide black snakehead abruptly reached out.

That enormous snake cast a glance at Si Wen Ming with a frigid look, then shouted with a hissing voice, "Human beings...Lord Gong Gong knows what you have been doing. You dredged water channels. Through the most importantly nine water gates, you will eventually draw the flood into the Final Land, right?"

"This is Kui Gate, hehe! The first of your most important nine water gates!" The enormous snake let out its fork-tongue and continued viciously, "We decided to not fight you over the other water areas! We have gathered all of our powers in the nine final water gates!"

"I am Black Water Serpent, the commander of Lord Gong Gong's vanguard unit! I am responsible for guarding this Kui Gate!" The dark serpent opened its jaws and released a dark stream of poisonous water, then roared coldly, "If you have no fear of death, come!"

Si Wen Ming dropped his clay bowl and stood up, seriously looking at that mountain area.

"As I thought, I cannot underestimate Gong Gong and his followers. My flood-control plan, I guess they know about it." said Si Wen Ming blandly, "The other areas don't matter now. I think we'll have to risk our lives for the final nine water gates."

Ji Hao raised his eyebrows and snorted, then stood up and said, "Uncle, only nine places left? Then, I don't have to dart all over the

Midland to deal with emergencies...Kui Gate, the first gate, leave it to me."

Ji Hao continued while smiling, "Black Water Serpent Clan is an old enemy of our Gold Crow Clan!"

Chapter 1249: Gong Gong's Determination

In the heaven, a great hall...

Yemo Tian slantingly and lazily lied in the arms of a group of beautiful clam girls. While rubbing those girls' bodies with both his hands, he was chewing a divine fruit picked up from the orchard in the heaven. In the meanwhile, he was laughing teasingly, "Are they finished just like that? Those water-kind creatures fought with instincts. An army like this is so fragile!"

Swallowing the juicy fruit, Yemo Tian proudly showed the whites of his eyes, sneered coldly and continued, "If you stick with my plan and let me activate my invincible destructive weapon, they'd be all gone after one single 'boom'!"

Dishi Cha and Gong Gong stood in the middle of the hall, seriously looking at the images showing on a divine mirror in front of them. They pretended to hear nothing from Yemo Tian. Neither of them prepared to respond.

In the divine mirror, the water was sparkling, while images flashed swiftly, showing Gong Gong and Dishi Cha how Ji Hao killed the leaders of all water-kind armies and wiped out those water-kind armies one after another in the past few years.

Thousands of enormous water-kind spirit creatures were killed or captured by Ji Hao. Millions and millions were slaughtered by Ji Hao right on the spot, showing their original forms, being cut into pieces by human warriors to be consumed as food.

Similar images flashed across the mirror over and over again. Every single time the fiery light shone, Ji Hao descended from the sky with his warriors and friends. By simply turning around his palm, he defeated the leader of the water-kind army. Then, by waving his hands, he slaughtered a giant group of water-kind creatures. If the water-kind army was large enough and a considerable number of water-kind creatures managed to escape,

what happened next would be a hunting game played by Ji Hao and his people.

"So cruel." Gong Gong held his hands behind his body and looked at Ji Hao in the mirror as he murmured, "This kid seems to grow more and more powerful."

"The power of one single person can change nothing." Standing by Gong Gong's side, Dishi Cha laughed relaxedly and said, "Although your armies had suffered great damages, you are still at an advantage, aren't you?

Gong Gong smiled and held his head high, looking at the other side of the hall.

Yu Ancestor sat in a deep pool, his legs crossed, at the end of the great hall. A strong water power had been gathering from all directions, flowing into the pool. Twenty-seven fire-red Yu, each over three-hundred-meters-long, were lying quietly around Yu Ancestor. Under the body of each Yu was a round-shaped, cold-jade altar.

A bone-piercing cold power had been releasing from those altars, speedily drilling into the bodies of those Yu. Above the bodies of the twenty-seven Yu were twenty-seven tall and strong figures, misty, dark-blue, condensed from watery mists.

Gong Gong waved his hands. A map of water veins in Midland showed up behind him. He turned around, facing this enormous map. While sneering, Gong Gong looked at those rivers on the map, which were lit up one after another.

"Look, look at these. What a great move!" Pointing at those sparkling rivers, Gong Gong snorted coldly and said, "Si Xi's 'ten-thousand dragons sealing the water' was already amazing in my opinion...I never thought that this kid, Si Wen Ming, could be even better than his dead father."

"Dredging the water channels in Midland, forcibly drawing the

flood and the water power in the world into the Final Land in the east." Raising his arms high, Gong Gong growled towards the sky, "Si Wen Ming is smart and capable, while Ji Hao is so powerful...If they were both willing to follow me, how marvelous would that be?"

Dishi Cha's mouth corners twitched, as a taunting sneer flashed across his face, but disappearing immediately.

'If Si Wen Ming and Ji Hao were both willing to follow you, then your Gong Gong Family would be too powerful...' Dishi Cha quickly glanced at Yemo Tian and thought, "If that happened, Yemo Tian's destructive weapon would be used on you, wouldn't it?'

Snorting coldly, Gong Gong pointed his finger heavily on the farthest east on that map, without taking a glance at Dishi Cha. One fist-sized blue light spot lit up immediately.

"Those useless things have all died...Fine! Don't I know that? Si Wen Ming wants to draw the flood into the Final Land, which means he has to go through these nine water gates. Kui Gate, Gui Gate, Dui Gate..."

"Those human beings will run out of their last bit energy in these nine water gates." said Gong Gong coldly, "Including those old things... I want them all to be exhausted in these nine water gates, until my Gong Gong Family gives them the last strike!"

Once again, Gong Gong glanced at Yu Ancestor, sitting in that pool.

Dishi Cha smiled and said with a gentle voice, "Of course, Dear Lord Gong Gong. As your loyal friend, I will try my best to cooperate with you. We will turn the nine final water gates into their graves."

Spreading his hands, Dishi Cha continued in that mild tone, "So, are you preparing to send out those people from the Divine Origin

Pool? To be honest, forcibly waking them up right now will be truly wasteful. Those divine gods, they are not yet completely...‘ripe’!"

"I can’t wait. Wake them up!" said Gong Gong loudly, "This is the final battle. I have to make some preparations. Zhu Rong might also step in. The natural environment is extremely helpful to my Gong Gong Family now, but Zhu Rong cannot be underestimated. We have to gather all our powers, and no waste is allowed!"

Dishi Cha took a slow glance at Gong Gong, then slowly nodded and responded, "Let’s wake them up then. Although they are not yet completely ‘ripe’, as ‘divine gods’ in this world, they are all very powerful."

Gong Gong held his hands behind his body, quietly and carefully looking at the map for a rather long while. He then turned around and looked at that sparkling divine mirror. Pointing out his finger, the mirror shone brighter and showed a bloody battlefield.

The waves seemed even to drown the sky. The storm was destructive. Centered around a broken city, countless human warriors had been fighting against countless water-kind creatures. The endless water-kind army marched over from the north and raised giant waves, violently smashing on the city.

Large groups of human warriors with shattered armors trod on rafts, roaring hoarsely and fighting desperately.

"These people, they disabled my warriors from the twelve water worlds from making a single step to the south." sighed Gong Gong slightly. "Human beings are truly terrifying. But, that’s it. Eventually, we will win."

Looking in the mirror for a long while, Gong Gong said in a deep voice, "You...go down too. Guard the nine water gates well, and kill as many human beings as you can. Slow them down as much as possible, drain their blood...After it’s done, I promise that you will no longer be the slaves of my family. In the future, when my Gong

Gong Family rules the world, you will all be satisfied."

Standing on a corner of the hall, Wuzhi Qi, Xiang Liu, Kun Peng, and a few other senior ministers glanced at each other, then bowed to Gong Gong. They all transformed into sharp beams of light and darted out of the heaven.

Chapter 1250: Dark Water Yao Yao

All Streams to The Final Land great formation, reaching the stage of the nine final water gates, it was almost completed.

On both sides of the Kui Gate, the mountains were towering and cliffy, like an enormous study wall, firmly blocking the vast water. Tens of thousands of different sized rivers had merged into an ocean. The enormous waves fiercely slapped the cliff of the Kui Gate. Pushed by fierce undercurrents, countless whirlpools bumped against the cliff like bombs. Every time when a whirlpool shattered, the explosive sound would be as loud as ten-thousand bombs going off together.

Facing the dreadful flood, Kui Gate remained perfectly stable. Si Wen Ming dredged the water channels in Midland with the great formation called ‘All Streams to The Final Land’. While the endless water power in the air was being drawn away, the great formation was also affecting the flowing directions of the underground natural meridians.

Drawn by the great formation, the earth power was also drawing to the nine water gates in the east. In the past few years, nourished constantly by the pure and thriving earth power, the thousands of meters tall mountains on both sides of Kui Gate had been growing rapidly like bamboo shoots in spring nights. Within a couple of years, the mountains had reached thousands of miles high. From the foot of the mountains, no ordinary people could see the mountaintops. These mountains now even looked like the magnificent Buzhou Mountain, the fallen Sky Pillar.

These mountains had become hundred-times harder than the best steel, full of pure earth power. Dark Clouds blocked the sunshine, and the world was dark. But, these mountains shone with a bright, dark-yellow light in the darkness, like giant dark yellow jade pieces. Through the translucent rock, one could see streams of earth power flowing, twisting like oddly shaped

dragons, while enormous natural spell symbols flashed across from time to time.

The nine water gates were the keys of the All Streams to The Final Land great formation. In order to connect the nine water gates with the main formation, Si Wen Ming and his people had to not just deal with the strong water-kind armies stationed in the nine areas under Gong Gong's order. Merely breaking these strangely hard mountains and creating paths broad enough to allow the water to flow through was never an easy thing to achieve.

Treading on a fiery cloud, Ji Hao faced the Kui Mountain, less than a hundred miles away. He spread his spirit power and carefully scanned across both sides of the gate.

A sizzling noise could be heard without an end. Ji Hao concentrated his spirit power, drilling into the mountains and clashing against the crystalline, highly concentrated earth power inside the mountain intensively. Dazzling fire sparkles were generated from the tens of thousands of miles long mountain range, while a dazzling light shone from the mountain.

Snorting slightly, Ji Hao took three steps backward.

He sensed a piercing pain from his forehead. His red sun primordial spirit and the five embryos of Dao were all weak and powerless. Silently, Ji Hao was shocked again by Si Wen Ming, who designed this great formation and almost completed it. It was so amazing. Aside from dealing with the flood, this formation also gathered all the earth power in Midland on the nine water gates. Ji Hao bumped against the Kui Gate with his spirit power, by doing which, he was almost challenging all the earth power in the entire Midland with his very own power. Not to mention the fact that Ji Hao had only managed to absorb less than one percent of the original souls of the eighteen 'Zun'-level sky devils and the over ten-thousand regular sky devils so far, even if he did absorb them all, he could not possibly win against the entire Midland, which

was the core continent among all five in the Pan Gu world.

"Impressive!" Ji Hao sighed in praise. This great formation created by Si Wen Ming was truly amazing.

Based on Ji Hao's current knowledge, nourished by the earth power from the entire Midland, the nine water gates would certainly become the nine top-grade rich areas in the future. If one used these nine areas well, countless great treasures could be produced.

Ji Hao couldn't tell for sure if Si Wen Ming designed the formation in this way on purpose, or this just happened luckily. If Si Wen Ming designed it in this way from the beginning, his accomplishment in the sphere of magic formation must be way beyond many people's imaginations!

The turbid waves rolled under Ji Hao's feet as countless whirlpools squeezed together. A strong suction force attacked from down below, as if thousands of enormous mouths were waiting down there to swallow Ji Hao. A sharp gust of wind screamed ear-piercingly around Ji Hao's body, ruffling his Taiji cloak and causing a loud noise.

Ji Hao stood in midair, surrounded by a devil-like, dreadful power vibration. Thousand-miles around him, not even a drop of rain could fall. No fire was burning on his body, but this whole area was scorching hot, such that all the rainwater was evaporated, far before it could fall from the sky.

Standing a hundred miles away was the Kui Gate.

A thin chasm existed between two towering mountains, thousand-miles-tall, and less than three-hundred-meters wide. This was the Kui Gate. It was not small, but in comparison with the entire All Streams to the Final Land formation, it was like a tiny crack. To make the great formation work, the Kui Gate must be expanded to at least eight-hundred-miles-wide, to let the flood go through. Only in this way could the floodwater be drained off

from Midland.

A dark cloud quietly floated before the Kui Gate, ten miles high from the water surface. Black Water Serpent coiled on the dark cloud like a mountain. He narrowed his eyes and looked at Ji Hao from head to toe. Abruptly, he let out a sharp stream of venom and yelled, "Kid, are you Marquis Yao Ji Hao? I heard about you from my kids. You are from Southern Wasteland, the Fire Crow Clan. I think there is some hatred between your clan and mine, right?"

Ji Hao shook his head, smiled, and cupped his hands as he bowed to the Black Water Serpent. Judging by the serpent's enormous body shape, he should be a powerful being who had lived since the prehistorical era. He might even be the very first black water serpent in the world. Ji Hao never minded being polite enough towards ancient, powerful living beings like this, even though he was a deadly enemy.

"Today, we shall only talk about official business, instead of anything personal. What do you think?" Ji Hao grinned and said to the serpent, "If anyone from Dark Water Serpent Clan in Southern Wasteland doesn't like me, just come to kill me. But, does that clan have any...Divine Magus?"

Ji Hao grinned again, proudly and slyly.

The serpent's face twitched, while a light of anger flashed across his eyes. Dark Water Serpent Clan in the Southern Wasteland was only a small branch clan, and Senior Magi were peak-level forces of that clan...Divine Magi? Not to mention Divine Magi, how many years hadn't those people seen a Magus King?

"Master Elder, let me cut off Marquis Yao's head!" A dark-skinned, bald and muscular man trod on a stream of water and flew down. He was half-naked, with nothing else but a piece of hide tied around his waist. Coldly staring at Ji Hao, the man said blandly, "Those boys in theSouthern Wasteland are weak, but no matter how, they share the same origin with us. We cannot let

anyone despise them."

The serpent hissed and let out his fork-tongue, then slowly snorted and said, "Go, cut him."

The bald man flew swiftly towards Ji Hao. From a long distance away, he pulled out a strangely shaped blade, bared his teeth, and laughed, "Marquis Yao, I, Dark Water Yao Yao, is the man who will kill you."

Tens of watery clouds descended immediately from above the Kui Gate. Standing on each cloud was a strong dark-skinned man. Seeing Dark Water Yao Yao almost darting up to Ji Hao, those men cursed out together, disappointedly waving their fists.

Chapter 1251: Hit Below the Belt

Dark Water Yao Yao approached rapidly.

Ji Hao stared at him, not being careless at all. He glanced at that eight-feet-long, thumb-wide, paper-thin, and cyan-blue blade held in his hand, with extra vigilance. The oddly-shaped and colored blade emitted a sweet aroma once it was pulled out. Something was not right about it.

The power vibration released from Dark Water Yao Yao was sharp and aggressive. As he approached Ji Hao, the blood scent coming from his body grew stronger and stronger. When he was less than ten miles away from Ji Hao, a hundred-miles-long stream of blood-red mist had already puffed out from his head. Within the sticky and stinky mist, countless twisted faces were faintly visible. Obviously, these were the souls of human beings killed by Dark Water Yao Yao, being sealed in the blood mist with a special magic.

Indeed, Dark Water Yao Yao was a spirit serpent who had transformed into his human shape. He was an ‘elite’, who had slaughtered incalculable lives. Carefully sensing the power vibration released from him, Ji Hao ranked him as a ‘top-grade elite’.

To be a so-called ‘elite’ didn’t just require cultivation. These years, Ji Hao killed countless water-kind spirit creatures, especially those from the twelve water worlds, at the levels of Magus King and Divine Magi. They had cultivated themselves long enough, and were all quite powerful.

But, those spirit creatures couldn’t be count as ‘elites’, because they had never been through true deadly fights, and had never rolled on the mountains of corpses and oceans of blood.

Dark Water Yao Yao, right in front of Ji Hao, was a true elite. He was not only as powerful as a peak-level Divine Magus, but was also greatly experienced. He survived countless life-threatening

dangers. Therefore, he was a true elite, one of the most terrifying enemies on battlefields.

"I am Marquis Yao Ji Hao! Under the order of the human emperor, I can be in charge under any occasion. Anyone who dares to go against the flood-control plan of our humankind will be killed!" With a pair of dagger eyes, Ji Hao looked at Dark Water Yao Yao and said coldly, "However, the world is merciful. You have cultivated yourself severely for years, and you didn't attain your power easily. If you are willing to surrender and follow our humankind, serve our humankind for the rest of your life..."

"Be a slave?" Dark Water Yao Yao grinned and opened his mouth. He was no taller than three-meters and two-feet, but all of a sudden, a seven to eight-feet long fork tongue hissed out of his mouth and licked the edge of his blade.

A sticky venom was spread on the blade, and soon seeped into it. The blade shone brighter with the cyan-blue light.

"Marquis Yao, listen carefully. From now on, the human emperor's orders will no longer be followed, because the whole world will be under our lord Gong Gong's control...No, it's Emperor Gong Gong!" Dark Water Yao Yao shook his head and said, "In the future, all human beings will be slaves of our water-kind. Men will work for us like animals, and women will bear our children!"

Dark Water Yao Yao smirked and pointed at Ji Hao with the tip of his blade as he said, "Be slaves, this is your fate!"

Ji Hao took a deep breath and said nothing else. Instead, he slowly raised his Taiji divine sword. He had already brought a Henggong fish under control, and now, he was quite interested in making Dark Water Yao Yao surrender and follow his lead too. After all, Dark Water Yao Yao was a peak-Divine-Magus-level warrior!

Yao Mountain territory was still far from powerful enough.

Stronger the forces he could gather, the better.

But, Dark Water Yao Yao refused to accept Ji Hao's kindness, which left Ji Hao no choice but beat him to the ground, then make him kneel and beg to follow him!

Ji Hao grinned and slightly raised his face, giving a sharp, echoing howl that sounded like a dragon roar. At first, his not so loud voice swept across the water surface like a long needle, faintly audible. But gradually, it grew brighter and brighter, stronger and stronger. The water surface down below was vibrated violently. Struck by Ji Hao's voice, giant waves were raised.

The dark clouds in the sky were shattered by the roar. An enormous cloudy swirl appeared in the sky, immeasurably deep, spinning swiftly. From the swirl, the sunlight poured in, weakly.

This was a something Ji Hao learned from Priest Hua's results of the Dao of evolvement, called the 'Sky Dragon Roar'. The 'Sky Dragon Roar' was not as violent as 'Lion Roar', but it was long-lasting, and was highly lethal to all kinds of evils and spirit beings. In addition to that, it could shake the internal organs of its owner and boost up the thriving life-force. This was a perfect move to attack enemies and strengthen oneself.

Dragons were the strongest scaled creatures. Once Ji Hao cast 'Sky Dragon Roar', Dark Water Yao Yao's look changed instantly. The dense blood-red mist above his head suddenly turned thin and weak, as it was pressed down by thirty miles. The power vibration released from Dark Water Yao Yao's body was also weakened. His cold, merciless eyes were now unfocused, and his face was instinctively twitching.

With a dragon roar, Ji Hao took away Dark Water Yao Yao's confidence.

Laughing out loud, Ji Hao made a step forward as he gripped the hilt of his sword with both hands. The eight-feet-long Taiji divine sword hacked down fiercely, straight towards Dark Water Yao

Yao’s head as it brought up a sharp gust of wind.

Dark Water Yao Yao immediately fixed his unfocused eyes on the sword while stabilizing his disordered power vibration momentarily.

Vibrated by the dragon roar, Dark Water Yao Yao’s blood boiled. But, he was a truly elite fighter; after a resonant howl, he calmed back down. Shaking his fork tongue, he closed his eyes and raised the long blade softly, as if his arm had no bones. All of a sudden, thousands of extremely thin cold light beams dazzled to Ji Hao.

A high pitched roar came out from Dark Water Yao Yao’s throat, "Marquis Yao, you are a human being, and I am a serpent, a black water serpent! Can a human being live longer than a serpent?"

Snakes and serpents had thriving life-forces. Even an ordinary snake could struggle to live for a long span of time after its head was cut off, not to mention a black water serpent, a strong, spirit one like Dark Water Yao Yao.

Dark Water Yao Yao’s life-force was definitely over one hundred times stronger than the life-force of an ordinary Divine Magus. This was not about cultivation. Instead, this was a pure gift.

Ji Hao seemed to hear nothing from Dark Water Yao Yao. The Taiji divine sword hacked down strongly, straight at Dark Water Yao Yao’s head. Ji Hao had no intent to dodge those sharp light beams, and seemed to put up a life-risking fight.

The Taiji cloak glowed with a clear light and transformed into a giant lotus that spun around Ji Hao silently against those sharp blade light beams.

Ji Hao and Dark Water Yao Yao were about to bump into each other, but all of a sudden, they both sensed something.

Bursting with a growl, Ji Hao and Dark Water Yao Yao looked at each other for a short while. They put down their sword and blade, raised their left hands, and each launched a palm move. With the

counterforce caused by this palm stroke, they both drew back swiftly, darting over ten miles away from each other,

Two arrows almost brushed against their bodies, along with an ear-piercing swishing noise, which left two thousands of meters long, frigid beams of light in the air.

The lotus created by the Taiji cloak moved slightly and rolled up the metal arrow that attacked Ji Hao, easily grinding it with a soft yet especially strong power.

Dark Water Yao Yao snorted in pain. The arrowhead sliced across his body, tore apart his skin, and brought out a stream of blood.

"Which stupid thing is attacking from the darkness?!" Dark Water Yao Yao was enraged, growling out loud.

Chapter 1252: Trying to Be The First

Ji Hao wasn't injured. He wasn’t as enraged as Dark Water Yao Yao, but he was indeed angry.

He didn’t know about the arrow that went at Dark Water Yao Yao, but the one that attacked him viciously aimed at his waist. If he were an ordinary human being, he would have been killed already.

People knew Ji Hao as a Divine Magus. A Divine Magus had strong life-force. If the arrow penetrated the waist of Divine Magus, the Divine Magus would just lose some life-force at the most, but his life wouldn’t be threatened. However, things weren’t that simple.

Yi Di was now on Ji Hao’s side. Ji Hao had also introduced Yi Di to Yu Yu, and Yu Yu took Yi Di as a disciple. This meant that Yi Di and Ji Hao were brothers now. The brotherhood between Ji Hao and Yi Di was real and solid. From Yi Di, Ji Hao learned almost all dirty tricks often used by Ten Sun Country people.

The arrow that attacked Ji Hao just now was infused with the saliva of a hook-lip bat, and the resin of poisonous wolf tree. The arrow was highly poisonous, designed especially to pollute the spirit blood of human beings. The arrowhead was made from the ghost face stone, which could only be found eighty-one-thousands miles underground, in places filled with negative energies. Ghost face stone continued an extremely cold power, and was also highly poisonous. Being injured by a ghost face stone arrowhead, one would certainly suffer a great loss of life-force.

The arrow was shredded by the Taiji cloak, but the moment before that, Ji Hao had already recognized the spell symbols attached to it by using his spirit power. That was the ‘crow-falling-spell’ created in Ten Sun Country. The spell was a legendary ancient one, highly lethal, and could efficiently ruin pure spirit

blood.

The spell wasn't too harmful to women, because the powers of women were mostly negative. However, the spell was awfully dangerous to men. Being attacked by this spell, even a Divine Magus would have to stay on the bed for at least one year. He might even lose a big half of his power and fall to the lower level.

The arrow was evilly dangerous. It caused no threat to Ji Hao, but even Si Wen Ming could be severely injured by it, and struggle to live after that.

Putting down his Taiji divine sword, Ji Hao looked at where the arrow came from. Such a dangerous arrow with the crow-falling spell, it must have been released by a leader from the Ten Sun Country.

Far away in the west, under the dense dark clouds, an enormous golden-wing roc bird spread its hundred-mile-wide golden wings, silently gliding over. From hundreds of miles away, a young man standing on the bird's head laughed out loud intentionally.

"Is Marquis Yao Ji Hao there? I am Qiong Sang Sheng. I brought the elite force from my family to help. Marquis Yao, these small spirit creatures are too insignificant to you. Just let my warriors deal with them!"

Ji Hao frowned slightly. Qiong Sang Sheng? Qiong Sang Family?

Qiong Sang Family originated from a place called 'Qiong Sang', descending from Emperor Shaohao. Qiong Sang was Emperor Shaohao's homeland. Ever since Emperor Shaohao abdicated, his family had divided into many different scaled clans, taking different family names. But, a part of his descendants stayed in Qiong Sang, guarded the hometown, and kept 'Qiong Sang' as their family name.

If it were truly Qiong Sang Family, everything would be explainable.

Qiong Sang Family possessed a special status in Ten Sun Country.

Yi Family grasped the army and the wealth, controlling all secular powers of Ten Sun Country. Every generation of leaders of Ten Sun Country and the East Alliance were from the Yi Family.

But, Qiong Sang Family controlled people's faith. All Maguspriests, healers, and the truly powerful, mysterious archers were from Qiong Sang Family. Over ninety percent of all magic medicines, magic talismans and anything relating to magic, including those necessary spell symbol arrows, were produced by Qiong Sang Family people.

People once said that Ten Sun Country was a strong force; Yi Family was its body, while Qiong Sang Family was the soul of this strong body. Without the soul, Ten Sun Country would become a lifeless thing, and the powerful East Alliance would collapse.

While Ji Hao was pondering, Dark Water Yao Yao wielded his blade and growled at Qiong Sang Sheng, "Qiong Sang Sheng? From Qiong Sang Family? I haven's seen your people out here for years! Do you know anything except shooting people from the darkness?"

Dark Water Yao Yao let out his long fork tongue and yelled at Qiong Sang Sheng, "How shameless you are! Did Shaohao teach you people anything other than attacking from the back? You? Human emperor descendants? Bah!"

Spitting out a mouthful of venom, Dark Water Yao Yao rudely turned around, lifted his butt and patted it loudly while yelling dramatically, "Qiong Sang Sheng, you ball-less girls, do you know nothing but biting below the belt? Come one, shoot me, come one. If you can't..."

Ji Hao stayed silent, while Qiong Sang Sheng's handsome face twitched slightly. He looked young, with a tuft of beard on his chin. Dark Water Yao Yao cursed him, fine, but he also humiliated Emperor Shaohao. He could never allow that.

He waved his hand. Following Qiong Sang Sheng's move, a young man rushed out from behind him. The young man's body was wrapped tight in snow-white feathers. His face was also tender and snow-white, making him look like a young girl.

"Evil spirit creature, how dare you humiliate my ancestor? I am Qiong Sang Shuang, and I will kill you!"

Qiong Sang Shuang swiftly darted towards Dark Water Yao Yao, leaving tens of shreds of afterimages behind. When he flew past Ji Hao, he turned around and threw Ji Hao a quick, scornful glance with his pair of watery eye, as if he were a genius and Ji Hao was a dumba*s.

Ji Hao coughed deeply and said, "Dark Water Yao Yao is my enemy!"

A breeze flew across Ji Hao, then Qiong Sang Sheng momentarily moved to right before Ji Hao's face, reached out an arm and stopped Ji Hao from moving. With a fake smile, he chuckled and said to Ji Hao, "Marquis Yao...You've been running around these years, you must be so tired. You've already made great contributions, so now let our young people do their part."

Qiong Sang Sheng smirked and continued slowly, "Our Qiong Sang Family is a part of the humankind. We are the descendants of Emperor Shaohao. We came all the way to Midland from the east. Marquis Yao. You're not going to take away our chance to devote ourselves to the humankind, are you?"

Ji Hao seemed to say something, but didn't. Qiong Sang Sheng smiled, pointed at his heart, and said with a strong voice, "Marquis Yao, we came with passion and boiling blood. Don't take our passion away!"

"I meant well. I was afraid that this kid, Qiong Sang Shuang, might die." Hearing this, Ji Hao sighed slightly and looked at Qiong Sang Sheng.

"And, Qiong Sang Sheng, did you truly arrive in Midland just now? If so, you did come at a good time!"

With a smile on his face, Ji Hao cursed out in his head, ‘In the past few years, when there were tons of dirty, nasty and dangerous works to be done, where the hell were you? Now that nothing but the final nine water gates are left blocking the way, and the great plan is about to be completed...you b*stards came to collect the trophy!’

Chapter 1253: The First Fight

Looking at Qiong Sang Sheng's handsome face, Ji Hao even had an impulsion to smash it with the Pan Gu bell.

A strong, heavy power vibration could be sensed. Holding a large clay bowl with a big breach on the edge, Si Wen Ming quickly walked to Ji Hao and grabbed his wrist with his left hand. With a mild smile, Si Wen Ming slightly lowered his head and said, "Qiong Sang Master Magus from the Qiong Sang Family came to help, that is for the best."

Si Wen Ming grinned and glanced at those warriors resting on the mountainside, shaking his head slightly as he said, "The past few years truly exhausted those boys. It's good for them to have a chance to take some rest."

Ji Hao narrowed his eyes and quickly glanced at Si Wen Ming.

He heard dread from Si Wen Ming's words. Instantly, Ji Hao understood that this Qiong Sang Sheng was not easy to deal with. But 'Master Magus'? Was that his nickname? Was he a Supreme Magus?

Ji Hao silently looked at Qiong Sang Sheng from head to toe. Qiong Sang Sheng chuckled, shaking his head as he said, "It seems that not too many people remember my name these days...It's time to come out and take a walk."

All of a sudden, Qiong Sang Sheng raised his right hand, reaching to Ji Hao's left wrist.

A dark shadow flashed out of Ji Hao's shadow. With a frigid power vibration, Yemo Shayi straightened his five left fingers and created five thin and dark space cracks in the air, slapping against Qiong Sang Sheng's hand.

Yemo Shayi's left hand bumped against Qiong Sang Sheng's right hand, causing no noise. Translucent dark ripples spread out from

their fingers. Following a series of creaking noise, the space around their palms suddenly turned purely dark.

In the next moment, the twisted and darkened space recovered to normal. Yemo Shayi and Qiong Sang Sheng had split their palms already, as if nothing had happened at all. Yemo Shayi took three steps backward and stood behind Ji Hao, while Qiong Sang Sheng knitted his eyebrows and silently made three steps sideway, keeping himself tens of meters away from Ji Hao.

"Marquis Yao, indeed marvelous! I didn't think that you have a sun and moon stage non-humankind being under your command, a powerful one from the strongest, cruelest Dark Sun...Impressive, truly impressive!"

Looking at Qiong Sang Sheng's slightly blue face, Ji Hao wanted to laugh. Remaining silent for a while, Ji Hao said blandly, "My virtue is like a towering, divine platens tree. Naturally, phoenixes will travel far and wide to just build a nest on the tree. A few powerful non-humankind beings are moved and inspired by my virtue. Therefore, they chose to follow my lead sincerely. This is just a reasonable thing."

The large clay bowl held in Si Wen Ming's hand swayed slightly, as he almost crumbled it.

Qiong Sang Sheng's face twitched. His right hand was still suffering a piercing pain because of Yemo Shayi's counterattack just now. Hiding that hand in his sleeve, he silently clenched his fist, 'Ji Hao, do you still have a sense of shame? Do you mean that your virtue and fame has spread far, which makes you like a divine tree, illuminating the world so much that even phoenixes fly all the way here to you, to nest on your virtuous tree?'

Yemo Shayi's face was slightly darkened as well, as he took a glance at Ji Hao's back with a hidden bitterness. Yemo Shayi could even swear with the souls of all his ancestors that he did not follow Ji Hao because of Ji Hao's virtue! Yemo Shayi wanted to tell Qiong

Sang Sheng that he was ‘moved and inspired’ by Ji Hao’s power, true, violent power. With no other choice at all, he made a blood oath and became Ji Hao’s slave. He followed Ji Hao because of Ji Hao’s power, solid power, which had absolutely not a damn thing to do with virtue.

When Ji Hao, Yemo Shayi, and Qiong Sang Sheng silently exchanged a blow over here, the fight happening between Qiong Sang Shuang and Dark Water Yao Yao was getting intense.

Ji Hao covered the battlefield with his spirit power and carefully observed Qiong Sang Shuang’s moves. Ji Hao’s eye corners twitched slightly. Was this a secret fighting skill of Ten Sun Country or Qiong Sang Family?

Yi Di and the most of Eastern Wasteland archers liked killing their enemies from tens of miles away the most. Some powerful archers even liked to kill their enemies from hundreds, even thousands of miles away, with their marvelous archery skills.

Without their bows and arrows, or by letting the enemies approach, most of Eastern Wasteland archers would lose at least eighty percent of their powers.

However, Qiong Sang Shuang and Dark Water Yao Yao were now doing a close combat.

He was holding a glowing-white longbow, emitting a strong cold power. The silver bowstring was barely visible. Qiong Sang Shuang would grip the bow with both hands or wield the bow with one hand, and the hair-thin bowstring would slice through the air, causing a sharp buzzing noise along with dazzling beams of cold lights. Those light beams would weave into a dense net that covered Dark Water Yao Yao’s entire body.

Dark Water Yao Yao let out his fork-tongue, gripped his long blade, and released bright blade lights to defend himself.

Qiong Sang Shuang leaped around Dark Water Yao Yao, as

nimbly as a flea. His afterimages were all over the sky. At first glance, one would see at least three-hundred Qiong Sang Shuangs flashing in the sky.

Unlike the other spirit creatures, Dark Water Yao Yao hadn’t been roaring madly on a rampage. Instead, he floated in midair and remained perfectly unmoved. No matter how intensely Qiong Sang Shuang attacked, he would do nothing more than wielding the blade and defending himself steadily.

Blade lights and the bowstring clashed against each other. The tinkles gradually became a long-lasting, sharp scream, which brought everyone else on the scene a piercing ear pain.

"Qiong Sang Shuang is a talented young man of our family." said Qiong Sang Sheng abruptly, while watching the fight, "He has the potential to become a prince. Give him ten years, and he will be qualified for the position of emperor."

Qiong Sang Shuang smiled and said, "This boy is so passionate about the well-being of the humankind. Hearing that Gong Gong has sent down his people and blocked the way of the flood-control army in here...See, we had just arrived in Pu Ban City, and didn’t even have the time to drink some water. But, he already dragged us here to help Minister Si Wen Ming!"

"So passionate!" Looking at Qiong Sang Sheng right in the eyes, Ji Hao said word by word, "However, I’m afraid that he doesn’t have ten years. Qiong Sang...Master Magus? You should know that Emperor Shun..."

Qing Sang Sheng waved his hand, interrupted Ji Hao, and looked at him blandly as he said, "You can’t be sure so soon about some things. Who knows how the future be like? Things are changing like the drifting clouds in the sky. We are only mortal human beings, how can we predict the future?"

Ji Hao wasn’t preparing to show a sign of weakness. Instead, he continued coldly, "The future is indeed unpredictable, but not as

unpredictable as human hearts, right?"

Qiong Sang Sheng smiled and said carelessly, "Are human hearts unpredictable? Marquis Yao, I think you are wrong. We have one heart, only one, that is the heart of love towards the humankind. We have no other hearts, but the heart of passion and love. All people in the world can see through our heart clearly with one glimpse!"

Waving his hand, Qiong Sang Sheng pointed at the Kui Gate and said loudly, "Minister Si Wen Ming, and Marquis Yao, you go rest aside, and let our Qiong Sang Family get these nine water gates! At least, we should let all human beings know that our Qiong Song Family are indeed making some contributions to the humankind!"

Once he finished, a howl could be heard. Qiong Sang Shuang suddenly twisted his longbow and sliced a large piece of meat off from Dark Water Yao Yao’s arm.

Chapter 1254: Aggressive Ji Hao

"Great! A marvelous Qiong Sang man!" Qiong Sang Sheng took a long glance at Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming with obvious unfriendliness, and said, "Minister Si Wen Ming, Marquis Yao, go rest aside. Our Qiong Song family men will take the nine water gates!"

Qiong Sang Sheng pushed it further. It seemed that Si Wen Ming and Ji Hao acted a bit like pushovers just now. As a result, Qiong Sang Sheng waved his hands, and following his move, seven to eight Qiong Sang Family warriors flew over.

Pointing at Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming, he said blandly, "Escort these two ministers to rest. Take a good care of them, and don't let anything happen to them. If they get hurt, even by a single hair, you shall chop off your own heads!"

'Don't let anything happen to them?' Didn't that mean Qiong Sang Sheng wanted these warriors to follow Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming everywhere and to watch them day and night?

Si Wen Ming remained expressionless. He rubbed the large clay bowl with both his hands. Because of the thick calluses on his hands, a loud frictional noise was caused.

Ji Hao sneered, showing the whites of his eyes and squinting at Qiong Sang Sheng.

If they truly let Qiong Sang Sheng and his people take the nine water gates, what would people say? Without a doubt, Gong Gong would send down all his strong commanders and ministers down to guard the nine water gates and fight human beings. In order to break through the nine water gates, Qiong Sang Sheng and his people undoubtedly had to kill or seal those famous, powerful water-kind spirit creatures under Gong Gong's command.

If this did happen, in the future, Qiong Sang Sheng could proudly

say in front of Emperor Shun that his warriors killed Xiang Liu, chopped Kun Peng, took out Wuzhi Qi, peeled Dark Water Serpent, and made his skin into jackets. What about Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming then? In the past few years, they fought countless battles in the storm with no efforts spared. Millions and millions of water-kind creatures died in their hands, but at last, when people were to be awarded according to their contributions, what could they say? 'Well, we killed so many nameless weak water-kind creatures…'

Most people in the world only had their eyes fixed on the ones with high reputations. Why would they care about those nameless weak water-kind creatures? They wouldn't care how many those water-kind creatures were, or how strong they were, neither would they care about how many efforts did it require to wipe those water-kind creatures all out.

The dirtiest, most exhausting, and troublesome works were all done by Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming, but the nine final water gates, which could be considered as a giant, juicy and fleshy piece of meat, Qiong Sang Sheng wanted it all for himself and his family!

Ji Hao slightly flicked his fingers and released a faintly sensible sword intent. Beams of dazzling light were generated, clashing against each other. Everyone's eyes were blazing suddenly. At the moment, they saw nothing but countless dazzling swords, flying all over the sky and clanging against each other.

Once the sword intent was released, Si Wen Ming's look changed, while Yemo Shayi raised his eyebrows, then his erect eye turned purely dark. Yemo Shayi's body gradually turned hazy and blur, while a strong power was released, seeming even to devour and destroy the world.

Back on the mountainside, Feng Xing, Yu Mu, and Yuan Li were resting. Sensing Ji Hao's sword intent, they leaped straight up. They had their eyes on this area since long ago. Once Ji Hao released that sword intent, they trod on a cloud and flew over swiftly.

From about a hundred miles away, Feng Xing became invisible. But an extremely sharp, violent arrow intent had already locked on Qiong Sang Sheng. Yu Mu pulled out the Disease God Streamer, waving it slowly. Tens of meters long locusts flew out, spraying a poisonous gas while hovering around Yu Mu.

Yuan Li flipped in the air and landed beside Ji Hao, holding his dragon staff with both hands, looking at Qiong Sang Sheng from head to toe as he said, "Eh? What does this fur-less guy want? What? Does he want to fight us?"

Qiong Sang Sheng frowned slightly as he glanced at Yuan Li. Obviously, he despised Yuan Li. In his eyes, Yuan Li was nothing but a talking water monkey, a lowly spirit creature. Qiong Sang Sheng didn't even want to look at him.

Looking at Qiong Sang Sheng's proud face, Ji Hao ignored Si Wen Ming's hint given with the eyes, and said word by word, "Yeah, this guy wants to die, and he wants us to help him !"

Qiong Sang Sheng paused in shock, and so did his warriors.

Si Wen Ming's look changed again, as he sighed helplessly. He knew that what Qiong Sang Sheng did and said had truly enraged Ji Hao. Si Wen Ming couldn't help but throw an angry glance at Qiong Sang Sheng, 'Do you truly think that no one dares to do anything to you only because you're a descendant of Shaohao?' thought Si Wen Ming.

"You...What did you say?" Qiong Sang Sheng paused for a while, but still couldn't believe his own ears. Or maybe he just wasn't willing to believe it. He popped out his eyes, stared at Ji Hao, and asked word by word, "What did you say just now? Marquis Yao Ji Hao, can you say it again, clearly?"

"Do you want to die?" Ji Hao took two steps forward, almost forcing his nose against Qiong Sang Sheng's, as he asked, also word by word through gritted teeth. A frigidly cold airstream was even squeezed out of his mouth. He opened his erect eye and released a

trace of the power of destruction from the embryo of Dao of destruction. Just like Yemo Shayi, Ji Hao had his erect eye turned purely dark. Looking at that eye, people would be despairing because of the sense of terror given by it.

"If you want to die, and you want to drag the entire Qiong Sang Family into hell with you, I can surely help!" Ji Hao raised his hand, pointed his finger heavily on Qiong Sang Sheng's nose, and said coldly with a fierce, dagger-sharp gaze, "When you die, I will let Emperor Shun tell the world how you bravely fought Gong Gong to break through the nine water gates, but ended up drowned in Gong Gong's saliva!"

"You!" Qiong Sang Sheng panicked a little bit. His eyes dazzled, and he didn't even dare to look straight at Ji Hao's eyes.

In Ten Sun Country, no one dared to talk to him like this. He seemed to be young, but in fact, he had lived for over a thousand years. He was called 'Master Magus' in Ten Sun Country. In Ten Sun Country people's eyes, he was the closest to divine gods in the heaven. He was a breath away from the level of Supreme Magus. He was truly, extremely powerful.

He had a high social status, and he had a great power. Therefore, he considered everybody and everything beneath his notice.

When his social status and power were both neglected by someone, and when someone rushed up wildly against him, Qiong Sang Sheng suddenly didn't know what to do. He did want to order his warriors to hack Ji Hao to death though.

However, Yemo Shayi and Feng Xing had already made themselves invisible. Yu Mu wasn't holding the Disease God streamer, while Yuan Li had that dragon staff in his hands. Each one of these people, even including Si Wen Ming, who stood aside silently, had terrifying power rising inside their bodies. Somehow, Qiong Sang Sheng felt that if he dared to attack Ji Hao right now, Si Wen Ming would definitely try to kill him with all of his power,

regardless of Ten Sun Country and his position!

Qiong Sang Sheng felt like he was going crazy.

Si Wen Ming was a man from You Chong Clan. Indeed, You Chong Clan people were descendants of the Yellow Emperor, but that clan was only a self-founded branch clan which originated from the You Xiong Family. It was only a branch clan, even if the recent few generations had been doing pretty well. But, Qiong Song Family was the family of Emperor Shaohao! Qiong Sang Family people were the direct descendants of Shaohao, and Qiong Sang Family was ten times, a hundred times, or even a thousand times more powerful than You Chong Clan!

How could Si Wen Ming ever want to kill him? Was Si Wen Ming out of his mind?

In the front, Dark Water Yao Yao burst with a great growl, as a half of his face was sliced off by Qiong Sang Shuang's bowstring.

Chapter 1255: Qiong Sang Shuang, dead

"Great, Qiong Sang Men!"

Ji Hao suddenly acted aggressively, and he was surrounded by Yemo Shayi, a true Supreme-level powerful warrior, along with Yu Mu, Feng King, and Yuan Li, three strong beings. Meanwhile, Si Wen Ming seemed ready to put up a desperate fight against Qiong Sang Sheng at any time as well. Seeing all of this, Qiong Sang Sheng shrank back.

He was worried and frightened, but he was even more infuriated. Nevertheless, Qiong Sang Sheng dared not to start a conflict directly against Ji Hao.

Qiong Sang Shuang seized a perfect opportunity to attack as he swung his longbow. The bowstring broke the fierce blade beams released by Dark Water Yao Yao and caused an echoing clang, then landed violently on Dark Water Yao Yao's face. The bowstring was strangely sharp, easily cutting off half of Dark Water Yao Yao's face, exposing his dark, metal-like bone.

Seeing Qiong Sang Shuang take an advantage in the fight, Qiong Sang Sheng took the chance to smoothly change the topic. Instead of confronting Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming tensely, he turned around and clapped his hands, laughing out loud as he encouraged Qiong Sang Shuang.

On the back of that enormous golden-winged roc bird, tens of thousands of elite Qiong Sang warriors raised their weapons and growled in chorus, "Marvelous! Qiong Sang Men! Fabulous! Qiong Sang Men!"

The strong and dreadful power of Qiong Sang Family was demonstrated perfectly by their resounding growls. Ji Hao's eye corners twitched slightly. From the voices all tens of thousands of Qiong Sang warriors, he sensed at least ten powerful beings who had already reached the supreme level. Over fifty percent of these

Qiong Sang warriors were Magus Kings and Divine Magi; the rest were Senior Magi indeed, but as they growled out, faint starlights shone from their bodies. Apparently, these Senior Magi were about to grow their spirit star power and step into the level of Magus Kings.

Ji Hao was surprised. Qiong Sang Family was indeed legendarily powerful. No wonder Si Wen Ming tried his best to tolerate Qiong Sang Sheng. Not to mention how many greatly powerful beings existed in the family, merely this army under Qiong Sang Sheng's command was strong enough to destroy ten territories at the level of Yao Mountain territory if Ji Hao, Yemo Shayi, and the other few especially powerful ones weren't there to defend.

Ji Hao looked at the battlefield while frowning. He heard Dark Water Yao Yao snort in pain, but still, he gripped his blade tight and wielded swiftly, steadily, and smoothly. He created dazzling blade light beams to defend himself against Qiong Sang Shuang.

From time to time, Dark Water Yao Yao would let out his long fork tongue. Ji Hao didn't know how enormous Dark Water Yao Yao's true body was, but his for tongue could reach out for hundreds of miles sometimes, like a nimbly moving, twisting, soft spear, lunging at Qiong Sang Shuang from strange angles.

But, Qiong Sang Shuang was fast as lightning bolts, such that not even Ji Hao could see his moves clearly. White, misty afterimages created by him flashed all over the sky. Dark Water Yao Yao's fork tongue brushed against his body over and over again, yet failed to harm even a hair of his.

All of a sudden, Dark Yao Yao howled in pain once again, while a large stream of blood spurted out of his mouth.

Ji Hao clearly saw it. For an unknown, unreasonable reason, Dark Water Yao Yao spiralled his long fork tongue and attempted to coil Qiong Sang Shuang's body. As a result, Qiong Sang Shuang darted into the spiraled tongue and slightly swung his longbow,

cutting that forked tongue into tens of pieces.

Fist-thick, squirming tongue pieces fell from the sky, while Dark Water Yao Yao retracted his remaining tongue, which was still bleeding ceaselessly. He hissed loudly in pain, while blood gushed out of the wounds on his face. Covered in blood, he looked like a devil that crawled out of the blood pool in hell.

"You're nothing but a small water-kind spirit creature. How can you ever defeat a Qiong Sang man?" Qiong Sang Sheng turned around proudly, glanced at Ji Hao, and said, "How can these water-kind spirit creatures ever imagine the power of our Qiong Sang Family? We may not do much, but once we start one thing, we will make it perfect!"

Ji Hao remained silent. He looked at Dark Water Yao Yao, who was now awfully bleeding. He felt weird.

Dark Water Yao Yao shouldn't be so weak. Ji Hao sensed the shockingly strong intent of killing from him, but how could he be so weak?

Qiong Sang Shuang was indeed a powerful one, but he was not powerful enough to crush Dark Water Yao Yao, was he? Judging by the power vibration released from his body, Ji Hao could easily tell that Qiong Sang Shuang was a well-protected 'noble' who had never been through a real deadly fight. He might have a lot of experience, but he must have gained those experiences through carefully arranged battles under the protection of his strong guards.

Him? How could he ever push Dark Water Yao Yao into such a bad situation?

"Not to mention Shuang's 'sky-splitting silver scale bow', which is a half-step Supreme-level treasure, that feather cloak worn by him is made from the feathers of 'void white phoenixes'." said Qiong Sang Sheng to Ji Hao with a strange tone that one might hear when a rich person living in the town talked to a poor guy

from the countryside, "Void white phoenixes is a legendary kind among all phoenixes. They can flash across space, as fast as lightning bolts, even faster than regular phoenixes."

"Our family only has thirteen feather cloaks like this. Wearing this cloak, Shuang is faster than anyone in the world. On battlefields, he can attack his enemies, but will never be attacked!"

Qiong Sang Sheng laughed proudly.

Ji Hao raised his eyebrows, but didn't say anything. Wearing a void white phoenix cloak, did that make Qiong Sang Shuang the fastest one in the world? What a narrow view! What about the golden bridge? No to mention the golden bridge, the East Emperor Taiyi's nine dragons chariot was scarily fast. How could a feather cloak ever race Taiyi's chariot?

"Hit!" Qiong Sang Shuang was fighting against Dark Water Yao Yao, but he had been paying his attention to Qiong Sang Sheng all the time.

Hearing Qiong Sang Sheng's praise, Qiong Sang Shuang couldn't help but grin. Shouting out, his bowstring speedily sliced across Dark Water Yao Yao's shoulder, tearing off a large piece of meat.

"Hit!" Following another shout, Qiong Sang Shuang took the risk and suddenly darted into the defensive range provided by Dark Water Yao Yao's blade. He swung the bow and sliced off a large piece of skin from Dark Water Yao Yao's chest.

"Hit!" "Hit!" "Hit!" Qiong Sang Shuang's aggressive, proud shouts could be heard from every corner of the battlefield. Every time he burst with a shout, Qiong Sang Shuang could always cut off a slice from Dark Water Yao Yao. Soon, Dark Water Yao Yao was covered in wounds, almost looking like a skeleton.

"Marquis Yao, how's our boy?" Qiong Sang Sheng proudly threw a sideway glance at Ji Hao. Ji Hao squinted at Qiong Sang Sheng as well. Abruptly, he sensed something. Scanning across the

battlefield by using his spirit power, he finally realized what was wrong. He growled out a nd started moving, attempting to rush into the battlefield. But Qiong Sang Sheng raised his eye corners and immediately pointed at Ji Hao.

An invisible, strong force descended from the sky. Ji Hao was strong, but he was still sealed by this force for a one-tenth second.

While Ji Hao struggled, Qiong Sang Shuang's bowstring cut towards Dark Water Yao Yao's neck. "Kill!" Roared Qiong Sang Shuang while launching the killing move. When the bowstring cutting into Dark Water Yao Yao's neck, he grinningly turned around and glanced at Qiong Sang Sheng.

Dark Water Yao Yao suddenly popped out his eyes. He threw away the blade, shaking his body. His upper body suddenly became an enormous serpent with widely opened jaws, and swallowed Qiong Sang Shuang up.

Followed a series of bow cracking noise, Qiong Sang Shuang was shredded into meat paste.

Chapter 1256: You Chao Yu Arrives

Snakes and serpents, not to mention their thick scales, strong powers, sharp, poisonous teeth, and terrifying venoms, one should take note of the nimblest movement of these creatures, which were with great agility. The moment they had their eyes locked on their targets, they would suddenly pounce.

Dark Water Yao Yao was a dark water serpent. Naturally, he had all abilities and features of serpents and snakes.

His upper body suddenly transformed back to his original serpent form and pounced. Ji Hao sensed the strange power vibration from him before he attacked, but except for him, no one managed to react timely.

Poor Qiong Sang Shuang. A young man who had just shown his talent to Qiong Sang Sheng and was about to earn his first military credit, fell into Dark Water Yao Yao's trap, gradually relaxing his vigilance. He thought he had launched the final strike at Dark Water Yao Yao, after which, he turned around and glanced at Qiong Sang Sheng. He actually did that!

Ji Hao had the chance to save him, but Qiong Sang Sheng stopped Ji Hao. Qiong Sang Sheng thought that Ji Hao was going to take Qiong Shang Shuang's credit. Therefore, he hurriedly cast a magic spell and disabled Ji Hao from moving.

In the one-tenth of a second, when Ji Hao failed to rush out and rescue Qiong Sang Shuang, Dark Water Yao Yao swallowed the latter.

Blood was dripping down from Dark Water Yao Yao's mouth corners. With a twisted, ferocious face, he grinned at Ji Hao, then mumbled while chewing to Qiong Sang Shuang, "Tender and juicy, delicious! Oi, give me a couple of more tasty boys like this to fill my belly, can you?"

A loud, deep hissing noise could be heard. On the dark cloud above the Kui Gate, the mountain-like Dark Water Serpent proudly reached out his fork tongue towards the sky. Tens of strong dark-skinned men stood on a wave, unhappily waving their fists towards Dark Water Yao Yao. The few bald men yelled, "Yao Yao, don’t eat too much. Leave some tender meat for us!"

Dark Water Yao Yao laughed out loud. He straightened his neck and swallowed Qiong Sang Shuang down along with his precious feather cloak. Then, he proudly twisted his ugly serpent body and squirmed, transforming back into the human shape.

"The Kui Gate is guarded by us. None of you can approach!" Dark Water Yao Yao proudly picked up his blade, pointed back, and said, "You human beings should obediently soak in the flood. When your backbones are softened by the water, you will bend your bodies willingly and be our slaves!"

Ji Hao didn’t say anything. He twisted his body and caused a series of creaking noise. Next, a translucent, crystal-like screen around his body shattered suddenly. Qiong Sang Sheng’s spell was violently broken by Ji Hao. Taking two steps backward, Ji Hao helplessly shook his head.

Si Wen Ming sighed, turned around, and swung up his right hand. The large clay bowl was thrown hundreds of miles away. It drew a beautiful arc in the air and then fell accurately into a large clay pot filled with water on the mountainside.

A few drops of water splashed out from the pot, and the clay bowl sank into the water, perfectly undamaged.

Having sent back the bowl, Si Wen Ming turned around, cupped his hands towards Qiong Sang Sheng, and said, "Qiong Sang Master Magus, these spirit creatures are brutal..."

Qiong Sang Sheng discourteously interrupted Si Wen Ming, waved his hand, and yelled, "Do I need a lesson from you kids? Staying in the army means staying in dangers. Which battle costs

no life?"

Grinning proudly, Qiong Sang Sheng held his hands behind his body, covering them with his long sleeves. In his sleeves that nobody could see, he clenched his fists tightly, such that blood veins had even bulged from the backs of his hands.

He wanted to chop Dark Water Yao Yao into a thousand pieces, but he tried to act carelessly and calmly. He chuckled and said, "Our Qiong Sang Family has countless talented young men, every single one of them a hundred times more gifted than Qiong Sang Shuang. Qiong Sang Shuang, he was insignificant, he..."

Breathing deeply, Qiong Sang Sheng continued word by word through tightly gritted teeth, "He was an insignificant boy. He died, that's fine. What loss did our Qiong Sang Family suffer?"

Si Wen Ming couldn't see Qiong Sang Sheng's tightly clenched fists, but Ji Hao had spread his spirit power and clearly saw every move of his. He laughed in his head, then cruelly poured a handful of salt onto Qiong Sang Shuang's wound by saying, "What a shame. Master Magus, if you didn't stop me just now, Qiong Sang Shuang wouldn't end up being...eaten by the enemy."

Sighing heavily, Ji Hao held his hands behind his body, looked at the sky, and continued blandly, "Pitiful, so pitiful. I heard that the souls of people eaten by dark water serpents will never be free. Is that true? Hm, I wonder how does that feel like. I mean, having your soul becoming a puddle of serpent dung."

Si Wen Ming's mouth corners twitched. He looked at the Kui Gate, and seemed to sink in his own thoughts while remaining absolutely silent.

Qiong Sang Sheng's face twitched intensely. He stared at Ji Hao for long, then slowly raised his right hand and said in a bland tone, "He was not strong enough. He died miserably indeed, but he had no one to blame but himself. Qiong Sang men, which one of you will come down to easily cut this spirit creature?"

From nearly a hundred young men who stood in a straight line on the back of the golden-winged roc bird, five young men wearing the same white phoenix feather cloak stepped out, then impatiently rushed to Dark Water Yao Yao.

Dark Water Yao Yao smirked, "Eh? Are you Qiong Sang boys going to beat me together? So shameless?"

Qiong Sang Sheng's look changed slightly. Pointing at the five young men, he cursed out loud. The five impatient young men paused together, glancing at each other with complicated, changing facial expressions. Judging by their looks, they all wanted their brothers to step away and leave the opportunity to themselves.

While Qiong Sang Sheng was infuriated and the few young men were striving to be the first, a cyan and yellow cloud approached speedily from far away. On the hundred-miles-wide cloud, a miles-tall mountain stood in the middle. On the mountain were towering ancient trees and oddly-shaped giant rocks. Between those trees and rocks were over a thousand strangely styled buildings.

"These people...Why are they here?" Qiong Sang Sheng popped out his eyes in surprise, pointed at that cloud, and stutteringly shouted.

"Eh? You Chao Family?" Si Wen Ming exclaimed with surprise, "You Chao Family people are good at construction. They are all the greatest architects. They build all kinds of palaces, mansions, but fighting? They are never good at that, are they?"

Dark Water Yao Yao raised his blade and laughed loud out, "Haha, more came to die? Right before this Kui Gate, let me drain the blood of you human beings!"

Dark Water Yao Yao's laughter lingered in the sky. From the mountain on the cloud, a ninety-meters-squared small fort made of white stone flew up into the sky, stirring up a fierce gust of wind while darting towards Dark Water Yao Yao.

From inside the mountain, a deep and strong voice could be heard, "Qiong Sang Sheng, even you are here too? Human beings are facing dangers and disasters, so our You Chao Family have to make our contributions too. This Kui Gate...Leave it to me! I am You Chao Yu"

Before Qiong Sang Sheng responded, that You Chao Yu laughed resonantly out, "People all say that our You Chao Family people are not good at fighting. Today, let me show the world that we do have heroes too!"

That tiny fort flying in the air shone with a blinding light as it smashed at Dark Water Yao Yao like a shooting star. Dark Water Yao Yao burst with a scream while wielding his blade and launching a hack towards the fort.

Chapter 1257: You Chao Rock, Defeated

The snow-white, tens of meters squared in area, and about thirty-meters-tall, seal-shaped fort flew swiftly in the air, smashing down.

Dark Water Yao Yao roared while hacking on the white fort with all his strength. Followed by a loud bang, Dark Water Yao Yao gave a muffled snort in pain. His long forked tongue swished out of his mouth as he took tens of steps backward in a row. The wave treading under his feet collapsed, nearly throwing him down from the air.

A three-inches-deep, very thin slash was clearly visible on the white fort. Fire sparkles dazzled out from the slash, while the fort was sent to hundreds of miles away by Dark Water Yao Yao with his blade. The fort flew rapidly backward, tearing the air and leaving clear white traces in the sky.

"You Chao Family?" Dark Water Yao Yao shouted. A strong spirit creature power rose from his body. Earlier, his body was covered in wounds left by Qiong Sang Shuang's bowstring, but after he ate the latter, he quickly absorbed the spirit blood power. Now, his wounds were healing speedily.

However, before those wounds were healed completely, he bumped straight into this white fort. All his wounds were torn open again while blood splashed out like a rain, soon covering his body.

"I am You Chao Rock!" From the white fort, a clear, strong and proud voice could be heard, "This is the rock fort, my spirit treasure. I built it myself. How does the first strike feel like?"

Dark Water sneered, slightly raised his blade with his right hand, and said coldly, "Rock fort? Are you gonna fight me with this thing? You Chao Family, are you joking? Let me chop your turtle shell and cut your head off!"

This fort was not like Qiong Sang Shuang. Qing Sang Shuang had the white phoenix feather cloak, and was as fast as lightning, so Dark Water Yao Yao could barely see his moves. Dark Water Yao Yao failed to keep up with the speed, and therefore, he could only pretend to be weak and launch a surprise attack when Qiong Shang Shuang showed his weakness.

You Chao Rock was at the opposite extreme. In comparison, this rock fort was large in shape but not fast. Clearly, it was designed to fight with its great defensive power, and to crush the enemies with its weight. Therefore, this time, Dark Water Yao Yao took the initiative and rushed straight up. While moving swiftly, he released countless thin yet sharp beams of blade light.

Following an ear-piercing swishing noise, the blade lights landed on the fort like snowflakes.

The fort was shaking. The blade lights bumped into the fort, sending up bright fire sparkles.

The tinkling noise was rather pleasant to hear. All of a sudden, tens of dark-yellow colored, enormous spell symbols sparkled on the fort. A terrifyingly strong magnetic force bound Dark Water Yao Yao firmly. He was swiftly hovering around the fort, but once the magnetic force was released, he paused instantly.

Along with a strange roar, the fort dashed towards Dark Water Yao Yao and started a fierce gale.

Dark Water Yao Yao never thought that the fort could release magnetic force. He didn’t have the time to free himself from it. Instead, he could only watch the fort fly over and heavily smash on his body.

Bang!

Dark Water Yao Yao vomited blood as he flew backward. His face was entirely flattened, and his dark, flat skin could even be used as mirror. His chest dented, and over ten broken ribs came out from

his back, exposed in the air.

Blood surged out from his flattened face; judging by the flowing velocity of the blood, his internal organs were damaged severely too.

"You Chao Family, are they..." Si Wen Ming and Qiong Sang Sheng shouted out together.

From inside that mountain on that cyan-yellow cloud, You Chao Yu laughed proudly, "It has been so many years. More or less, our You Chao Family can create something new. You always say that we only build houses, but can't fight and kill."

Laughing again, he continued blandly, "But who said that houses can't kill people? They surely can, as long as we turn our houses into powerful magic treasures."

You Chao Rock controlled the fort and chased after Dark Water Yao Yao, causing a muffled swishing noise. The fort bumped on Dark Water Yao Yao's body three times in a row, smashed all his bones and made blood splash all over the sky.

Vomiting blood, Dark Water Yao Yao weakly fell from the sky, into a whirlpool down below.

A regular-sized splash was stirred up. The whirlpool swirled, and Dark Water Yao Yao soon disappeared without a trace.

The rock fort slowly turned around and approached the Kui Gate. Then, You Chao Rock said, "You, any of you dares to fight me? If you do, come out and die...If you don't, clear the way and let us break the Kui Gate. Let us do something for the great flood-control mission!"

Si Wen Ming and Ji Hao glanced at each other. You Chao Family...Were they here to steal the credit too?

Ji Hao felt speechless, but also careless. Qiong Sang Family had already popped out. Therefore, You Chao Family's sudden advent didn't shock him. Breaking the nine water fates required a tough

battle. If anyone wanted the credit, that would depend on what they could do.

No matter how powerful these family were, or how solid their backgrounds were, Ji Hao would never just give his credit away!

Si Wen Ming frowned slightly. Looking at that mountain on the cloud, he sighed. Unlike Ji Hao, he was worrying about a different thing. Fighting against the flood, human beings were united, but when the flood faded...Si Wen Ming now worried that something might happen after that.

Even if Gong Gong was defeated and the flood was overcome, those non-humankind beings would still fix their greedy eyes on the humankind! The flood harmed the humankind, but protected by the divine towers, those non-humankind beings stayed perfectly unharmed. If any strife happened between human beings, another disaster might happen.

Before the Kui Gate, Dark Water Serpent coiled on the dark cloud, staying unmoved. None of those strong and bald dark water serpent men stepped out to accept the battle. All water-kind creatures around the Kui Gate quietly looked at the fort, without making even the slightest noise.

A silhouette flashed across the fort. Afterward, a young man with a square face stood on the fort, wearing a coarse long shirt. He pointed at Kui Water and shouted, "You, if you dare not to fight me, give us the Kui Gate!"

Before his voice faded, tens of large whirlpools suddenly blasted down below. A miles-wide water column roared into the sky, while a miles long dark water serpent coiled on it. It opened its giant jaws and hissed towards You Chao Rock.

The series of heavy strikes he launched didn’t kill Dark Water Yao Yao. Dark Water Yao Yao leaped out of the water and released a dense dark smoke. A thirty-meters-wide dark bead swished out of the smoke and violently bumped into the fort.

The fort slightly quaked. You Chao Rock failed to steady his body and ended up falling down from the fort. Before he could fly back up, Dark Water Yao Yao burst with a resonant roar while raising his long tail and slapping fiercely on You Chao Rock's body.

Bone cracking noises sounded like thunder. You Chao Rock vomited blood, being smacked tens of miles away by Dark Water Yao Yao.

Chapter 1258: Joining the Fight Enthusiastically

"So stupid!" Watching Dark Water Yao Yao send You Chao Rock fly away, Qiong Sang Sheng criticized straightforwardly, "So stupid! If he stayed on that rock, that serpent would have been able to do nothing to him."

While sneering, Qiong Sang Sheng glanced at that mountain on the cloud and said, "However, he was actually stupid enough to come out...This You Chong Rock didn’t think that he is as strong as our talented Qiong Sang boys, who can manage all kinds of challenges, did he?"

Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming both remained silent, watching the fight. On the other side, sQiong Sang Sheng bragged about young men from his family and depreciated You Chao Family at the same time.

The mountain on the cloud also remained silent. However, many people walked out from buildings on the cloud, looking down at You Chao Rock, who was sent flying away. Ji Hao clearly saw that many You Chao people nervously clenched their fists. Obviously, they were all worrying about You Chao Rock.

If Qiong Sang Sheng weren’t on the scene, these You Chao people would have launched their moves already to rescue You Chao Rock. But, Qiong Sang Sheng was there, and so were so many Qiong Sang people, looking straight at them. Therefore, no matter how much these You Chao people were worrying about You Chao Rock, they wouldn’t do anything to help him. The honor of the family sometimes truly mattered more than lives.

Dark Water Yao Yao widely opened his mouth. Flashing across the air, he started a strong gale as he swiftly wriggled to behind You Chao Rock. All of You Chao Rock’s bones were whipped broken by Dark Water Yao Yao long tail, but by now, those injuries

had recovered halfway. Seeing Dark Water Yao Yao chase up, he hurriedly pointed at the rock fort.

From the fort, a white mist puffed up hundreds of meters high. Followed by a clattering noise, the mist spread out and rolled up like an enormous flag in the sky. Causing an ear-piercing swishing noise, the misty flag flew towards Dark Water Yao Yao.

Ji Hao scanned across this mist with his spirit power, and instantly knew what it was — The essence metal power from the west mixed with ten-thousand-year-old rock milk found in earth meridians. It was heavy and sticky like glue, yet strangely sharp. Once the mist wrapped up its target, the target would feel like being wrapped in thousands of sharp blades, being cut and sliced by the sharp metal power.

This was a special method of attacking, yet considerably efficient.

Nevertheless, it was too slow. After all, this white mist was partially made from ten-thousand-year-old rock milk from earth meridians. This special material was especially heavy, usually used in all kinds of large-scale weapons, such as battering rams, to improve their hardness and toughness.

The heaviness of the white mist disabled itself from catching up with Dark Water Yao Yao. While the mist was still seven to eight miles away from Dark Water Yao Yao, Dark Water Yao Yao had already rushed to You Chao Rock. He suddenly let out his long forked tongue and penetrated You Chao Rock's chest like a sharp, heavy spear.

You Chao Rock howled in pain. Instinctively, he raised both arms and punched on Dark Water Yao Yao's tongue.

Apparently, You Chao Rock was not a good fighter. He was indeed a low-level Divine Magus, but in Ji Hao's eyes, his pair of fists were not even as strong as those of a peak-level Magus Kings from other human clans.

Dark Water Yao Yao rolled back his tongue and generated a shrill scream, as You Chao Rock was dragged into his mouth.

The others on the scene watched Dark Water Yao Yao secrete a great amount of highly corrosive dark saliva in his mouth. Soaking in the dark saliva, You Chao Rock's skin and flesh fell off layer by layer. Dark Water Yao Yao smirked complacently, then slowly raised his head and swallowed You Chao Rock up.

He slowed his moves down intentionally, such that You Chao Rock was still alive, even after being swallowed into his stomach. Everyone else on the scene could hear You Chao Rock's despairing screams coming from Dark Water Yao Yao's stomach.

"Delicious! Who else?" Dark Water Yao Yao laughed proudly. Without its controller, the white mist released from the rock fort had slowly drawn back into the fort. Dark Water Yao Yao transformed again into his human shape, standing on the fort with a vicious grin. He scornfully reached out his left hand, and pointed at Qiong Sang Family people and You Chao Family people.

"Qiong Sang Family? The descendants of Shaohao. Are you even men?"

"You Chao Family, hehe, also descendants of a human emperor. Don't humiliate your family!"

Qiong Sang Sheng threw a sideway glance at the mountain on the cloud and said blandly, "A small spirit snake. Just let our brave Qiong Sang men cut it!"

Before his voice faded, a figure suddenly showed up on top of the mountain on the cloud. That was an old man with a long beard coiled around his waist, and skin wrinkled like tree bark. He was wearing a strange shirt made of yellow leaves.

"You Chao Yu...The oldest elder in You Chao Family. It's said that he had taken a magical fruit when he was young, which gave him an extra long lifespan...Some also said that when he was

young, he once served Emperor You Chao as a minister. No one knows if these stories are true or not." Si Wen Ming lowered his voice and told Ji Hao about this old man. "But no matter how, he is just like Elder Candle Dragon Gui. No one wants to offend him."

Paused briefly, Si Wen Ming lowered his voice further and continued, "Except for old people like Qiong Sang Master Magus, no one dares to offend You Chao Yu!"

"Qiong Sang Sheng, are you despising our You Chao warriors?" You Chao seemed to hear that Si Wen Ming and Ji Hao were talking about him. From a long distance away, he glanced at Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming, then paid his whole attention back to Qiong Sang Sheng and said, "How about we make a bet? If my warrior kills this little black snake..."

Before Qiong Sang Sheng responded, a cold and high-pitched voice interrupted You Chao Yu from far away.

"Bet? On what? You Chao Yu, Qiong Sang Sheng, you old dudes, how many years it has been since we saw each other? Qing Sang Sheng, last time you shot me with an arrow made from a ‘gold tattoo bee’ stinger. It made my entire body swollen for twenty-three years...But I also managed to send a gust of ghost mother wind into your ears, eyes, nose and mouth. How did it taste?"

Ghost screams could be heard without an end, while a great castle built with the bones of countless human beings, beasts, birds, fishes, and even Yu Clan people, Ji Clan people, Xiu Clan people, and all kinds of mysterious creature in the world, flew over speedily from the west. It was surrounded by a strong dark fire and a sky-devouring negative power.

"Human beings are facing a disaster. We should combine our powers and get through the difficulties together. You lowly spirit creatures, how dare you hinder our great flood-control plan... Hehe, we are the Ghost Chariot Clan. We will surely not fall behind...Hehe, you two old b*stards, get the hell away! As for those

little spirit creatures, my boys will surely take care of them all!"

Swoosh! A thirty-meters-wide, giant skull flew over, burning with a raging green fire. Meanwhile, a young man standing on the skull pulled out three bone spears and threw them out from a long distance away. This young man was wearing a scarily styled bone armor, with a deathly pasty face, and dark-green circles around the eyes.

Following a sizzling noise, the three spears transformed into a gray, widely spread gas once they flew out from the young man’s hand. Dragging streams of green fire, the poisonous gas poured straight down onto Dark Water Yao Yao.

Chapter 1259: Ghost Chariot

The Ghost Chariot was a legendary species, also called ‘nine-phoenix’.

Ghost Chariots looked like phoenixes. According to some legends, a Ghost Chariot had nine tails, but according to some other stories, it had one tail and nine heads. They were evil, dark and mysterious. At nights, they would fly in the sky and scream with a strange sound, which was similar to the sounds of running wheels. Therefore, people named them Ghost Chariot.

Naturally, the Ghost Chariot Clan people worshipped nine-phoenixes and inherited their powers. This human clan had a long history, as it raised before the Qiong Sang Family and You Chao Family, even before the holy Emperor Fuxi. Since forever, this clan was known as the most powerful human clan.

In the past countless centuries, the Ghost Chariot Clan fought against other human clans for the throne many times. However, with the power of nine-phoenixes, Ghost Chariot clan people were good at evil, ghosts-related magics. Affected by their dark magics, all Ghost Chariot Clan people looked evil and dark, just like ghosts. People from the other human clans didn’t like their appearances. Therefore, even though their clan was strong, they never managed to ascend the throne.

The more they couldn’t have it, the more they wanted it, and the more precious it was for them.

The throne had become the deepest obsession of the Ghost Chariot Clan. After Emperor Shaohao, once anything relating to the throne happened, Ghost Chariot Clan people would definitely show up with their eyes fixed on the throne, preparing to make any move at any time.

"Ghost Chariot!" Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming sighed together. According to the clear record kept in the Magi Palace, Ghost

Chariot people lived with dark souls and evil ghosts all years long. Therefore, they were all erratic, rebellious, and slightly crazy; these people could definitely bring one a bad headache.

Even they had stepped in. Now, there was a great show to watch.

The faces of Qiong Sang Sheng and You Chao Yu dropped instantly, even turning slightly blue, as if they bumped into true ghosts at midnight. They constantly glanced at each other, and no one knew what were they thinking about.

"I am Ghost Chariot Lie!" The young man who had sent out three white long spears laughed out shrilly, "You can also call me Mi Lie!"

Dark Water Yao Yao raised his blade with his right arm and transformed it into a sphere of light to defend himself. Countless afterimages created by the three white spears swished down and touched the blade lights, yet didn’t cause any noise.

That was because those were all illusions. The real three spears didn’t exist among those afterimages.

Ji Hao raised his eyebrows and asked in surprise, "Where are the three bone spears? Ghost Chariot Lie, I saw him throw out three bone spears!"

Everyone else on the scene frowned, looking at those descending afterimages left by the three bone spears. They all saw Ghost Chariot Lie do it. Indeed, three bone spears were thrown out by him. But now, nothing but illusions were falling from the sky, without a single actual bone spear!

Where were the three spears? Did Ghost Chariot Lie fool the eyes of all the powerful beings on the scene?

Following a sizzling noise, inside the light sphere transformed from Dark Water Yao Yao’s blade, three human-head-sized, pasty fires blazed suddenly. Within each fire, a dark-green pair of eyes was faintly visible. Following shrill screams, the three pasty fire

spheres expanded into three hazy human figures, spread their arms, and pounced on Dark Water Yao Yao.

Dark Water Yao Yao focused on defending himself against the three bone spears he saw. He never thought that the three bone spears thrown out by Ghost Chariot Lie would become three fierce evil ghosts and secretly approach him.

Dark Water Yao Yao didn't manage to make any reaction before the three hazy figures drilled into his body. His defensive blade light dimmed all of a sudden, while he floated in midair stiffly, with his face twitching intensely. But no matter how hard he tried, he couldn't move at all.

"Got you. Your soul is mine!" A high-pitched voice came out from Dark Water Yao Yao's mouth.

"No, no, it's mine! His soul is mine! Mine! Let me have the first bite! I want the first bite! You go drink his spirit blood! He has rich spirit blood!" said a dry voice from around Dark Water Yao Yao's throat.

"You two piss off! No one but me can have it! His soul and spirit... Hehe, I'll swallow his soul and spirit first...I came first, so I can have the soul and the spirit. You came after me, you get nothing. You two idiots!" said an extremely cold voice, which sounded mean.

Dark Water Yao Yao floated in the air, without being able to move. Slowly, dark-green, sticky liquid flowed out from his ears, eyes, nose and mouth. His strong and sturdy body withered rapidly, as if a million bugs were devouring his body from the inside.

To Divine Magi and Magus Kings, who had thriving, positive powers, dark souls and evil ghosts were just jokes. Not even the strongest ghost dared to approach a Magus King or a Divine Magus. Otherwise, the scorching hot spirit blood power released from the Magus King or the Divine Magus would shred the ghost.

But, Dark Water Yao Yao was a spirit serpent. He had the dark spirit creature power. To dark souls and evil ghosts, the spirit creature power was a nourishment instead of a bane. Unless Dark Water Yao Yao mastered some special magic that could especially suppress ghosts, he could do nothing about these evil ghosts.

Obviously, Dark Water Yao Yao was a fighter, and wasn't good at magics.

The three fierce ghosts, which were cultivated by Ghost Chariot Lie for countless years, broke into Dark Water Yao Yao's body, but he could do nothing about it. Instead, he could only watch them swallow his soul and drink his spirit blood.

Within a couple of breath, even Dark Water Yao Yao's marrow was drained. Along with weak howls, Dark Water Yao Yao transformed back into his original shape. His enormous body was flat and withered, as no blood or flesh was left in his body. He fell from the sky as a tens of miles long, scrawny, dark, and lusterless serpent skin.

Three pasty white fires flew out from Dark Water Yao Yao's body, much clearer than before, and flew back to Ghost Chariot Lie, leaving three arcs in the air. Standing on a giant skull condensed from a pasty fire, Ghost Chariot Lie slightly quivered, then a pink hue emerged on his pale cheeks. At last, the whites of his eyes turned bright, while his lusterless eyes suddenly shone with a blinding light.

Obviously, the three strong ghosts shared Ghost Chariot Lie the soul power and sprit blood that they looted from Dark Water Yao Yao. The power vibration released from his body instantly grow stronger, and soon, he was much more powerful than before.

Looting souls and spirit blood from his targets to boost up his own power by using evil ghosts.....The Ghost Chariot secret magics were powerful and cruel. No wonder they never managed to ascend to the throne in the past so many years. Which human

being dared to let a Ghost Chariot Family member sit on that throne?

"Interesting!" Looking at Ghost Chariot, Ji Hao smiled,

"I am Ghost Chariot Lie. You can also call me Mi Lie". Ghost Water Lie bent his waist, stood on the fire skull, and controlled the nearly one hundred meters tall fire skull, slowly approaching the Kui Gate while yelling, "You reckless spirit things, how dare you hinder our great flood-control plan? Today, move away or not, you will all die right here!"

While chuckling, he stomped his foot heavily against the ground. Under his feet, the fire skull suddenly opened its mouth and gave a muffled roar. Next, a tens of meters wide, sticky and strong dark flame roared towards the Kui Gate, followed by a long flame tail.

Chapter 1260: Force Them Away Together

Before the Kui Gate, mountain-like Dark Water Serpent coiled on the dark cloud like a mountain. You could see scorn from his green eyes, while he coldly looked at the three ghost fires released by Ghost Chariot Lie.

He didn’t take Dark Water Yao Yao’s death to heart. He had too many children, and Dark Water Yao Yao was only a relatively more talented one among them all. Dark Water Serpent was born to be cold and unsympathetic. No matter how many of his children died, their deaths would be worthy, as long as he could guard the Kui Gate well.

A dark-skinned, bald, strong man trod on the water, rushing out swiftly. Facing Ghosts Chariot Lie’s ghost fires, he roared resonantly, "I am Dark Water Hugh Hugh, the one who kills you!" Clicking his tongue, he continued, "Dark Water Yao Yao was so useless! I should have eaten him back then!"

Screaming shrilly, Dark Water Hugh Hugh opened his mouth and released a tens of meters wide, dark-green poisonous fireball, that swooshed across tens of miles and bumped heavily on the three ghost fires.

When the poisonous fireball and the there ghost fires struck against each other, something changed magically. A three-hundred-meters-wide, dark-blue fireball emerged in the sky, burning ragingly, letting out slight ghost cries along with large streams of poisonous gas and frigid gusts of wind.

Ghost Chariot Lie narrowed his eyes and laughed evilly. Raising his arm, he pulled out a weird long flag. The flagpole was made from a white bone, while the flag was woven from human hair. Painted on the purely dark flag were hundreds of twisted, strange spell symbols. Ghost Chariot Lie gripped the nearly ten-meters-long flag, and waved fiercely. All of a sudden, people on the scene

heard a high-pitched bird scream, which was not so pleasant to hear.

"Er~Quack!"

Following the bird scream, waves of pasty phantoms rushed out of the flag. Like dim white shooting stars, countless ghosts with hazy and twisted faces screamed across the sky, marching towards Dark Water Hugh Hugh while releasing a strong, dark power vibration.

From the castle built with bones and burning with a dark fire, hundreds of more young men with pasty faces and wearing white bone armors flew out, holding all weird kinds of weapon.

Bird skeletons, beast skeletons, dragon skeletons, different sized skulls, or simply single bone sticks, or a large piece of skin from an unknown living creature...

A frigid gale blew while the dark fire burned. Hundreds of young Ghost Chariot Family men rushed out, silently waving long flags which were same as the one held in Ghost Chariot Lie's hands. Ear-piercing ghost cries echoed through the dark clouds, while torrents of phantoms surged towards the Kui Gate.

"My!" Qiong Sang Sheng and You Chao Yu glanced at each other, and both sneered.

Abruptly, an extremely frigid power emerged around Ji Hao, while a deathly pale hand silently reached out of a gray mist, fiercely towards Ji Hao's neck.

If Ji Hao were an ordinary human Magus who never cultivated his soul and spirit but relied purely on his physical strength, his neck might be gripped in this suddenly appearing hand already. However, Ji Hao had his spirit power spread all the time, and everything within the area thousand-miles in radius around him was right under his watch.

Ji Hao discovered this hand once it appeared. He pretended to

know nothing, just staring at the Kui Gate. As the hand was about to land on Ji Hao's neck, he suddenly gave a cold snort, as a three-feet-tall golden fire burst from the back of his neck.

In his spiritual space, his embryo of Dao of sun locked its fingers together with its eyes dazzling with a golden light. That embryo of Dao triggered the essence sun fire, as much as Ji Hao could control with his current power.

The pale hand pressed directly on the essence sun fire. The essence sun fire was a purely positive fire, the natural destroyer of all evilness and darkness in the world. The moment this hand touched the golden fire on Ji Hao's neck, it was set ablaze, burning intensely.

The scream that came next was rather loud and shrill. A young man showed up behind Ji Hao, jumping like a flea while crazily shaking his burning right hand. This young man was wearing a long cloak woven from human hair. His skin was awfully pale, even slightly translucent, such that countless slowly squirming spell symbols were faintly visible under his skin.

Along with a sizzling noise, the skin and flesh of this young man's right hand were burned into ashes instantly, dissipating in the air. But, his gray, translucent bones remained. Those bones were probably cultivated with a secret, dark magic. Even after being burned by the essence sun fire, those bones were actually squirming like a sticky liquid. Twisted, hideous faces constantly emerged on those bones, screaming, crying, and turning into wisps of white smoke in the fire.

These twisted faces had been neutralizing the essence sun fire to keep this young man's hand from burning out.

Qiong Sang Sheng and You Chao Yu smirked together.

Si Wen Ming coughed slightly. He pulled Ji Hao's sleeve and said to him, "Ji Hao, this is Ghost Chariot Green Grass, the Master Elder of Ghost Chariot Clan. You can also call him Mi Green

Grass...He was joking with you. Take the fire back!"

More or less, Ji Wen Ming knew about Ji Hao and his strangely strong powers. Ji Hao was born in the Southern Wasteland, Fire Crow Clan. At first, the power he used was the power of Gold Crow, inherited through his bloodline. Gold Crow fire was also highly destructive for all kinds of evil. Later on, Ji Hao improved amazingly fast, and the Gold Crow fire he mastered upgraded into the stronger, more dreadful essence sun power.

Ghost Chariot Green Grass was indeed the Master Elder of Ghost Chariot Clan, as old, famous, and experienced as Qiong Sang Sheng and You Chao Yu. However, the essence sun fire was the natural enemy of all Ghost Chariot dark magics. He was old, and Ji Hao was young. Therefore, he intended to make fun of Ji Hao, but ended up humiliating himself!

As the Master Elder of Ghost Chariot Clan, he was injured badly by Ji Hao. If anyone else knew about this, Mi Green Grass would be too ashamed to see anyone ever again.

Ji Hao snorted coldly, then waved his right hand. The golden fire burning on Ghost Chariot Green Grass's hand disappeared instantly. He breathed deeply, then the skin and flesh on his hand speedily grew back. Within a blink of an eye, that hand recovered completely.

"Marquis Yao Ji Hao!" Ghost Chariot Green Grass proudly held his head high and shouted, "Wen Ming, little grandson, you've been working so hard under the storm these years. You must be exhausted, right? You've made enough contributions already. The last bit of work, just leave it to us!"

He smirked and continued coldly, "Our Ghost Chariot Clan is a member of the humankind. Some evil things attempted to bully us, surely we can't just sit and watch. These lowly spirit creatures, just let our boys deal with them!"

Once Ghost Chariot Green Grass finished, You Chao Yu took an

enormous step forward, reached to Si Wen Ming and said, "Yeah, yeah, Elder Green Grass is absolutely right. Si Wen Ming, you go and rest. You can’t take all the credits, can you?"

Before Si Wen Ming responded, Qiong Sang Sheng laughed out loud from aside and said, "Isn’t that right? Si Wen Ming, and you, Marquis Yao Ji Hao, you just go rest! Guards, escort these ministers to get some rest!"

Without giving Si Wen Ming and Ji Hao a chance to talk, nearly three-hundred warriors from Qiong Sang Family, You Chao Family, and Ghost Chariot Clan rushed up and surrounded Si Wen Ming and Ji Hao.

Ji Hao glanced at Si Wen Ming.

It seemed that if Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming refused to take their warriors away to rest, these three old powerful men from these three strong families and clan would truly do something to them, wouldn’t they?

Chapter 1261: Be Onlookers

Before the Kui Gate, the warriors roared thunderously.

The Ghost Chariot Clan, You Chao Family, and Qiong Sang Family had combined their strengths. Hundreds of strong young warriors released their powers and stormed at the Kui Gate.

Ghost Chariot Clan warriors raised bone-piercing frigid gusts of wind and sky-burning dark flames. From the dark clouds in the sky, strong dark-green fire streams descended towards the Kui Gate. Qiong Sang warriors flew all over the sky while releasing poison-fang-like sharp arrows from time to time. You Chao Family people fought even more straightforwardly. They hid in different sized flying forts and buildings, launching crazily attacks. Earth power, magnetic power, nine-sky aurora, all kinds of highly lethal attacks were launched like a storm.

Mountain-like waves were raised before the Kui Gate. Hundreds of dark water serpents had shown their original shapes, roaring thunderously and spurting out poisonous fires and gases, confronting warriors from the three families.

Thousands of different sized boas, serpents, and snakes followed behind those dark water serpents to help. They were not too powerful, but they did have gifts. They also raised ten-miles-tall waves easily, brought down thunderbolts from the sky.

The sky was covered in dark clouds. Dazzling thunderbolts descended every now and then. From time to time, those thunderbolts would land on You Chao Clan’s flying forts and building, make them sparkle brightly. Sometimes, those flying forts and buildings would even fall straight onto the water surface, splashing the water and then sway back into the sky.

The battle was intense, but Ji Hao and his friends were enjoying a leisurely time.

Three whole hundreds warriors from Ghost Chariot Clan, You Chao Family, and Qiong Sang Family stood in a distance away, glancing at Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming from time to time, in case they suddenly rushed into the battlefield to steal the credit.

Ji Hao didn't care. He let those warriors guard aside and watch him, while he relaxedly built a campsite with Man Man and Shaosi.

The nine dragons chariot floated in the sky, a hundred miles away from the ground. Mr. Crow stood on top of the chariot, releasing a dazzling golden light that poured down like the warm sunlight. It illuminated the entire area within a radius of thousands of miles.

On the mountainside, which was soaked by the flood, steam began rising from the sticky mud. The moist mountainside gradually became warm and dry. Human warriors resting on the mountainside laughed happily, stretched their bodies, and took off their clothes. They lied straight on the ground, enjoying the sunlight that they hadn't seen in a few years.

It was too comfortable. Many human warriors who had their limbs corroded by the flood, or were suffering from deep carbuncles, even started singing folk songs loudly. The sunlight created by Mr. Crow and the nine dragons chariot warmed and dried their skins, and felt even better than magical ointments.

Some energetic Maguspreists took out all kinds of seeds from their bags and created strong winds, spreading them in the area showered in the sunlight. Maguspreists who mastered green magics stood on the mountaintop, excitedly wielding their magic wands made from all kinds of powerful spirit trees. They incanted spells loudly and started an ancient, sacred dance, which was created by their ancestors to worship the Spring God and the Green God.

A beautiful, dreamy greenery immediately covered the whole

area. Tender grasses drilled out from the mud, soon turning waist-high. Wild flowers bloomed on the grassland, bursting with a thriving life-force, emitting a refreshing aroma that spread far.

Vividly colored mushrooms also popped out from the thick growth of grass; poisonous ones, innocuous ones, all kinds of mushrooms excitedly grew out. Some strange kinds of mushrooms exploded, causing popping noises as they sent spores into the winds, drifting far away.

All kinds of trees started growing in everywhere.

Under the promotion of magics, some fast-growing trees turned nearly a hundred meters tall within half an hour. Under the warm sunlight, the strong wind blew across the trees and rustled their leaves.

Human warriors on the mountainside, who had soaked in the flood for years, climbing on rocks and crawling in muds day after day while preparing to fight water-kind creatures at any moment, were all stunned. They stared at the grasses, the flowers, and the healthy, thriving trees all over the mountain...

All of a sudden, some warriors squatted on the ground and burst into a rage of tears. For an unknown reason, the crying spread speedily. Almost all warriors under Si Wen Ming's command held each other and began crying loudly. A strong sadness suffused the air. The three hundred warriors from the Ghost Chariot Clan, Qiong Sang Family, and You Chao Family glanced at each other, not knowing what to do. Soon, they blushed. They buried their faces in their hands and left.

They still had the sense of 'shame'. They clearly understood that in front of these warriors, who were almost soaked out of shape in the flood, they didn't even have the right to cry!

When Si Wen Ming and his warriors struggled in the flood for living, when Ji Hao and his warriors flew all over the sky, killed like machines and made blood shed like rains, they were hiding in

their homelands, protected by powerful magic formations. No hurricane or storm could ever hurt them. They were comfortable and safe, reserving their strengths.

But now, the ‘All Streams into the Final Land’ great formation was about to be completed, and only the final nine water gates were left to be broken through. So, they rushed out and attempted to attain the greatest credit of the entire flood-control mission...

Any of them who still had a slight sense of shame couldn’t bear to stay among these crying warriors.

Facing these exhausted human warriors, who were covered in both physical wounds and mental injuries, they didn’t even have the right to cry with them.

Ji Hao was busy building a tent with Man Man and Shaosi. The three powerful families forbade Si Wen Ming and Ji Hao from approaching the Kui Gate with their warriors, and Ji Hao would love to watch the show from this warm area. Since there was a show to watch, he decided to make himself as comfortable as possible. Therefore, Ji Hao was preparing to build a luxurious tent with hide, then make some nice tea, pour some wine, and grill some meat. Then, he would closely and carefully watch the three families break the Kui Gate.

Abruptly, he heard the painful, bitter cries all over the mountain. Ji Hao’s heart twitched slightly.

Looking around, Ji Hao glanced at the Kui Water. Over there, hundreds of miles away, warriors from the three families had been roaring thunderously. He laughed out loud and shouted, "Why are you crying? What are you crying for? Once the nine water gates are broken, the flood will be gone, and our best days will come! Why are you crying?"

"Laugh! Laugh with me!" Ji Hao laughed pretty despicably, "Brothers, we don’t need to fight with our lives anymore. Some people are willing to fight for us! They will get the nine water gates

for us! We can happily taste the wine and enjoy the meat over here, and watch the show! What are you crying for? Laugh!"

No one noticed that Ji Hao had cast a sky devil magic.

A strong sense of happiness spread out, immediately covering the entire area. Those crying human warriors were suddenly cheered up. Their eyes shone brightly, as if they saw a broad golden road right before their eyes.

Wasn’t that right? The flood would be gone, and the good days were coming! People were going to rebuild their homelands! Even better, they didn’t need to risk their lives to break the nine water gates anymore. Someone had been eagerly fighting for them, for the credits!

Countless human warriors laughed out loud together, even bending their bodies while looking at the Kui Gate.

The faces of Ghost Chariot Green Grass, Qiong Sang Sheng, and You Chao Yu instantly dropped. Ji Hao, what a sneaky boy! Was he expecting a show from the three families?

Chapter 1262: Suffer Heavy Casualties

Absorbing the warm sunshine, being healed by carefully concocted magic medicines, and enjoying cereals and fresh meat shipped ceaselessly from Pu Ban City, the warriors under Si Wen Ming's command regained their strengths and energies in about one day. Those scrawny warriors had enough food. Their injuries and skin diseases were all healed. Soon, they were again strong and energetic.

All the warriors were healthy and muscular again.

These years, Ji Hao had slaughtered countless water-kind creatures. He had sent all the useful materials he collected from those dead water-kind creatures to Pu Ban City. Those materials were turned into high-quality armors and weapons by craftsmen in the Magi Palace. A great batch of armors and weapon were shipped over from Pu Ban City and given to Si Wen Ming's warriors.

A day later, an elite, capable and well-equipped troop raised.

Scanning across countless warriors on the mountainside with his spirit power, Ji Hao nodded. Their power vibrations were strong as wild beasts. Without a doubt, every one of them was a marvelous fighter.

Struggling in the flood, showering in blood for years, the senses of power that came from these warriors all turned as strong and steady as the roots of an ancient, towering bamboo. Looking at their eyes, one would know that they were all determined, and would never give up.

Ji Hao sighed in praise silently. Because of the endless flood, the spirit of this troop under Si Wen Ming's command had been forged into a 'military soul'. Whenever it was needed, this troop would release a great power that could amaze the whole world.

What touched Ji Hao even more was that all these years, Si Wen

Ming lived and fought side by side with these warriors. He led his men with his actions; he fought the flood, the storm, billions of water-kind creatures. Therefore, the ‘military soul’ of this troop was carried by Si Wen Ming.

Si Wen Ming was the soul of this troop. His influence had gone far beyond all clans and families. His warriors now followed nothing else but his orders. No clan or family could ever command these warriors again.

"We gained more than we’ve lost!" Siting by the entrance of the large hide tent, Ji Hao poured Si Wen Ming a steaming cup of water. Si Wen Ming conveniently sprayed some salt into his tea.

Ji Hao threw a sideway glance at Si Wen Ming’s cup, slightly shook his head, then poured himself a cup too and started sipping.

The tea was raised with a Magi Palace magic, not as good as the naturally grown ones. However, the green power contained in this tea was hundreds of times stronger than any naturally grown tea. Therefore, the tea tasted amazing; its refreshing aroma would linger between the teeth, nourishing the internal organs, and make one feel great.

"Nice tea!" Si Wen Ming held the cup with both hands. But he did feel the tea made by Ji Hao was flavorless. Therefore, he found a thumb-sized piece of rock salt, threw into his cup, then said, "Yesterday, they only tried to find out how strong the enemies are. But today, they’re truly fighting…Where did You Chao Family find so much ‘nine-sky gales’ and ‘Aurora magnetic power’?"

They were truly fighting now. The Ghost Chariot Clan, Qiong Sang Family, and You Chao Family had over ten-thousand warriors from these three families attack the Kui Gate, which was merely about three-hundred-meters wide.

Ghost Chariot Clan people were still rising strong dark fires. Other than those twisted, hazy yet fierce evil ghosts, some strange spirits and dark souls were also mixed in the dark fires, screaming

and striking the defensive line of the dark water serpents before the gate constantly.

Thousands of elite warriors from Qiong Sang Family stood about a hundred miles away from the Kui Gate, in perfect square-shaped arrays. They pulled open their beautiful glowing longbows, releasing waves of arrows towards the gate.

This was the most commonly used and annoying fighting style created by Eastern Wasteland archers. These elite Qiong Sang warriors were much stronger than Ten Sun Country archers. Within every second, each of them could release thousands of arrows. Waves of arrows swept across the air like a storm. As a result, many dark water serpents, spirit boas and snakes had arrows stuck all over their bodies by now.

The most astonishing ones, the ones who made the deepest impression, were those You Chao Family warriors. Since always, You Chao Family people were good at building palaces, mansions, and designing defensive formations for all kinds of building. They had a special talent for architecture; they were the best architects among human beings.

But, they were never good at fighting. Based on the same power level, You Chao Family warriors were at least three-grades weaker than human warriors from other clans. Which meant, a peak-level Divine Magus from You Chao Family could only rival a low-level Divine Magus from other clans!

This was a bit embarrassed. You Chao Family played an important role among all human clans. People from their families were respected by the others. After all, they were all descendants of a human emperor. Nevertheless, they were not strong enough; consequently, their voices were never loud enough in the Town Hall.

But this time, their performances even shocked Ji Hao.

The nine-sky gale, earth-core poisonous fire, flowing flame lava,

thunderbolts, magnetic earth power, void aurora...

From those flying forts controlled by You Chao Family people, all kinds of rare and powerful things, those that could only be found in the most dangerous areas in Pan Gu world, had been spurting out, transforming into dazzling, colorful torrents, and pouring down towards the Kui Gate.

The nine-sky gale blew souls away.

The earth-core poisonous fire could melt almost all metals.

The flowing flame lava would never die before the targets were burned out.

The thunderbolts were unstoppable.

The magnetic earth power was constantly changing and unpredictable.

The void aurora was cruel and destructive...

You Chao Family warriors had been launching all kinds of rare attacks without a break. Sometimes, these rare powers would merge together and generate something new and even more powerful.

Many enormous dark water serpents were severely injured by the violent gale, or had all their scales burned broken. Some water-kind creatures were strangely twisted into sharp or obtuse angles in the sky, or spiraled, because they were hit by the magnetic earth power.

Some dark water serpents suddenly had countless holes on their bodies, without knowing why. Around those holes, their skins fell off rapidly like ashes. Apparently, these serpents were harmed by the void aurora.

After the first day, the warriors from the three families roughly learned how powerful these dark water serpents and the other water-kind creatures under their commands were, and had

discovered some of their weaknesses. The three families combined their strengths and fought side by side. Hundreds of dark water serpents were forced back further and further, even about to draw back into the Kui Gate.

Coiling on the dark clouds and having remained unmoved all this while, Dark Water Serpent abruptly moved.

Once the moved, even the sky seemed to collapse. His body suddenly expanded to hundreds of miles long, while his mountain-like head smashed violently, swiftly down towards warriors from the three families, causing a rumbling buzzing noise.

"Damn it!" Qiong Sang Sheng, You Chao Yu, and Ghost Chariot Green Grass shouted out simultaneously. They attempted to rush up and stop Dark Water Serpent, but how could they ever make it?

A series of howls was generated the first. In the frontline, hundreds of flying forts that belonged to You Chao Family were crushed by Dark Water Serpent. Hundreds of You Chao Family people desperately fled out of their forts, but ended up being swallowed by this tremendous serpent; not even a shoe survived.

Chapter 1263: Stalemate

A legendary ancient creature, the first dark water serpent in the world...

Dark Water Serpent's hundreds of miles long body descended from the sky. The dense, highly poisonous dark mist that puffed out of his mouth covered an area thousand miles in radius. Any human warrior who touched the mist or even inhaled a slight little bit, died by melting into puddles of blood.

Dark Water Serpent didn't have any complicated magic to cast. But, he had a stunningly strong body; he was as strengthful as Henggong Fish. That enormous body of his was weapon-proof and thunder-proof. His tremendous body turned in the air and his long tail swept across the sky, instantly generating a series of shrill howls, as over a thousand Qiong Sang Family young elites had all their bones whipped broken by the tail.

Whipped by Dark Water Serpent's tail, at least seven hundred warriors exploded. Their bones, blood, and flesh all blasted into clouds of red mist.

Dark Water Serpent widely opened his jaws and took a deep breath, inhaling all the blood mist in the sky. Nearly a thousand severely wounded warriors with broken bones and tendons were drawn into his giant mouth. They screamed in fear and pain, but they couldn't control their own bodies.

"Evil thing, how dare you!" Seeing young warriors from his families being swallowed by Dark Water Serpent alive, Qiong Sang Sheng burst with a raging growl while flashing across the sky and instantly showing up right before Dark Water Serpent's face. He raised his hands, pulled out a fist-thick whip from his sleeve, then gripped it with both his hands and lashed straight down at Dark Water Serpent's head.

This nearly hundred miles long, fist-thick whip was dark and

transparent. Clearly, it was a special piece. A dreadful power that belonged to a prehistorical beast had been releasing from the whip. When Qiong Sang Sheng swung the whip fiercely, even Dark Water Serpent himself was surprised. He widely opened his eyes and stared at the whip.

"Hmm, the spinal cord of the first Tao Wu in the world...Back then, after Yi shot him dead, his bones, flesh, and skin all fell into the hands of the east people. This cord is interesting though!" murmured Dark Water Serpent with a low voice, "If Zhu Wu were here himself, I might be slightly afraid of him. But he's dead, and this is only a cord of his...hehe!"

Dark Water Serpent smirked and didn’t even take a glance at Qiong Sang Sheng, but let the whip land on his body.

Pop! It was thunderously loud. A ten-mile-long stream of fiery light was generated against Dark Water Serpent’s head. A long, faintly white line was left on his dark scales by the whip.

He gave a muffled snort, shook his head, then threw a glimpse at Qiong Sang Sheng in surprise, "You’re strong, aren’t you? You even made me feel dizzy. Qiong Sang Family, you do have a few talents."

Coiled in a dense black smoke, a man leaped down from above the Kui Gate. That was an old man, skinny as a skeleton. With his upper body bared, he gripped a dark bone staff with both his hands. Standing in front of Qiong Sang Sheng, this old man laughed with a hissing voice and said, "Qiong Sang Sheng, you don’t get to fight our Great Ancestor!"

"I am Dark Water Fang. Come on, let’s play!" continued this old man.

Qiong Sang Sheng bravely attacked Dark Water Serpent. Facing Dark Water Serpent, Qiong Sang Sheng was fearless, probably because he didn’t know much about him.

However, his look suddenly turned extremely serious as he saw Dark Water Fang. Apparently, he knew what Dark Water Fang could do. "Dark Water Fang, the Master Maguspreist of Dark Water Serpent Clan… Don’t you forget that you are a human being too!"

"We are human beings indeed, but our powers are from our Great Ancestor!" Dark Water Fang laughed with that hissing voice, "We are willing to follow our Great Ancestor, follow Lord Gong Gong to sweep across the world…When Lord Gong Gong’s great plan is accomplished, we will be the owners while you will all be slaves!"

Wielding the dark long bone staff, Dark Water Fang created a dense, dark mist, spreading behind his body. From within the mist, countless tiny black snakes wriggled out, hovering slowly around him. Meanwhile, he said, "Therefore, don’t say too many useless words. We…The strongest becomes the king!"

Qiong Sang Sheng flicked his wrist. The long whip in his hand suddenly shrank to about three meters long, as thin as a hair.

Next, he took out a crescent-shaped longbow from his sleeve, tied the whip on both its ends, and made an oddly shaped longbow. The bow instantly released a much stronger prehistorical beast power, gradually condensing into the head of an enormous, ancient beast behind Qiong Sang Sheng.

"This is Tao Wu bow. If it hurts you, you die. Black Water Fang, you need to be careful!" With a serious look, Qiong Sang Sheng stared at Black Water Fang.

Black Water Fang smirked, then suddenly burst into a howl. Following his voice, countless tiny black snakes darted towards Qiong Sang Sheng from the dark mist around him, leaving beams of dark light in the air.

Qiong Sang Sheng flashed across the air, leaving over a thousand afterimages in the sky. He pulled the bow open and released a series of arrows, swishing towards Dark Water Fang shrilly one after another.

Dark Water Fang was roaring thunderously. He let out dense mists from his mouth, forcing back warriors from the Ghost Chariot Clan, You Chao Family and Qiong Sang Family.

You Chao Yu and Ghost Chariot Green Grass rushed up and attempted to fight against Dark Water Fang. But, Dark Water Tusk and Dark Water Tush leaped down from the Kui Gate and stopped them. These two were also skinny old men. They each cast a strange magic and started an intense fight against You Chao Yu and Ghost Chariot Green Grass. In the meanwhile, Dark Water Serpent and hundreds of his offsprings, and tens of thousands of spirit boas and snakes, pounced down. They were almost directly slaughtering warriors from the three families.

From the back of the enormous golden-winged rock bird that belonged to Qiong Sang Family, the mountain on the cloud that belonged to You Chao Family, and the flying bone castle that belonged to Ghost Chariot Family, large groups of human warriors flew out. They formed square arrays and attacked Dark Water Serpent fiercely.

The war drums were beating rumblingly. The drummers from the three families roared like beasts, even shaking the sky.

But how could they ever stop frenzied attacks launched by Dark Water Serpent? They had tried their best, but only managed to start puffs of fire sparkles against the scales of Dark Water Serpent. On the contrary, every time Dark Water Serpent swung his tail, a large number of human warriors could be sent flying into the sky, vomiting blood.

Dark Water Serpent rushed into the arrays of warriors from the three families, like a giant bumping into a group of ants. By slightly moving his body, he killed thousands of warriors; by conveniently breathing out a cloud of poisonous mist, he made a large group of warriors turn into rotten blood.

In a quarter of an hour, at least thirty-thousand warriors had

fallen. Dark Water Serpent was enormous in shape, but after swallowing tens of thousands of human beings, even he burped. Clearly, he was stuffed by all the human spirit blood.

"Hm, I’m full, full...Boys, kill as many as you can!" Dark Water Serpent murmured, "Eat these human beings, as many as you can. Good for you cultivation. I’ll go take a nap...These useless things, why should I fight them myself?"

Dark Water Serpent turned around and wriggled to the Kui Gate. The moment he relaxed his vigilance, a hundred and eight oddly shaped, black pyramids descended from the sky, releasing the powers of earth, water, fire, and wind, weaving into a giant cage in the sky that locked Dark Water Serpent perfectly in.

Buzz! A mile-thick light screen was released from those pyramids, with countless spell symbols rolling in it, creating a strong power vibration.

"Eh? Who is it?" Dark Water Serpent bumped straight onto the light, yet the light screen didn’t even shake.

"I am You Chao Wise! I am here to kill you!" From the mountain on the clouds, a dry and old voice could be heard.

Chapter 1264: Strong Armies

"These are?" From hundreds of miles away, Si Wen Ming clearly saw the one hundred and eight pyramids which had Dark Water Serpent trapped. But, he could only see the outsides of these pyramids.

Each pyramid was about thirty-six-meters-tall, purely dark and lustrous. From time to time, countless tiny spell symbols would flash on the surfaces of these pyramids from the insides like burning flames, and then, a complicated and dense pattern would sparkle across the surface of each pyramid.

A hundred and eight pyramids shone dazzlingly, creating an enormous pyramid of light with Dark Water Serpent trapped in it. The pyramid of light was two-hundred and eighty miles tall, with the base three-hundred miles squared in area. It was a large-scale formation. Every single pyramid had been releasing strong earth power, water power, fire power, and wind power, merging with the thick light screens surrounding Dark Water Serpent.

Dark Water Serpent sensed a danger. He rampantly struggled in the formation, bumping against those strong light screens and venting his terrifying power. But, the giant pyramid of light remained perfectly motionless, even though Dark Water Serpent had used all of his strength.

"Strong things!" Si Wen Ming was strong indeed, but limited by the cultivation system of human beings, he could only observe these pyramids with his physical eyes. Unlike him, Ji Hao carefully scanned across every detail of these pyramids by using his spirit power. His spirit power had even drilled into these pyramids. Through his spirit power, he clearly saw the complicated structure of these pyramids.

"Truly strong things, but does not seem complete." Ji Hao nodded. These pyramids were indeed great treasures. In mere

terms of materials, these pyramids were made from divine materials mentioned by brother Kua E years ago when he built the Yao Mountain City for Ji Hao. Those ‘divine materials’ used in these pyramids were even better than all divine materials used in Yao Mountain City, by three grades.

You Chao Family was so much wealthier than Ji Hao that the materials used on these pyramids could even be compared with those used on buildings in the heaven. Not to mention how strong the defensive power of this great pyramid formation was, every single pyramid was especially sturdy and strong. According to Ji Hao’s estimation, no one beneath the level of Supreme Magi could harm even a little bit of these pyramids.

These pyramids were ingeniously designed. In terms of many details, the systems of spell symbols and the absorption of natural powers of these pyramids were even as great as the divine towers that belonged to the non-humankind.

Furthermore, every pyramid had a powerful after-world spirit treasure as its core. Ji Hao scanned across these treasures and sensed pure and strong natural powers. Those were all naturally crafted spirit treasures, amazingly powerful.

One hundred and eight after-world spirit treasures, even Ji Hao was shocked by the total value of those.

The only weakness of these pyramids was that the designers seemed to forget about ‘spirit power’. In front of people like Ji Hao, who had strong spirit powers, these pyramids were almost transparent. Scanned by Ji Hao’s spirit power, all the secrets of these pyramids were soon and completely exposed.

"Years ago, we heard that You Chao Family achieved an important breakthrough in copying the non-humankind’s divine towers." Si Wen Ming stood up while holding his teacup, looking at the one hundred and eight pyramids as he said coldly, "One time, Emperor Shun visited them himself and asked them if that were

true."

"I guess they denied, didn't they?" Ji Hao took a glance at Si Wen Ming.

"Look at these strangely shaped towers. If we can build a large number of these in the Chi Ban Mountain area, how many warriors won't have to die or be injured when the non-humankind attacks?" Si Wen Ming clenched his fingers and crushed the teacup. In his hand, the teacup turned into a strand of smoke.

Looking at You Chao Wise, who was standing on top of the mountain on the cloud, Si Wen Ming continued with that cold voice, "You Chao Family...These people are too selfish. For such powerful, important weapons, our alliance of human clans never wanted their secret techniques. Instead, we only wanted to purchase finished products from them. Yet they...denied."

Si Wen Ming's face was filled with sadness; his eyes were lusterless, occupied by confusion.

The nine dragons chariot and Mr. Crow were still shining in the sky, warming and illuminating this mountain area. In the surroundings, well-recovered warriors had been laughing and resting. Beside Ji Hao, a little charcoal stove had a small potful of water boiling on it.

So warm, so lively... But Si Wen Ming stood right beside Ji Hao, somehow sad and lonely.

Ji Hao put down the teacup, stood up, and threw a heavy punch on Si Wen Ming's shoulder, "Whatever they've done, we focus on our own works. Uncle Wen Ming...These stingy families and clans, we'll have a chance to teach them a lesson."

Crossing his arms over his chest, Ji Hao looked at the Kui Water, where the battle was still going on. Once again, he brought up the topic that he had mentioned to Si Wen Ming years ago, late at night. "All in all, the alliance of human clans has no binding force

for these powerful families and clans. Not to mention these strange towers, uncle Wen Ming, look at these three families...When we risked our lives against the flood, I didn’t see them send out so many people to help!"

Si Wen Ming slowly blinked his lusterless eyes, took a long breath, and said with a deep voice, "If human beings want to be strong..."

Ji Hao raised his eyebrows and straightforwardly gave the conclusion, "We have to combine all our strengths and wisdom. This world belongs to our humankind, not one family or one clan. Therefore, we have to abandon families and clans...I hope that in the future, when our warriors are facing the enemies, they won’t say the names of their families or clans anymore..."

"We need a united name! A name admitted and approved by all human beings...We need to be united!" Ji Hao tilted his head and looked at Si Wen Ming seriously.

Tens of dark water serpents roared with rumbling hissing voices. They transformed into their original, enormous forms, and bumped violently into the pyramid formation, attempting to break it and free their great ancestor.

All of a sudden, countless meters thick electric bolts dazzled out from the pyramid formation. Struck by the electric bolts, the bodies of those dark water serpents turned translucent. Through their scales and skin, one could see their dark-blue bones.

More and stronger electric bolts emerged in the formation, striking on Dark Water Serpent’s body. They broke his skin and raised thick dark smoke from his jaws.

"Hehe, You Chao Wise, these weapons you created are not bad. How much are these for? Our Cloud Sun Family will buy a hundred sets of this from you!"

A thick thundercloud swiftly approached from the west. The

thundercloud was tens of miles long and wide, filled with strong warriors in golden armors.

"Old Cloud Sun Family b*stard, do you think that our Wuchang Family is poor? These weapons are indeed nice. Sell us three-hundred sets first!"

Another cloud drifted over from the west, emitting a sharp cold power. Different sized, hailstones had been falling down from that cloud.

"Cloud Sun Family, Wuchang Family, you're both here! We are the Chu Wu Clan. When it comes to making contributions to the humankind, how can we not come?"

A breeze blew across, along with which, over a hundred thousand warriors showed up suddenly before the Kui Gate. Their helmets were made from beast bones, and their bodies were covered in whole pieces of animal skin. The power vibration they released was strong and strange. These people were pretty striking.

Within about ten breaths, eighteen families and clans arrived. In total, over a million elite warriors gathered before Kui Gate.

Chapter 1265: Fire Crows

Cloud Sun Family people were descendants of an ancient divine god, half-god and half-human. They were capable of controlling the wind, the rain, and all animals in the world. They were the beloved ones of the world. Cloud Sun Family was one of the few families and clans in the alliance of human clan which possessed the highest status.

Wuchang Family people were descendants of another ancient divine god, also half-god and half-human. They had the power to control wind and thunder, turn mountains and oceans upside down. These people were mysterious and secret, and this family was known as the one closest to the divine world.

Chu Wu, literally meant ‘the first Magus’. As the name stated, Chu Wu Clan people were originated from the oldest Magi in the world. Back in the ancient time, the strongest and wisest Magi with the most extreme thoughts and the oddest tempers from many human clans gathered together and created the Chu Wu Clan. They were proud. They believed that they were as powerful as divine gods. They despised divine gods; they looked down upon the humankind.

Changwu Clan people were known as the closest ones to divine gods, but Chu Wu Clan people believed that they were even more powerful than true divine gods!

The Chu Wu Clan had a long history. From this clan, the first Magus who actually managed to regrow his body from a single drop of blood emerged, as well as the one who regrew his broken head. Back in the era of Emperor Fuxi, a Chu Wu Clan Magus claimed that he had created the ‘drug for immortality’.

Chu Wu Clan people were crazy. Each of them was perusing the great Dao they believed in. For achieving their goals, they could do anything. When Emperor Shennong was ruling the human world,

a Magus from Chu Wu Clan believed that Shennong's spirit blood contained the essence herbal power, and with that, a new drug for immortality could be created. For this very reason, that Magus crazily attempted to assassinate Emperor Shennong three times!

Si Wen Ming was only slightly stressed, as Cloud Sun Clan and Wuchang Clan both came for the credit. However, when Chu Wu Clan people suddenly showed up, Si Wen Ming's face turned pure dark, as if thunderbolts would dart out of that face at any time.

Ji Hao silently recalled what he had read about Chu Wu Clan in a secret record in the Magi Palace. He looked at the sky speechlessly. These Chu Wu Clan people, they were truly mad scientists. For their magic studies, they could do all kinds of crazy things completely beyond other people's understanding.

The problem was that these crazy Chu Wu Clan never had any interest in the power of the human society. Normally, they lived solitarily in the Magi Ancestor Mountain, without coming out. Ordinary people couldn't even find a trace of them.

But why did they show up to attack the Kui Gate? Did they suddenly think it through? Had they tasted the sweetness of power now? Did they want the throne too?

The Ghost Chariot Clan, You Chao Family, Qiong Sang Family, added with the eighteen families and clans that arrived later, sent out their warriors and formed a great army which surrounded the Kui Gate.

Between the Kui Gate and the army was the pyramid formation, which looked like a glowing, enormous pyramid. Dark Water Serpent was trapped in the formation, with countless dragon-like thunderbolts striking heavily on his body, burning his skin and making him scream.

This formation was constructed with one hundred and eight dark small pyramids, each containing an after-world spirit treasures as the core. That meant Dark Water Serpent was being beaten by one

hundred and eight after-world spirit treasures together. Even as the first dark water serpent, one of the first generation of living creatures un the world, he was harmed awfully, such that even his roars sounded weak now.

"You Chao Family boys, you leave all of this old loach's spirit blood for me! All its spirit blood is mine! If you dare to take one single drop, I will go to your hometown and try my new bloodline curse there!" screamed a Chu Wu Clan Magus, who was wearing a dragon-bone helmet, body wrapped in a long piece of dark dragon skin.

This scary-looking old man laughed and continued screaming, "You boys listen carefully. Among all the trophies, my people and I will pick first, then you pick. Otherwise, our Chu Wu Clan will never forgive you!"

Cloud Sun Family, Wuchang Family, You Chao Family, Qiong Sang Family...All the other families and clans either originated from ancient divine emperors or had raised human emperors. But facing the crazy Chu Wu Clan people, they glanced at each other, and none of them said a word.

Violent people might be afraid of strong people, strong people might be afraid of desperate people, and desperate people might be afraid of bigots!

Chu Wu Clan people were typical bigots. Any sane human being would never want to start a conflict against them!

One had to mention again that they even tried to assassinate Emperor Shennong! Back then, Shennong was the human emperor and the most powerful being in the human world. Besides, he had a great reputation, and was respected and supported by almost all human clans.

These crazy people dared to try to assassinate even a man like Shennong, not to mention anyone else! Going to one's hometown, and curse or poison their families? These people would totally do

what they said!

Seeing the leaders of all the other clans remain silent, this Chu Wu Clan old man laughed proudly and said, "I am Wu Gu. Wu as Magus, Gu as that Gu you know...As my name states, my art of Gu is the best among human beings, the best in the world!"

Holding his head high, Wu Gu continued proudly, "This time, our Chu Wu Clan came to the Kui Gate not to make contributions, but to collect materials! Therefore, to do what, and how, you should all know! If you don't, I can help!"

Looking at Wu Gu from a distance away and hearing him yell at the others, Ji Hao sneered, said, "This old man, how dare he talk like that? Uncle Wen Ming..."

Si Wen Ming slowly nodded and said in a deep voice, "Wu Gu? I've heard about him. He...meant what he said. His art of Gu can truly be counted as the best among human beings. Be careful if you have to talk to him. Try your best to not offend him."

Ji Hao paused. Si Wen Ming sounded serious. As he made Si Wen Ming talk so seriously, that old man named Wu Gu seemed to be a truly big deal.

Wu Gu was still stating his requests. Being trapped in the pyramid formation, Dark Water Serpent suddenly burst with a thunderous roar.

"What are you doing? Watching the show? If I die, none of you can live!"

Following his voice, raging flames rose into the sky from the mountains on both sides of the Kui Gate, even turning the dark clouds in the sky red. Scorching hot airstreams surged over from all directions, while the one-thousand-miles-wide area in the sky above the Kui Gate became like a boiling red ocean.

Shrill crow caws could be heard. With his sharp eyesight, Ji Hao saw hundreds of thousands of expressionless strong warriors show

up in the air above the Kui Gate. Each of them was holding a large red flag, which were all the same. They gripped the flags with both hands and waved strongly, releasing countless glowing-red fire crows.

Unlike fire crows who lived under the Gold Black Mountain back in Southern Wasteland, these fire crows that flew out from those flags didn't have tangible bodies. Instead, their bodies were condensed from fires. Apparently, these were creatures of the natural fire power.

Those fire crows cawed with high-pitched yet hoarse voices, which were not so pleasant to hear. They created an ocean of flame while darting towards the great allied army from the twenty-one families and clans, leaving blinding beams of fiery light in the sky.

Within a blink of an eye, the army of over a million was covered entirely by these fire crows.

Chapter 1266: Vent The Anger

Ji Hao watched those fire crows transform into flowing fiery light streams and drown the allied army.

The one hundred and eight pyramids belonging to the You Chao Family buzzed deeply. The formation that had Dark Water Serpent trapped in it suddenly collapsed. Those dark pyramids darted in the sky and formed a mountain-shaped formation above the army, releasing a strong light shield that covered the army firmly.

Fiery crows cawed noisily while bumping rampantly on the defensive formation. But, not even a ripple of light was stirred up from the defensive formation. Warriors stood in the formation and pointed at enemies above the Kui Gate. Some even laughed out loud intentionally, even louder than those fire crows.

Dark Water Serpent was freed from the pyramid formation. He fiercely released dense clouds of poisonous gas towards the army. After finding out that the poisonous gas couldn’t drill even an inch into the defensive formation, he disappointedly shrank to about ten miles long, slowly raised a dark cloud, and flew back to before the Kui Gate. Coiled again on the dark cloud, he closed his eyes and seemed to fall asleep.

Fire Crows had been diving down from above the Kui Gate ceaselessly. Half of the sky was burned red by the fire.

Protected by the defensive formation, the army had nothing to fear. Leaders of all clans and families gathered together, arguing against each other.

"We can’t count on them!" Ji Hao shook his head as he glanced at the hundreds of warriors in the surroundings, who were put here to watch Si Wen Ming and Ji Hao. Holding his hands behind his body, Ji Hao walked back into the tent behind him.

Si Wen Ming gave a long sigh. Looking around at his warriors,

who had regained their strengths and energies, he remained silent for a while, seeming to be thinking about something. Following behind Ji Hao, he walked into the tent as well.

Soon, what almost infuriated Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming happened — The leaders of those clans and families actually sent two to three hundred warriors from each family or clan to Si Wen Ming and Ji Hao' campsite, and surrounded their tent.

A few Chu Wu Clan Magi even set up all kinds of early warning formations around their tent. The alarms would go off immediately after Si Wen Ming and Ji Hao left the tent for about three steps far. In the sky and underground, this entire area around the tent was now filled with all kinds of early warning formations.

A Cloud Sun commander stood by the entrance of the tent. He grinningly and quickly bowed to Ji Hao, who had an extremely dark face, and said, "Marquis Chong, Marquis Yao, thanks for your hard works in the past few years! You must be exhausted. As for the final nine water gates, you can just watch."

After saying this with a nice face, this commander's look changed so suddenly, which made him even like a crazy dog. With a sulky face and a grim tone, he continued, "Marquis Chong, Marquis Yao, please remember this. You better stay in this tent these days. We will send you the foods and the drinks. If you want women, we will get you any type of woman you want!"

"Breaking the nine water gates, everyone cares so much about that. Marquis Chong, Marquis Yao, please don't do anything that might make we misunderstand....If, I said if, any conflict happens between your people and us..."

Ji Hao made a step forward and threw a slap straight to the face of this commoner, who was totally above himself.

Si Wen Ming almost foresaw this. He flashed to Ji Hao, but didn't have the time to drag Ji Hao's arm. Therefore, he could only stand

before Ji Hao to protect that commander.

Ji Hao's palm almost slapped on Si Wen Ming's head. He hurriedly took back his hand, twisted his body and slipped nimbly away from Si Wen Ming, fast as a loach. Then, he raised his right foot and kicked violently on this commander's crotch.

That Cloud Sun Family commander slightly curved up his lip corners, as if he were glad to see this happen. In the meanwhile, he scornfully snorted while launching a heavy elbow strike with his right elbow to Ji Hao's foot.

This time, Si Wen Ming didn't manage to stop it.

Boom! Ji Hao's flood dragon skin boot was shattered into bits, while the commanders' one-inch-thick metal arm protector sparkled with a dazzling group of spell symbol, then being quaked into thousands of bits by Ji Hao's foot.

A blood mist spread in the air as the commander's elbow crushed under Ji Hao's foot. His left forearm fell on the ground, with fingers twitching intensely.

"You..." The commander's face turned pale, while around three-hundred warriors under his command pulled out their blades and approached Ji Hao.

"You say one more useless word, I will lead my army join the water-kind and kill you all!" Ji Hao's eyeballs turned into a scary pure silver color. He sent the extremely negative power to every corner of his body, generating a thin cracking noise from the air around him. Thin blue ice flakes emerged in the sky, and slowly drifted down to the ground.

The air temperature dropped rapidly. Even the air was frozen by the cold power released from Ji Hao's body.

"Do you believe that I will join the water-kind and kill you all?" Ji Hao stared at the commander's pale face with a dark, evil look. "Do you believe it?"

"You, do you dare to?" The commander tremblingly pointed at Ji Hao.

"Wanna try? Point at me with that finger of yours again. Do I dare? Wanna try?" Ji Hao gave a frigid, vicious grin, then laughed with a cold voice, "And you can make a bet with me, whether Emperor Shun will punish me or not after I kill you all."

A silver light sphere rose from Ji Hao's head. A terrifying cold power swept across the entire mountainside. Soon, this whole area was covered with a thick layer of ice. Muffled cracking noises could be heard from frozen rocks on the mountain.

"Or, you can make a bet whether...Emperor Shun will be able to punish me after that?" Ji Hao was so angry that he said this straightforwardly.

The commander stared at Ji Hao stunned. He even forgot to trigger spirit blood to heal his wounds in panic. He looked at Ji Hao, sensing his power and the cold silver light in his eyes. Did he truly offend someone that was hard to deal with?

But according to the information about Ji Hao that was with the Cloud Sun Family and some other clans and families, Marquis Yao Ji Hao didn't have a great background! He was just a lucky boy from a small Southern Wasteland clan. Supported by Si Wen Ming, he earned his small territory and low position. How could he release a power that was even scarier than the power of the Master Elder of Cloud Sun Family?

"I...I..." The commander dared not to say anything else. Commanders sent over by the other clans and families to watch Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming dared not to talk either.

"Piss off!" Ji Hao slapped on this commander's face and sent him flying far away, then shouted fiercely, "Remember, we will not eat or drink whatever you give us! We will tell you what we want, and you have to bring those to us! If we want to eat dragon livers and phoenix guts, you bring those to us. If we want to drink dragon

marrow and phoenix blood, you bring those to us!"

"If I want a woman, even if the one I want is your mother, you bring her to me! If you don’t, I will kill you!"

Nearly a hundred warriors had approached him. Glaring at those badly shocked warriors, Ji Hao sneered and suddenly moved. Almost simultaneously, he gave each warrior a heavy slap on the face, and sent all of them flying away.

"Phew!" Ji Hao let out a heavy breath, then laughed out loud towards the sky, "Finally feels better...We need to find something to do!"

Si Wen Ming helplessly looked at Ji Hao. But somehow, Ji Hao felt that Si Wen Ming was trying so hard to not laugh, wasn’t he?

Chapter 1267: The Key

Ji Hao told Yemo Shayi to prepare his sword to kill, then secretly gathered nearly ten-thousand Jia Clan elites, who were best at killing. In the meanwhile, he sneakily prepared nearly a thousand divine towers in Si Wen Ming's campsite.

He was hundred percent ready to start a great battle against those families and clans. However, those families and clans made no reaction.

The commander who had his arm kicked broken by Ji Hao was transferred back to the army. Now, those warriors sent over to watch Si Wen Ming and Ji Hao had stopped following closely behind them everywhere. Instead, they moved to further areas. Many early warning formations around the tent were taken away too.

Ji Hao lost his temper, but somehow, this seemed to make those people realize that they shouldn't push Si Wen Ming and Ji Hao too far. Therefore, they didn't do anything about it, but focused on the Kui Gate.

Three days had passed. Ji Hao was evilly preparing for a great fight, but now, he disappointingly looked at the Kui Gate, which was burning with the flame of war. He sighed helplessly. Seeing this, the warriors responsible for watching him hurriedly turned around, in case Ji Hao saw them and beat them up in front of everyone else.

Standing by the entrance of the gate, and having watched for quite a while, Ji Hao saw the raging flames around the Kui Gate, and arrows darting in the air. All kinds of weird magics were cast, and all types of powers bumped against each other in the sky. From time to time, warriors from different clans and families ganged up and rushed to the Kui Water disorderly. But, before they could do anything useful, the water-kind army guarding the gate

would attack and force them back.

Si Wen Ming's trusted guards had been rushing in and out, reporting the war situation to him.

The contents of their reports varied. One said that a young elite from Cloud Sun Family was killed; one said that a Magus from Chu Wu Clan was injured seriously; one excitedly rushed over and reported that over ten dark water serpents, boas, and snakes were taken out. But soon, the same man returned with a dark face and told that a squad of the human army was wiped out, and the situation was not good.

The situation was not good indeed, like wet gelatin, sticky and muddy. Everyone was stuck in this gelatin, and couldn't release the power, but could neither get out of it.

Another twenty-four hours later, Ji Hao couldn't restrain his anger anymore. He flipped his hands, walked into the tent, and cast a sealing magic. He insulated the sounds inside the tent, then sat heavily in front of Si Wen Ming.

"Gong Gong does have capable people under his command. They've prepared properly around the nine final water gates. Armies, formations, they have all the advantages. Breaking the gates...Those people can never do it."

Si Wen Ming had a long scroll spread in front of them, glowing with a dim light. It was a blueprint, the entire 'all streams to the final land' great formation was drawn on it. Si Wen Ming pointed his finger heavily on the area of the nine water gates.

"Those people, they have one thing wrong. For the battle of the nine gates, our purpose is not destroying Gong Gong's armies as much as possible. Instead, we have to break the nine gates!" said Si Wen Ming with a deep voice, "What we should be doing is damaging the nine gates and creating a broad water channel for Midland."

Snorting coldly, Si Wen Ming continued a bit helplessly, "If we want to destroy Gong Gong's armies, we can kill them all anytime we want when the flood is gone, and those water-kind creatures become food on chopping boards."

"But good for them, they now want to kill Dark Water Serpent and all of his offsprings. They are only thinking about how to completely wipe out the water-kind army before the Kui Gate," said Si Wen Ming with a bland, slightly taunting tone.

"Look at them. Attacking strongly, luring the enemies into traps, besieging, provoking...They've used all kinds of strategies, and indeed killed a large number of water-kind creatures under Dark Water Serpent's command...But, what's the point?"

Spreading his hands, Si Wen Ming gave a bitter smile, then looked at Ji Hao and said, "Seriously, we can't count on them. We've fought so hard for today. If we are stuck here by the final nine water gates...One more day the flood last, one more day our people will suffer."

Ji Hao narrowed his eyes and looked at the blueprint. Carefully looking at the nine water gates area for a while, he responded with a deep voice, "Let them play. They want the credit, let them risk their lives for it. We focus on what we should be doing. Breaking the nine gates? Hmm, this area has such a strong earth meridian power. It won't be easy for us to damage these tens of miles long mountain ranges!"

Si Wen Ming took out a whip-like, dark yellow thing from his sleeve. The object was coiled in a mist. It seemed to be metallic, but not entirely, and was covered in complicated patterns.

"This is a 'mountain driving whip', a treasure that belonged to the Earth Emperor. It has the power to move earth meridians and control the flow directions of the earth power." Stroking the six-foot-long whip, Si Wen Ming said frowningly, "It's just..."

Ji Hao reached out his hand, grabbed over the whip, and swung it

in the air.

He immediately sensed a special heaviness from the whip. He felt that he wasn't holding a short whip, but instead, lifting a continent. The whip was not heavy, only about one hundred and fifty kilograms, but Ji Hao could barely hold it.

Ji Hao sent his spirit power into the whip, then spread out towards all directions. All of a sudden, Ji Hao's spirit power drilled into the ground magically and smoothly, like fishes returning to the water.

One hundred miles, one thousand miles, ten-thousand miles...A million miles...His spirit power moved freely underground, through all earth meridians. Holding the whip, Ji Hao's spirit power easily scanned across all mountains and hills within the area ten million miles in radius. By using his spirit power, Ji Hao could now recognize every single mountain in this area. All those mountains and hills seemed to become docile puppies, and as long as Ji Hao gives his order, they would follow his mind and moves.

"This..." Ji Hao grinned happily, "Uncle Wen Ming, we have such a powerful treasure, then what are you worrying about?"

Si Wen Ming shook his head, smiled bitterly and said, "The only problem is that mountains can only move slowly under the effect of this treasure. Every twenty-four hours, a mountain can move thirty to fifty miles at most. To make the Kui Gate broad enough to allow the flood go through, it will take at least a month."

A month, it was not long, but not so short either. A month would be enough for Gong Gong to come up with all kinds of solutions, and for those powerful human clans and families to cause more troubles.

Neither Gong Gong nor those powerful clans would give Si Wen Ming enough time to move those mountains away with the whip and create a broad water channel.

About obstructing Si Wen Ming, those powerful human families and clans were on the same side with Gong Gong!

"Uncle Wen Ming...I have an idea! Hmm, but you may have to bear some blame for it!"

Ji Hao gripped the whip, pondered for a while, then laughed.

Chapter 1268: Sneak Into the Kui Gate

Ji Hao withdrew his troops.

Right in front of those elite warriors from the twenty-one powerful families and clans, Ji Hao cursed out loud for a while, then left with his people. Watched by all those warriors, Si Wen Ming tried to persuade Ji Hao to stay for quite a while, but failed. Ji Hao still left. His last words made the faces of all people from the twenty-one families and clans turn dark.

"I'm going back. These years, I've been darting around Midland restlessly. I killed millions and millions of enemies. I didn't fail Emperor Shun, didn't fail Uncle Wen Ming, didn't fail all human beings! I'm going back. My Yao Mountain territory might have been flattened already. My parents and my so many brothers are still waiting for me back there!"

"With you powerful ones, the nine final gates won't be a problem. People, the future of the humankind is in your hands now. I'm heading back to Yao Mountain territory. Powerful ones from Cloud Sun Family, Wuchang Family, You Chao Family, Qiong Sang Family, and all the other families, I wish you can stop the flood as soon as possible, save us human beings from the disaster, and allow us to rebuild out homelands!"

After shouting these words with many hidden meanings, Ji Hao left with his people.

Probably for showing his strength or venting his rage before he left, Ji Hao beheaded the thousands of priests chained on the nine dragons chariot. He cast a magic to create an iceberg before the Kui Gate, and piled the heads of those priests on it.

Thousands of bloody and twisted heads were placed on the iceberg, staring at You Chao Yu, Qiong Sang Sheng and the others with lifeless eyes. Seeing this, the leaders of the twenty-one powerful families and clans even had their lips trembling in anger,

yet they could do nothing to Ji Hao.

Ji Hao swaggered off, leaving a great mess behind.

Si Wen Ming failed to persuade Ji Hao to stay. He gave a long sigh, then gathered his troop after Ji Hao left, and slowly retreated towards Pu Ban City. Before he left, he sent a very sincere letter to the leaders of the twenty-one families and clans. In the letter, Si Wen Ming entrusted the entire flood-control mission to You Chao Yu and the other leaders. He clearly pointed out that he wasn't capable enough to accomplish the mission, and he had worked so hard for years, so he was now tired, exhausted, and with not enough remaining energy to break the nine water gates.

Therefore, he entrusted everything to the twenty-one powerful clans and families, which popped up suddenly for the credit. Si Wen Ming had also clearly said in the letter that if these families and clans successfully broke the nine water gates and opened the channels to the Final Land, he would willingly give up the greatest credit for the flood-control mission!

Ji Hao left, and so did Si Wen Ming, neatly and carelessly. After that, the people from the twenty-one families and clans staying around the Kui Gate immediately went crazy. Si Wen Ming said pretty clearly that as long as they broke the nine water gates, he would give up the greatest credit! According to the agreement made by Emperor Shun and all clans and families from the alliance of human clans, the one who earned the greatest credit for the flood-control mission would be able to succeed to the throne!

The allied army started attacking the Kui Gate crazily. All of their most secret magics were cast. All of their ultimate skills that they didn't want anyone else to know about were now put in use without hesitation.

Six hours after Ji Hao and Si wen Ming left, the water-kind army guarding the Kui Gate suffered a great damage. Every single moment, a hundred thousand water-kind creatures would be

killed. Even Dark Water Serpent himself had a half of his head chopped off by You Qiong Yu, Qiong Sang Sheng, Ghost Chariot Green Grass and the other nine leaders, joint-handedly. These leaders had completely fallen into madness. They combined their powers and almost slaughtered Dark Water Serpent on the scene.

When this crazy battle was happening, Ji Hao sneaked into the Kui Gate with Heng Ling and Yuan Li.

The allied army attacked fiercely. Whacked by the crazy allied human force, the water-kind army under Dark Water Serpent's command suffered a heavy pressure. Therefore, Dark Water Serpent sent Gong Gong an urgent request for help. Following Gong Gong's order, countless water-kind spirit creatures began gathering towards Kui Gate.

Heng Xing showed his true body as a three-hundred-meter-long henggong fish. He trod on a strong gale, flying in the air, raising storms and shattering thunderbolts. Releasing a dense dark mist from his mouth, he arrived in the water-kind campsite on top of the Kui Gate from the northwest.

Yuan Li had also shown his true face. Carrying a large tree trunk and baring his teeth, he squatted on Heng Xing's head and narrowed his eyes, looking at the other water-kind creatures on clouds with and unfriendly expression. Occasionally, some water-kind creatures moved close to Heng Xing ad Yuan Li, trying to make friends with them. But Yuan Li would swing the tree trunk straight down, and even break the bones of those poor water-kind creatures, making them scream in pain.

From Priest Hua's results of Dao of evolvement, Ji Hao found a hundred and eight types of transformation magic. He cast one of those and turned himself into a water ape, looking about the same as Yuan Li. Creating a fierce coldness around him, Ji Hao sat on Heng Xing's back expressionlessly, legs crossed while looking around with his blue pair of eyes. All water-kind creatures who saw him would quiver in fear.

The top area of the Kui Gate was flat. Hundreds of flags stood on the ground, emitting a strong spirit creature power vibration, creating hundreds of differently sized gates.

Tens of heavily armored water-kind spirit creatures stood under each gate. These creatures had human shapes, but more or less, they had scale-like patterns on their faces. Apparently, most of these water-kind warriors were snakes, boas and serpents, under the command of Dark Water Serpent.

Groups of water-kind spirit walked to those gates in big steps. The ones guarding under each gate shouted and asked them about their names and backgrounds. Those water-kind spirit warriors gave their names, then without asking further questions, those guards conveniently handed them pieces of bloody meat and let them into the boundless campsite behind those gates.

Heng Xing landed heavily outside a gate. In panic, two spirit snakes with dark armors glanced at him, then looked at Yuan Li and Ji Hao, who were sitting on his back. Instantly, these two slim guards bowed deeply to Heng Xing, Yuan Li and Ji Hao.

"Si...Si..."

Before a guard could finish the word ‘Sir’, Yuan Li leaped down from Heng Xing’s head, slapped him away and yelled, "Si-what? We heard that Lord Gong Gong’s has ordered all water-kind creatures to gather in Kui Gate area to defend against the humankind, right?"

Before the other guard responded, Yuan Li continued loudly, "Hm, we’ve traveled from far. We’re tired, so we’ll go into the campsite to take a rest first. As for those human beings, tell us when they attack the camp."

Having finished talking, Yuan Li kicked the guard away. He still didn’t give the guard a chance to talk.

Heng Xing laughed loudly, transformed into a six-meters-tall,

muscular man, politely bowed to Ji Hao, and said, "Big Bro, shall we get in and find a place to take some rest? Hehe, these snakes are scrawny. If you're hungry, we can find large one later and grill him."

Hearing Heng Xing, a snake guard tremblingly walked over and said carefully, "Sir...Sir, our great ancestor, Dark Water Serpent has given his order...In the camp, spirit creatures can't eat each other..."

Learning from Yuan Li, Ji Hao slapped this snake guard away. Then, all three of them laughed towards the sky and released strong power vibrations together. They straight into the camp and disappeared without a trace.

Countless snake warriors guarded in this area, yet none of them dared to say a word. They just let Ji Hao into the Kui Gate.

Chapter 1269: The Chaotic Spirit Creature Market

On the broad top of Kui Gate, the disheveled water-kind campsite seemed to be boundless. Rotten trees and moldy straws piled together; short fences stuck slantingly in the ground for about half a foot deep. Every other seven to eight miles, a door was opened on the fence for water-kind warriors to enter or exit. Each door was guarded by a few or tens of low-grade water-kind warriors.

Walking into the camp, an indescribable odor attacked Ji Hao. Almost all freshwater and seawater creatures were born with a strong fishy smell. Ordinary water-kind creatures already had a pretty strong fishy smell, not to mention the fact that the ones gathered in this camp were all spirit water-kind creatures, tens of years old at least. The fishy smell from them was hundreds, even a thousand times stronger than from the ordinary ones.

The strong fishy smell drilled into Ji Hao's nostrils, straight up to his brain. Heng Xing and Yuan Li were used to this smell since long ago. While they excitedly looking around, Ji Hao was baring his teeth and shaking his head. He hurriedly cast a small magic and isolated himself from the smell. Only then did he finally have a chance to breathe.

Looking around with the lingering fear for that horrible smell, Ji Hao saw an enormous dead whale lying by a door. A dragon whale man was holding a large knife, one foot stepped on a fin of the dead whale, waving his arms and yelling.

Hundreds of smaller shaped spirit creatures gathered around the dead whale, with all kinds of things held in their hands. They wanted to trade for a piece of whale meat with the things in their hands. Clay bowls, vats, wine pots, lamps, anything could be found on those small spirit creatures' hands. Some of them were even holding a few ragged human clothes. No one knew where they

found those things.

The dragon whale man was shouting loudly. A few small spirit creatures approached with broken clay vats and bowls, but the whale man punched their faces, making them vomit blood and flee desperately. After that, the whale man took over a roughly crafted bronze lamps from another small spirit creature pretty delightfully, then grinningly chopped off a large piece of whale meat and handed it to that spirit creature.

Ji Hao clicked his tongue on watching this. A dragon whale man was actually selling whale meat! Only spirit creatures could do such things, right?

Behind the front gate of the camp was a long, winding road. Ji Hao saw the thousands of miles of distance on the road with a glance, but still failed to find its end. In some areas, the road was hundreds of meters wide, but in some areas, it was no more than twenty meters wide. Stinky bones, furs, and other garbage piled on both sides of the road. Some filthy organs were thrown right in the middle of the road, emitting a horrible smell.

Some small spirit creatures with awfully weak cultivations could only, barely transform a half of their bodies into human shapes. They squatted on both sides of the roads with pieces of hide paved on the ground. Placed on their hides were flowers, grasses, tree roots, sparkling ores, metals pieces and all kinds of things. These small spirit creatures sat by their stalls without saying anything, just silently waiting for customers.

Some relatively stronger ones, who had cultivated themselves for one to two hundred years, but not even as powerful as Junior Magi, had been walking back and forth on the road with their heads held high. If they saw things that they were interested in, they would walk over and grab that thing directly up. Some of them were willing to follow the rules, and would drop some meat or other foods for the stall owners. But some slightly stronger ones would grab the things and go straight away, saying no word and

paying nothing. Those stall owners dared not to say a word to them, and could only watch them leave.

Many straggly ‘buildings’ stood on both sides of the road. Ji Hao wasn’t willing to describe those things with the word ‘building’ actually, because that would be a humiliation to the word itself. He didn’t know what to call those things by the road, shelters maybe? Some of those were simply holes covered in leaves; some were small areas surrounded by rotten woods, barely covered under large tree barks. Some better ones looked slightly more like real buildings, but still not even as good as livestock sheds back in the old Fire Crow Clan.

However, crude ‘buildings’ like these apparently belonged only to the ones powerful enough. A water-kind spirit creature needed to be as powerful as a human Senior Magus at least to own a ‘building’ like this.

Ji Hao heard some strange noises from these ‘buildings’. Following the thumping noises, some less sturdy ’buildings’ were slightly shaking.

Out of curiosity, Ji Hao released his spirt power and tried to find out what had been happening in those sheds. Quickly scanning across all ‘buildings’ within a hundred miles with his spirit power, Ji Hao’s face turned green, while he covered his eyes with his hand. He was almost blinded by what he saw. He couldn’t even describe what he had seen.

Had anyone ever seen a male octopus making love with a water snake? One snake tail and eight tentacles passionately coiling around each other! Had anyone ever seen a ‘shark mermaid’ doing it with a crocodile? That ‘mermaid’ had her lower body transformed into a human shape, yet she still had a shark head! Did anyone ever see seven to eight turtle men serving one starfish girl attentively?

Ji Hao couldn’t describe that scene. He slapped hard on his head,

cast a soul magic he learned from the Dao of evolvement, and forcibly wiped out what he had seen just now. Forgetting those horrible scenes completely, Ji Hao gasped for air and walked forward quickly with a badly darkened face.

While walking, he murmured, "Let’s find a quiet place, with a better condition, and without too many people around!"

Following behind Ji Hao, Heng Xing and Yuan Li heard him and hurriedly popped out their eyes, checking around. But no matter how hard they tried, the kind of place Ji Hao required seemed not to exist in this chaotic water-kind campsite.

Walking for tens of miles forward, a fish skin flag suddenly flew out from a straw shed by the road. A swordfish man held the flag and yelled, "This slutty woman almost got me late! Oi! Human beings are whacking us out there! I need thirty-thousand warriors to join the battle! Anyone who is willing to fight will be awarded with a human arm!" Shouted the swordfish man, "If you want to taste human meat, follow me! Haha! Dark Water Serpent, our great ancestor has given his word, that you can have a half of all human beings you kill on the battlefield!"

Clicking his tongue, this swordfish man continued, "Delicious human meat! Eat one piece of that, and your cultivation will soar! Have you little things ever had a chance to taste human meat? Hehe, follow me. You can fill your stomachs with human meat now!"

The swordfish man raised the flag and waved for a while. Hearing him, seventy to eighty small spirit creatures rushed over from all directions, and followed him to the battlefield before the Kui Gate.

Chapter 1270: A Yu in the Market

Ji Hao watched the swordfish man taking tens of thousands of small spirit creatures to the battlefield. Ten minutes later, a few more warrior-recruiting flags stood up in the camp. A few bigger-shaped spirit creatures yelled under those flags, promising some benefits, then large groups of silly small spirit creatures followed them to the battlefield.

Water-kind spirit creatures had been gathering to the Kui Gate campsite from all directions. In the meanwhile, large spirit creatures sent over by Dark Water Serpent waved their flags and recruited batches after batches of warriors. Groups of small spirit creatures rushed to the battlefield excitedly, risked their lives for a bite of fresh human meat. Ji Hao saw those small spirit creatures leave, but so far, he hadn't seen one small spirit creature return with trophies.

Ji Hao, Heng Xing, and Yuan Li walked along this messy road for about an hour. In this area, stall owners on both sides of the road were large spirit creatures, who were not weak at all. Many of them were as strong as Senior Magi. Among spirit creatures, each of them was strong enough to occupy a territory.

One could now find something good on their stalls. For example, Ji Hao saw a human-head-sized piece of extremely negative dragon blood dark steel on the stall that belonged to a snake man. This type of metal existed deep underground, in the ancient poison fire. For some reason, this piece absorbed dragon blood, and was nourished by the extremely negative power for centuries long, eventually becoming a rare, valuable material.

It was already extremely difficult for a metal ore buried deep underground, burned by the ancient earth core poisonous fire, to absorb dragon blood, not to mention being nourished by the extremely negative power. After all, the star of extreme negative nature in Pan Gu world was occupied by a powerful being with a

super powerful magic, such that ordinary creatures couldn’t even sense weak extremely negative power lingering in the air.

This piece of steel could be made into flying swords with Yu Yu’s special technique, which would be highly harmful to primordial spirits and embryos of Dao. By creating a slight scratch on the skin, these flying swords could cause a severe damage to one’s soul. According to Ji Hao’s estimation, flying swords made with this material would have a considerable suppressive effect on sky devils.

Ji Hao excitedly walked to the stall and asked about the price amicably. He even took out tens of jade coins, attempting to purchase this piece of steel with a high price. Jade coin was a circulating currency in the alliance of human clans.

The snake man looked at Ji Hao confusedly, shaking his head. He only wanted blood and flesh containing strong life-force. Things like jade coins were something he hadn’t even seen before. He didn’t know what those exquisitely crafted small jade pieces could do.

Bargaining for a while, the snake man still refused to accept those jade coins as payment.

A quarter of an hour later, Ji Hao frowned and looked at the snake man. Heng Xing had been waiting aside, and had already lost his patience. He suddenly burst with a great roar as his head transformed back into a giant fish head. He grabbed over the slim snake man, opened his jaws and swallowed the snake man up.

Burping in satisfaction, Heng Xing bumped his teeth against each other, creating a puff of fire sparkle. He then fiercely yelled at the other stall owners in the surroundings, "Which one of you dares to charge my big bro? How dare you?! Do you wanna die? If you don't want your lives anymore, I’ll take your lives!"

All the surrounding water-kind spirit creatures lowered their heads and dared not to make any noise.

Heng Xing released his power that belonged to a Henggong fish, a top-grade water-kind creature. Naturally, the power from his bloodline disabled these lowly water-kind creatures from even thinking about resistance.

Yuan Li happily grabbed up the dragon blood dark steel that Ji Hao wanted, handed it to Ji Hao and laughed, "Big bro, whatever you want, let us know. We can just get it for you. You are already showing your respect to them by wanting to take things from them. What can you say to those stupid lowly things? Give them money? They'll be fairly lucky if you don't kill them!"

Ji Hao took over the steel and put it into a sleeve. He was a bit confused.

Was this a social law of the spirit creature society? Too wild, too cruel, but seemed to be not so bad!

As they kept moving forward, Ji Hao looked around at those stalls on both sides of the road. Every time his eyes stayed on one thing for a slightly longer time, Heng Xing and Yuan Li would immediately rush up, give the stall owner a heavy slap, then take that thing and walk straightaway.

Heng Xing and Yuan Li were not ashamed at all, and neither did those stall owners take any action. Watching this, all surrounding spirit creatures did or said nothing either, as if this was totally reasonable and normal. Apparently, in the society of spirit creatures, such things were indeed reasonable and normal!

The powerful ones could have everything, which was the greatest rule of spirit creatures!

Moving forward for hundreds of miles, 'buildings' on both sides of the road turned to be slightly presentable. The closer Ji Hao got to the center of the camp, the stronger he found those surrounding spirit creatures to be. Probably for this reason, 'buildings' on both sides of the road now seemed finally like real houses, some even having well-crafted doors and windows.

Some buildings in this area were made from well-polished rock blocks, with each rock block fitting perfectly. Ji Hao scanned these buildings with his spirit power and found that even the thinnest blade couldn’t cut into the joints of two rock blocks. These polished rock buildings were mostly large, with great spaces in the surroundings. Usually, a building like this was always guarded by a group of strong, heavily armored water-kind warriors.

The spirit creature power vibrations that came from these rock buildings were pure and strong. Apparently, the owners of these buildings were possessors of higher-grade bloodlines and great cultivations; they should be as powerful as Magus Kings at least. Walking past these buildings, Ji Hao even sensed aroma of liquor and grilled meat.

The lower grade small spirit creatures were still chewing raw meat and drinking blood, yet these higher-grade ones had already been living a luxurious life, like nobles among human beings.

‘Pop, pop, pop’, a strange footstep could be heard from a large, heavily guarded building behind Ji Hao. This footstep sound was rather special, sounding like a creature with a pair of large webbed foot running quickly across a muddy area.

Ji Hao remembered this footstep sound; he had heard it before. Looking where the footsteps came from, Ji Hao saw a nine-meters-long Yu, leaping out of a large building. Sitting on the back of the Yu was a young man with a dark face and a long red robe, looking like an evil ghost.

"Eh, great ancestor is way too cautious...What can ever happen in a place like this? I’ve been stuck in that room for days. I got to have some fun!"

The young man laughed with a hissing voice as he mounted on the Yu, flashed down to the road and stopped in the middle. Looking around for a while, he murmured with a low voice, "Hmm, where can I find a beautiful girl? Those snake girls are

naturally harmful to Yu, hmm... I should find a few little clam girls. Hehe, they're tender and white, and I can eat them when I'm done playing with them. They're the best!"

Hearing this, Ji Hao's eye corners twitched slightly. 'I can eat them when I'm done playing with them', was something one could only hear from a spirit creature.

But 'great ancestor'? Who was that? And why did this Yu come to the Kui Gate? What was he doing?

Ji Hao glanced at the building, then released his spirit power and covered the building like flowing water.

Chapter 1271: A Shocking Discovery

The young man mounted on the Yu went away to find his source of fun.

Ji Hao's spirit power covered that building up like a giant web, then drilled in. Touching the building with his spirit power, Ji Hao found that all rock blocks in this building were thickly covered in spell symbols! Those were ancient spell symbols from the heaven, dark-golden, carved in those rock blocks, and releasing a strong sense of power. If Ji Hao were an ordinary cultivator, he would trigger natural thunderbolts by touching these spell symbols with his spirit power. Then, his spirit power would be crushed by those thunderbolts. But Ji Hao carefully activated his embryo of Dao of the extreme negative, and merged the extremely negative power with his spirit power. Thus, his spirit power turned soft and faintly sensible, seeming to melt completely in the air. Spell symbols in those rock blocks slightly quaked, but failed to discover Ji Hao's spirit power, and all dimmed down.

Ji Hao's spirit power silently went through the thick wall and scanned across this rock building, which was hundreds of meters in square.

The building was filled with a strong space power. A silver-white lamp floated in the middle of the largest room, with a thumb-sized, silver light sparkling on it, emitting powerful waves of space vibration that sealed the surrounding space. Because of this lamp, the inner space of this building was extremely broad, about one hundred miles squared.

Tens of human-shaped puppets in golden armors stood in the room. These puppets were made from an alloy mixed with large amounts of magic crystals, with the natures of earth, fire, water, green, and metal. They were holding golden, large swords, guarding a dark, round-shaped altar.

Cold airstreams had been flowing out of the altar ceaselessly, touching those golden puppets and covering them up with a thin layer of ice, causing a sizzling noise. But soon, those puppets heated themselves and melted the ice.

The room was suffused by a watery mist. On the round-shaped altar, three asleep Yu we surrounded by a dim blue light. The dim blue light had been shaking like water. Occasionally, a stream of light would rise tens of meters high, and within the light, a tall figure would suddenly appear.

Ji Hao clearly saw the three figures above the three Yu, in the three light streams. Suddenly, he sensed a sharp pain from his teeth, as if countless needles had pierced into his tooth roots. Because of the pain, a half of his face twitched intensely — He recognized one of three figures. That was an old Gong Gong, one of the three he saw back in the Huai water eye!

Back in the Huai water eye, he opened a coffin, and saw a clone of an old Gong Gong lying in it. Ji Hao remembered his face. Lying on this dark altar in the stone building were not human-shaped, fleshy bodies. Instead, those were three Yu in a deep sleep. But in the dark blue light above the three Yu, three figures were sparkling, and one of those looked exactly like that old Gong Gong. In the meanwhile, Ji Hao sensed something familiar from the three Yu.

That was a special power that belonged only to Gong Gong Family, the family of the Water God!

Carefully, Ji Hao reached his spirit power to the three Yu. Faintly, he sensed that the water god power that came from the three Yu had been growing stronger and stronger, rapidly. Ji Hao did a rough calculation, according to which, in a couple of days, the water god power contained in the bodies of these Yu would go beyond the grade of peak-level Divine Magus.

Ji Hao looked at this large rock building in shock.

Didn’t the twelve former human emperors destroy the nine water eyes? They were sure that all clones of old Gong Gongs were destroyed! And in order to prevent future problems, Ji Hao asked Taisi to curse Yu Ancestor to death with the Nailhead Seven Arrows Book. Taisi confirmed that Yu Ancestor had ceased to exist in this world, because he couldn’t sense anything from Yu Ancestor anymore after the curse.

Ancestor Yu was dead, while all clones of old Gong Gong were destroyed, which meant Gong Gong’s plan of bringing old Gong Gongs back to Pan Gu world had failed completely…But why would three strange Yu exist in a rock building, that seemed to be nothing special, in the water-kind campsite on the Kui Gate?

These Yu had the water god power releasing from their bodies, and the figures of old Gong Gongs sparkling above their heads. Their water god power was growing stronger at a shocking rate. Besides, Ji Hao also sensed that because of the increase of the space power released from the silver lamp, the water god power from the three Yu was somehow connected with some mysterious beings from extremely far away!

The plan of Gong Gong Family wasn’t ruined. Gong Gong and his people found another way to restart it. The twelve water worlds were now very close to Pan Gu world. Therefore, the water power contained in the air had reached an unreasonably high point. For this reason, the water god power contained in the bodies of these Yu had been rising fast. In all probability, the twenty-seven old Gong Gongs would be able to return to Pan Gu world anytime they wanted now!

"Damn it…Taisi…Yu Ancestor is still alive, he must be!" With a dark face, Ji Hao held his hands behind his body and slowly approached this building.

He couldn’t blame Taisi for this.

Taisi was silly and confused, but his magic curse was terrifying.

Furthermore, he possessed the Nailhead Seven Arrows Book, and was guided by the lingering true spirit of a fallen ancient devil god. He had learned a lot from the devil god. Therefore, the magic curse he cast to Ancestor Yu must be successful!

It must be Gong Gong or Yu Ancestor. They found a way to survive the curse. Something about Yu Ancestor changed magically, which allowed him to survive under the power of the Nailhead Seven Arrows Book,!

Inside the embryo of Dao of evolvement, hazy lotuses sparkled. From Priest Hua's countless centuries of experience, Ji Hao quickly found about ten methods to survive after being locked by the Nailhead Seven Arrows Book. Then, he found over a hundred ways to change the features of his power, and to cut off all connections to the past.

The Nailhead Seven Arrows Book was powerful indeed, but facing these methods Ji Hao found from the embryo of Dao of evolvement, a great probability was that it might miss the target.

Taisi wasn't the one to blame. Gong Gong Family was certainly powerful and resourceful. Otherwise, how would they even dare to raise the flood and try to seize the greatest power of Pan Gu world?

Taking a few steps forward, Ji Hao turned around and looked at the house right next to the rock building.

The rock building was large and sturdy, square in shape, while the house Ji Hao looked at was a section of the spine of an unknown, giant spirit creature. Seven to eight holes were opened on it as the door and windows, which made this piece of bone a house.

Seven to eight small spirit creatures stood by the door of this three-hundred-meters-long, tens of meters tall bone house. They were chatting and laughing.

Ji Hao glanced at these small spirit creatures, then walked

towards them in big steps. He conveniently grabbed the neck of a small spirit creature, then threw him away.

The other spirit creatures instantly stopped talking and laughing. In panic, they looked at Ji Hao, and sensed the frosty power from him. They trembled, and dared not to say a word.

"Go tell your master that I like this big bone!"

"Tell him to move away as soon as possible. Otherwise, I am feeling really hungry now!"

Ji Hao patted his belly, then grinned. He had turned himself into a water ape, and by grinning, he bared all his sharp shining teeth, which were truly scary!

Chapter 1272: Crayfish Shermie

A very strange-looking, large spirit creature slowly walked out of the bone house.

He was more than five-meters tall, crookbacked like a giant shrimp, with a piece of shark leather wrapped around his waist. His skin had a cyan-blue color, with two long beard wisps on the chin. He narrowed his eyes and looked at Ji Hao, then glanced at Yuan Li and Heng Xing. Clicking his tongue, he shook his head.

"Henggong fish, water ape...We can't afford to offend these gentlemen. Boys, let's go!" This spirit creature waved his hand and said to his people, "I took his house from someone else. Now, some other people are going to take it from me, totally reasonable. Let's go find the next poor guy and get us a new place to live!"

Following a water-clattering noise, tens of shrimp warriors leaped out of the bone house. These shrimp warriors were about three-meters and two-feet tall, not entirely human shaped yet. They carried different sized bags as they lined up orderly behind this large spirit creatures, forming a mini array.

"Sir, this house is yours now!" The large spirit creature bowed deeply to Ji Hao and said calmly, "This bone, don't underestimate it. This bone belonged to a golden horn shark, which had almost passed the natural trial and became a dragon. This bone contains a trace of true dragon life-force, which is highly beneficial for lower-grade water-kind creatures like me!"

He said the few words 'lower-grade water-kind creatures' with emphasis.

Ji Hao narrowed his eyes. Suddenly, he felt that this large spirit creature was quite interesting. He was as powerful as a low-grade Divine Magus, and was so calm and mild. He wasn't violent and impulsive like the other water-kind creatures, neither had he shouted or yelled so far. He was a well-cultivated one!

Besides, he was much smarter than ordinary water-kind spirit creatures, even those enormous ones who might be hundreds of times stronger than himself. At least, among all those enormous spirit creatures Ji Hao slaughtered in the past few years, no a single one could talk so politely and thoughtfully with a deeper meaning. Just now, he specifically pointed out to Ji Hao that this bone house was highly beneficial to ‘lower-grade water-kind creatures’. By doing this, he clearly told Ji Hao that to top-grade water-kind creatures like henggong fish and water ape, this bone wasn’t so valuable!

"Interesting!" Seeing this spirit creature prepare to leave with the group of warriors, Ji Hao pressed his hand on this spirit creature’s shoulder. The bared shoulders of this spirit creature were covered in a half-foot-thick layer of shell. The shell was cyan-blue in color, thickly covered with tiny and short thorns. Pressing on these thorns, Ji Hao even sensed a slight pain.

Ji Hao had an unreasonably strong body by now, yet those thorns on the spirit creature’s shoulders made him feel painful, which was pretty impressive. Ji Hao was more and more curious about this spirit creature — Those thorns on his shoulder were even stronger than an ordinary holy weapon.

"You…What are you?" Ji Hao took a sideway step and blocked the spirit creature’s way.

"Sir, I am a lowly creature…I am a crayfish…Many years ago, I might have swallowed some powerful herbs, then I started to know things. I’ve been cultivating myself after that, until today." The spirit creature lowered his body deeper and deeper, looking at Ji Hao with a bright grin as he said with a low, humble voice, "I dare not to offend you, sir. If I did anything wrong, please, forgive me!"

Crayfish? Like a mantis shrimp?

Ji Hao licked his lips. He thought of something that happened a

very long time ago, which he had been trying to forget — In a flawless white porcelain dish, strongly flavored, red-colored oil was sizzling and steaming. Crayfishes soaked in the oil, and one would eat it with a cold, light wine...

Shaking his head, Ji Hao quickly threw these previous life memories out of his head. This over five-meters-tall creature standing in front of Ji Hao was not a crayfish that Ji Hao could eat on a summer night with wine. Instead, it was a powerful, large spirit creature.

"I hardly ever see a smart and polite one among us spirit creatures!" Ji Hao pressed on the spirit creature's shoulder and said blandly, "From now on, you work for me. I need guards for my place. You behave yourself. In the future...If a crayfish can have a chance to become a true dragon too, I'll give you that chance!"

The spirit creature narrowed his eyes into a pair of curved line, lowered his head, and said with a deep voice, "Sir, I am under the command of Dark Water Ao Ao from the Dark Serpent Water Clan. I'm his warrior, so..."

"Forget that Dark Water Ao Ao or Dark Water Au Au. Now, you work for me. Dark Water Serpent? Big deal?" Ji Hao laughed coldly, then glanced at Heng Xing.

"If Dark Water Ao Ao dares to start a war between dark water serpents and Henggong fishes, then let him do it!" Heng Xing proudly raised his head high and scornfully spat towards the ground.

"Henggong Fish Family, aren't you guarding Dui Gate, the fifth gate?" Asked the spirit creature carefully, "Sir, Kui Gate is guarded by Dark Water Serpent Family..."

Ji Hao slapped on the spirit creature's shoulder, then pointed a finger at the spot between his eyebrows. Through his finger, Ji Hao shared a small part of his own understanding about the extremely negative power with this spirit creature. The spirit

creature sensed that something had flown speedily into his soul, like a frosty brook.

The spirit creature trembled slightly. In both surprise and shock, he looked at Ji Hao. A dark blue dim light started flowing quickly on the skin of this spirit creature. Gradually, a dim silver light emerged from the blue light.

The extremely negative power was the coldest power in the world. Water-kind creatures were mostly cultivating themselves with the powers of water, ice, and other types of negative power. All these power types originated from the branches of the great Dao of the extreme negative.

Ji Hao directly shared his understanding about the great Dao of the extreme negative with this spirit creature. To this spirit creature, who was originally a crayfish, this was just like inviting a poor man into the treasury of a billionaire, shocking and astonishing. He was even frozen in amazement.

"My brothers and I, we came here to watch a show." said Ji Hao straightforwardly, "Many of us want to watch a show of these dark water serpents! So, taking one warrior from Dark Water Ao Ao or Dark Water Au Au, what's the big deal?"

"Follow me. I promise that you will live a much better life!" Ji Hao patted again, slightly heavily on the spirit creature's shoulder. Ji Hao hadn't put forth his strength, but the spirit creature already felt like carrying eight-hundred mountains. An irresistible force descended straight down, softening his legs and making him kneel down and kowtow to Ji Hao.

Seeing the spirit creature kneel, the tens of shrimp warriors behind him paused in shock, then hurriedly dropped their bags and kneeled and kowtowed to Ji Hao as well.

The spirit creature was forced down to his knees. Besides, he was deeply attracted by the broadness and mysteriousness of the great Dao of extreme negative that Ji Hao shared with him just now. He

remained silent for a while, after which, he finally lowered his head and politely and sincerely kowtowed to Ji Hao three times.

"Master, I am Shermie. From this moment on, the lives of mine and my boys are in your hands!"

Chapter 1273: Ji Hao Takes a Disciple

Ji Hao moved into the bone house that Shermie looted from someone else.

The bone house looked ordinary from the outside, but the inside was surprising. First, it was bright and broad. Inside the three-hundred-meters-long, tens of meters tall bone house, was a ten-miles wide tiny world, with seven to eight layers. This bone house could accommodate over ten-thousand people.

Second, this bone house was especially clean, with a nice fresh air. Shermie was a neat freak, and his habits did affect his boys more or less. The tens of spirit crayfishes made the tiny world inside the bone house extremely clean and well-decorated. All the furniture in the bone house was carved out of rocks.

What satisfied Ji Hao the most was the effects of the traces of true dragon life-force, mentioned by Shermie before. Because of the true-dragon life-force, this bone house had been suffused with a refreshing, warm aroma. As Shermie said, this aroma could only improve the bloodline powers of lower grade water-kind creatures, and was useless to Ji Hao. However, this aroma was as great as the best ambergris. On staying in this aroma, one could have a clear, concentrated mind. Surprisingly, living in this bone house was a great experience.

"Nice place!" Sitting in the hundreds of meters squared room that he picked for himself, Ji Hao smilingly nodded to Shermie, who was standing aside, then said, "No wonder you chose this place to live in...It’s strange though, didn’t anyone try to kick you out and occupy this place?

In Ji Hao’s eyes, this bone house should be the best house ever in the Kui Gate area. Shermie was merely at the level of low-grade Divine Magus. But why didn’t any stronger one try to take this place?

"I am indeed weak and poorly cultivated, neither can I use any magic. But, my pair of heavy fists are a little famous." Shermie's eyes gradually sparkled with dim blue light as he looked at Ji Hao and responded seriously, "Except for those peak-level ones, the others...The ones slightly stronger than me won't want to fight me."

Ji Hao immediately thought of those interesting mantis shrimps, which were less than half a foot long, yet could punch extremely fast, and even break the leg bones of human beings. Those mantis shrimps were tiny in shapes, yet had great strength. Normally, they were only food on people's plates. But, they did have strong upper limbs with an amazing explosive power, and a full-power blow launched with those limbs could crush human beings.

If Shermie also had strong arms like those mantis shrimps, based on his current cultivation, how powerful could his fists be?

While Ji Hao was trying to find something to try Shermie's fists, Heng Xing excitedly walked to Shermie. Heng Xing had armor-like skin and scales, and was never afraid of death. As this room was large enough, Heng Xing showed his original figure, lied in front of Shermie as a three-hundred-meters-long Henggong fish, then laughed proudly and yelled, "Come on, punch me!"

While spitting bubbles, Heng Xing continued yelling in excitement, "Shermie, right? Come on, give me a punch!"

"I am a Henggong fish. Among all water-kind creatures from the North Sea, we have the strongest defensive power! If you can break one scale of mine, you and your boys will be under my protection! I guarantee that no one will dare to touch even a hair of yours!"

Shermie looked at Heng Xing while hesitating. He dared not to do it.

Ji Hao smiled and nodded, encouraging him loudly, "Shermie, try it on this large fish! Hehe, if you can hurt him, I will reward you! Don't worry, as long as you don't kill him, he'll be fine. You can

injure him as badly as you can."

Thud! Thud! Ji Hao saw nothing else but two extremely dim streams of light.

Heng Xing suddenly shut his mouth. Blood spurted out from his giant mouth. He tried his best to swallow the blood back into his stomach, but the blood was still flowing out from his mouth corners. Soon, the blood started flowing in big streams, and at last, the blood spurted out like a fountain. He couldn't help it.

In his chest area, where he had the thickest, densest scales, were two fist-sized holes.

He stared at Shermie's clenched fists. Shermie's fists were angular, blue-cyan, covered in a thin layer of shell that were the size of wine pots; those fists were exactly as big as the holes in Heng Xing's chest.

Two puncture wounds were left on Heng Xing's body. Shermie's fists landed on Heng Xing's body, but once his fists touched Heng Xing, he took back his arms. However, the impulsive force he created easily penetrated Heng Xing's body like two sharp blades.

Heng Xing's few main arteries were broken. Therefore, the blood gushed out of his body like a flood.

Ji Hao glanced at Shermie in shock. He flashed to Heng Xing, took out handfuls of magic pills, and poured in Heng Xing's mouth, then spread thick layers of ointment on Heng Xing's wounds. Heng Xing transformed back into his human shape while moaning in pain. Covering his chest with both hands, Heng Xing stared at Shermie in a great shock, unable to say a word for quite a while.

If this happened on a real battlefield, and if Shermie didn't take back his arms, and if he added a few more heavy punches, Heng Xing, this peak-Divine-Magus-level Henggong fish would be beaten to death by Shermie!

Shermie was only at the level of low-grade Divine Magi, while

Heng Xing was seriously at the level of peak-Divine-Magi!

What a terrifying pair of fists! No wonder any water-kind spirit creature never tried to fight him over this bone house after he occupied it.

This bone house was valueless to higher-grade spirit creatures, but which one of those lower grade spirit creatures could ever be Shermie's opponent? If Ji Hao didn't want to stay in this bone hose to watch those Yu in the next door, Shermie would be able to improve his bloodline power with this bone-house, and grow stronger.

"Your fists!" Ji Hao clicked his lips and finally discovered a weakness of Shermie's fists.

Shermie attacked fast. Ji Hao had activated his erect eye, but still, he saw nothing but the two streams of light. He failed to see the motion curves of Shermie's fists. He believed that not a single living creature in this Kui Gate area could see Shermie's moves clearly, not even Dark Water Serpent himself.

Shermie punched heavily, and even Hengxing was injured so badly by his pair of fists; it was not hard to tell how strong those fists were.

The only weakness was that Shermie didn't have any special power on his fists. If he had a slight trace of essence sun fire or the extremely negative power on his fists, he would even be able to threat Dark Water Serpent out there, the great ancestor of all dark water serpent. That was what Ji Hao thought.

But of course, if Shermie could maximize his strength and speed, he would still be able to launch a world-destroying punch without any special power.

"Shermie, are you willing to be my disciple?" Somehow, Ji Hao wanted to take Shermie as a disciple.

"Master, be your disciple?" Shermie's face twitched slightly,

seeming to be quite struggling. A while later, Shermie said hesitatingly, "Master, I am only a lowly crayfish. I am not talented, not lucky either. To be your disciple...hehe, I have no reason to become a humiliation to you."

Looking at Shermie's struggling face, Ji Hao laughed.

He slightly shook his body and showed his real face, as a human being.

Shermie was shocked. He even leaped back for about a hundred meters far. But once he saw Ji Hao's face clearly, he darted back to Ji Hao, thudded his knees against the ground, and kowtowed to Ji Hao for tens of times in a row.

"Shifu, I am Shermie, your disciple!"

Chapter 1274: Local Villains

Ji Hao would never admit that his impulsion of taking Shermie as a disciple came from those deliciously fried crayfishes in hot spicy sauces that he had tasted in his precious life, during those summer nights. He felt slightly sad when thinking about those deliciously fried crayfishes.

He probably should quote Priest Hua and tell Shermie, ‘Shermie, you are gifted. You have amazing talent. You are destined to be my disciple!’

Sitting on a white, round rock, with his legs crossed, Ji Hao delightfully nodded to Shermie, who was standing right in front of him. Destiny, this was true destiny...Ji Hao would never admit that his very first official disciple was taken because of a delicious food that he missed.

"Relax your mind and body, don’t resist!" Shermie was respectful and cautious, while Ji Hao laughed in satisfaction.

Before Shermie gave a response, a splendid golden sun and a mystical silver moon rose from behind Ji Hao. The embryos of Dao of sun and the extreme negative stood in the sun and the moon. The two embryos of Dao looked at Shermie with lightning-like bright eyes. A tsunami-like spirit power descended and suddenly rolled Shermie in.

Shermie quivered, then looked at Ji Hao, stunned.

Ji Hao’s spirit power was highly concentrated, and was tangible now. He wrapped Shermie with his spirit power, which made Shermie feel like being sealed in a thick layer of crystal, both his body and soul. His body couldn’t move, while his soul couldn’t generate even half a thought. Facing Ji Hao, he was like a tiny bug facing a destructive natural disaster; he had no power of resistance at all.

Ji Hao’s spirit power was vast like an ocean, while Shermie’s soul was like dim lamplight drifting on the boundless ocean. If Ji Hao wanted to destroy Shermie’s soul, he could crush it with a single thought.

"Not bad, not bad, you’re a spirit creature indeed, but you have never taken a life." Ji Hao looked at Shermie in surprise. This crayfish’s hands were perfectly clean. He had no sin, no sin at all. Apparently, ever since he started cultivating himself as a spirit creature, he never killed a living being!

Furthermore, his soul was especially pure. Shermie’s soul still lingered at a very low level, and his original soul power was weak. But, it was pure and clean, like a flawless white crystal. The other large spirit creature’ souls were mostly filled with the scent of blood and evilness, yet Shermie’s soul was totally different.

"Great, great!" Ji Hao grinned delightfully and asked, "I did take you as a disciple on impulse, but you are indeed a rare talent. You, you’ve never killed a living being, have you? Don’t you eat meat?"

Ji Hao took back his spirit power, and Shermie finally had the chance to take a breath. With softened legs, he kneeled straight on the ground. Hearing Ji Hao, he hurriedly raised his head, and carefully responded, "Shifu, I have always liked vegetables and fruits. This is my nature. I like all kinds of ganoderma mushrooms the most. If I can’t find any, old kelps are delicious too."

While grinning, Shermie blinked his eyes and continued, "Besides, if I eat meat...Hehe, what if I accidentally ate a kid of a powerful and brutal one that I can not afford to offend? I would be bringing disasters to myself, wouldn’t I? And meat makes you stink, I hate stinks."

Hearing him, Heng Xing and Yuan Li were dumfounded. A large spirit creature...who had never killed a living being, nor eaten meat? Yet this one was so strongly gifted that he could even puncture the iron-wall-like body of a Henggong fish with his bare

fists! He was such a strong one, but he had been a vegetarian his whole life?! How could such a strange being even exist among spirit creatures?

Even Ji Hao couldn't help but laugh. Smilingly, he looked at Shermie, and asked, "So, earlier, when I was a water ape, you didn't want to be my disciple, but why did you suddenly change your mind after I showed my true face?"

Ji Hao was curious about Shermie's behavior. Why did he decide to be Ji Hao's disciple once he saw his real face?

"This..." Shermie blinked his long, slim eyes, and said politely, "This is probably because I am born cautious. I always feel that even though Lord Gong Gong has raised a flood, and has been playing all kinds of tricks, he will eventually lose to the humankind."

"I am happy to be a disciple of a human being, even if he is equally strong as Lord Gong Gong. At last, facing the counterattack of human beings, we will be destroyed. Being a disciple of a human being...I am not afraid of death, but I've been working so hard, so carefully for years. Finally, my family now has tens of little spirit ones, who know things. I can't drag them all to hell, can I?"

"Shifu, I know you. You are Marquis Yao Ji Hao, the most brutal, famous young human being among your generation. You've sneaked into Kui Gate. Obviously, human beings are launching heavy strikes soon. We will lose Kui Gate, and all these spirit creatures gathering in Kui Gate...Judging by all the cruel things you've done in the past few years, they will definitely be wiped out."

"You offered to take me as a disciple. This is a perfect opportunity for me to survive, not to mention what I will learn from you in the future. Therefore, once I saw your face, I decided to be your disciple. What would I be hesitating for?"

Shermie gave Ji Hao every reason. Hearing him, Ji Hao raised his

eyebrows. Shermie was indeed too careful and cautious, but that was also good. Ji Hao had enough of fearless, brave fighters around him. For example, Yuan Li and Heng Xing were typical two. But at the moment, Ji Hao was just in need of a cautious and careful follower, someone with plans.

"Great!" Once again, Ji Hao clapped his hands and laughed delightfully. He looked at Shermie, pondered for a while, then slightly shook his body. Afterward, Ji Hao's body changed slightly, and gradually became about eighty percent similar to Shermie.

His body turned long and slim, covered in dark blue shell with thin, dark-golden stripes. His eyes turned long and slim too. Occasionally, his eyes would sparkle brightly when he blinked. Ji Hao clenched his fingers towards Shermie, and took a wisp of Shermie's power, then patted his own chest. Soon, he released a strong spirit creature power that seemed exactly the same as Shermie's power.

"In Kui Gate and all the other water gates, I am now your uncle, Summer." Ji Hao grinned and said, "I am a crayfish named Summer; It's my new identity now. Shermie, how many warriors do you have? Send them out to get some information for me, as soon as you can."

Shermie did have some capable ones under his command. He had nearly one hundred children, who were also crayfishes. He raised all of them himself. Among those young crayfishes, twelve were as strong as Magus Kings, while the rest were mostly at the level of Senior Magus.

Spirit crayfishes were extremely rare. But, every spirit crayfish had strong fists. Besides, more or less, genetic relationships existed between crayfishes and shrimps. Therefore, even though Shermie didn't recruit warriors intentionally, quite a number of shrimp warriors willingly followed his lead.

Right in the Kui Gate, about one-hundred-thousand shrimp

warriors followed nothing but the orders of Shermie and his boys. These shrimp warriors were not so smart. The relationship between Shermie, his boys, and these shrimps warriors, was about the same as the relationship between an owner and a pet. Shermie gave his order, his boys spread it, and soon, a lot of information was brought back.

For example, who the owner of the rock building next door was, and how many days had that young man in a red robe stayed for in Kui Gate... who were with him, and what was he doing...

Ji Hao learned every detail about that young man in a red robe, and what he did in Kui Water.

Chapter 1275: Teach the Dao and Remove the Mountains

Within half an hour, Ji Hao had all the information about the young man in a red robe living in the building next-door.

But of course, those shrimp warriors who gathered the information had limited intelligence quotient, and so did their friends. Therefore, some information Ji Hao got was pretty exaggerated; but indeed, one could find some truth from all that information.

For example, the young man in a red robe was strong. The spirt creature who managed this area said something slightly offensive to the young man and got himself beaten up; even worse, afterward, the young man chopped off the manager's limbs and hung him on a wooden shelf to show the others.

The young man had a strong background. The manager was assigned to his position by the Dark Water Serpent Family, but the young man bullied him so cruelly. After this, the Dark Water Serpent Family said not a word to the young man, and the manger could only bear the insult silently. Later, the manager was put down from the shelf and saved by his people, then never showed up again.

What he did to the manager was seen by all spirit creatures in this area. Other than this, the young man was very lascivious, and had an inclusive female taste. From muscular dragon whale girls to tiny and cute water spider girls, he liked all girls. Any water-kind girl who looked about thirty to fifty percent humanoid could arouse this young man.

Many strange things would happen in a place filled with spirit creatures.

Countless water-kind creatures gathered in this camp. Some of

them were enormous in their original shapes, even over one thousand miles long; some were tiny, maybe only as big as a human thumb.

Some weak small spirit creatures developed a habit of prying on others' privacy. The young man looked for girls all over the camp, and some curious small spirit creatures followed behind him. Every time when the young man was with some rare water-kind girls, at least a hundred small spirit creatures would be listening to their activities around.

This young man's name was Yu Chi. He was the most beloved youngest son of a 'great ancestor'. This time, that 'great ancestor' sent him to the Kui Gate on purpose, to allow him to make a great contribution, so that in the future, he could have a good piston in the heaven, which would be ruled by Gong Gong Family at that time.

Those shrimp warriors didn't know how to differentiate important things from unimportant. They simply brought Ji Hao all information they found, such as Yu Chi's underwear was made from red brocade, socks were red ghost silk, and he was wearing tens of red jade defensive amulets, or he had a blood-red, sharp long sword, that could easily break the shell of an enormous turtle...

Some essential information was mixed with all that useless junk information and delivered to Ji Hao. Soon, Ji Hao had a full understanding about Yu Chi. He was a foppish, lascivious young man with average abilities. After all, he was Yu Ancestor's youngest son, and was pretty talented. His cultivation had reached the level of high-Senior-Magus.

More importantly, Ji Hao knew that Yu Chi had a bloodthirsty spirit sword, which was extremely sharp and fierce. The sword would drain the blood of whoever it hurt. Other than this sword, Ji Hao also knew about all his treasures and weapons, unless he had some secret, life-saving treasures.

At last, something that surprised Ji Hao the most happened.

A grandson of Shermie brought Ji Hao three vividly red long hair. Judging by the sense of power releasing from the hairs, these three hair clearly belonged to Yu Chi. Ji Hao was thrilled. In the hands of a spirit creature, these three hairs might be useless, but in the hands of a human Magus who had mastered all kinds of magic curses, these three hair might cost Yu Chi his life!

"Shermie, good job. Tell your sons and grandsons to stay for my lecture of Dao!"

Ji Hao prepared the dragon blood dark steel that he found earlier and some other rare materials, then opened his mouth and let out a five-colored mist which rolled all prepared materials into his body. Then, he handed the three hairs to Yuan Li and told him what to do by using his spirit power. Yuan Li laughed, then transformed into a beam of silver light, and disappeared with the three hair.

In the five-colored cauldron, the magical flame had been spinning. The dragon blood dark steel and other materials were soon melted. All impurities contained in these materials were burned into strands of gray smoke, which rose from the cauldron, being swallowed by the Pan Gu bell which floated upon the cauldron. After quaking slightly, the grey smoke became Chaos power and slowly merged with the bell.

Ji Hao threw more and more materials into the cauldron. The embryos of Dao of sun and extreme negative carefully came to the five-colored cauldron, locked their fingers together, and cast a few treasure-making spells towards it. Ji Hao had learned those spells from Po.

In the cauldron, all kinds of rare materials had been merging with each other. Nourished by the magical power of creation, limited by Po’s treasure-making spells, these beautifully glowing materials were changing and transforming.

The two embryos of Dao were doing the treasure-making job, while Ji Hao took out the mountain-driving whip and sent his strong spirit power into it. As Ji Hao slightly trembled, his spirit power had already covered the entire Kui Gate.

From the east to the west, the Kui Gate was over a million miles wide; from the south to the north, it almost crossed the entire Midland, blocking the vast, violent flood firmly before the Final Land. The Kui Gate was magnificent, with pure and dense earth power gathered in it. The visible, yellow-colored earth power had already crystallized, turning into dark-yellow crystals. Under the effect of the earth power, all mountains in this area had merged completely into one.

According to Ji Hao's estimation, opening up a broad water channel through the Kui Gate was extremely difficult, even if tens of thousands of Divine Magi could do it together, and no one was there to stop them. It would be highly time-consuming.

Fortunately, the mountain-driving whip existed, and Si Wen Ming had planned it all before he started this great plan.

Sitting on the Kui Gate, legs crossed, Ji Hao controlled the mountain-driving whip and started to move the earth power inside Kui Gate.

Disordered spheres and streams of earth power in the Kui Gate began condensing into dark-yellow spell symbols. Each slowly sparkling spell symbol was ceaselessly absorbing surrounding earth power, gradually gathering a strong, destructive force.

Si Wen Ming was planning to move the mountains away. But that would require too much time. Since the mountains could be moved away... why couldn't those mountains be blown up?

Thinking about it, by blowing the enormous Kui Gate up into the sky, how many water-kind creatures would be killed? How many human warriors wouldn't have to die? But of course, Ji Hao wouldn't worry about people from the twenty-one families before

the Kui Gate; accidentally injures were inevitable after all!

While controlling the whip with his spirit power and making the preparation inside the Kui Gate, Ji Hao’s eyes shone brightly. He looked at Shermie and nearly a hundred spirit crayfishes sitting in front of him quietly and politely, and started talking.

"You were lowly, weak water-kind creatures. Luckily, you were chosen by the great Dao of nature. You became intelligent, gained powers and abilities."

"Even though you are gifted with powers and strengths, you don’t know about the great Dao of nature, about the heart of the world, about the secrets of the universe. You are still ordinary mortal beings, with physical bodies. Eventually, your lives will end, and you will disappear."

"Today, I am going to teach you a fundamental great Dao, that will allow you to go beyond the mortal world and live an endless life."

Chapter 1276: Teach the Dao, Give the Treasures

Making no social distinctions in teaching, this was a teaching style of Yu Yu. Any living being, talented or not, as long as it was not evil, and had never done anything unforgivable, Yu Yu would happily take it as a disciple. Yu Yu never liked crowded places. He always went to wild places. Therefore, many of his disciples were spirit creatures.

Yu Yu was a powerful being with an excellent cultivation. As more and more spirit creatures became his disciples, he created a scripture titled Natural Trial Spirit Creature Soul Text, as the beginner tutorial for his spirit creature disciples.

Ji Hao silently activated his primordial spirit. Five light streams with the colors of golden, silver, black, gray, and rainbow rose from his head. They wove into a hundreds of meters wide, multicolored cloud in the air about nine meters high. The embryos of Dao of destruction, void, and evolvement sat on the cloud, their legs crossed. They opened their mouths and read the Natural Trial Spirit Creature Soul Text aloud along with Ji Hao.

While he was reading the scripture, a great amount of natural power was inhaled into Ji Hao’s body, absorbed by his embryo of Dao, then transformed into the pure powers of sun, extreme negative, destruction, void, and evolvement, accumulating in his body. He controlled these powers with his primordial spirit and turned them into fist-sized, five-colored lotuses, flying out from Ji Hao’s mouth along with his voice.

Along with a faintly audible, beautiful melody, those lotuses softly, slowly drifted down from the air and merged into the heads of Shermie, his children, and grandchildren.

Shermie’s body was a little burning. He trembled slightly, with his slim eye popped widely up, even as big as his fists. He looked at

Ji Hao in a great surprise. Subconsciously, he reached out his arms, lowered his body, then put his forehead and palms down on the ground and kowtowed to Ji Hao, worshipping him.

To be honest, without Ji Hao's explanation, Shermie couldn't understand a word from the Natural Trial Spirit Creature Soul Text. After all, Shermie was a spirit creature, and was a crayfish, one of the lowest types among water-kind creatures. He couldn't even read. Understanding the profound Natural Trial Spirit Creature Soul Text? That would be way too difficult for him.

But, Ji Hao consumed his own power and planted his own understanding about the Natural Trial Spirit Creature Soul Text directly, deeply in the souls of Shermie and his children and grandchildren, allowing them to understand the mysticalness of this text.

Shermie was shaking with excitement. His shells bumped against each other, causing a slight noise. While trying their best to calm down from the wild joy in their hearts, he and all the other little crayfishes lied quietly, foreheads and palms against the ground, daring not to move.

All of a sudden, they felt the great joy and happiness, coming straight from their hearts. They felt that they were the same as before, but in the meanwhile, they clearly realized that everything had changed. Their bodies, their souls, their fates; everything was completely different, as those lotuses drifting out from Ji Hao's mouth merged into their bodies.

Guided by Ji Hao, Shermie started learning things from the Natural Trial Spirit Creature Soul Text the first. He sensed a slight, yet sharp pain from his soul. He endured it, gritted his teeth, and continued.

A strange sense of power was released from Shermie's soul. His soul turned purer and purer, more and more transparent, crystalline and glowing, like earth turning into gold, and iron

turning into a holy weapon. The Natural Trial Spirit Creature Soul Text purified and strengthened the soul with the great pain, so that the cultivator could go beyond the nature of spirit creatures, and miracles could happen.

This Natural Trial Spirit Creature Soul Text Yu Yu created was titled after ‘natural trial’, because he wanted his spirit creature disciples to go through a cruel pain when they started their cultivations. Like natural trials, the pain would improve their souls and free them, turning them into much higher grade lives from ‘spirit creatures’, and make them perfect and sturdy foundations of Dao.

Shermie and the other little crayfishes trembled intensely, not because of the joy anymore, but because of the endless pain from their souls. They felt like they were in the worst hell, being tortured forever.

Shermie slightly opened his mouth, gasped deeply for air, then said harshly to his children and grandchildren, "Boys, is this the greatest mercy from your grand Shifu...Get through it, you have to...As long as we get through this, we will no longer be lowly crayfishes living in mud, chewing rotten grassroots...We, we will have a chance to become dragons too!"

The group of little crayfishes responded with moans, snorts, or deep quick shouts. They also had their teeth gritted tightly while enduring the pain from their souls. None of them complained.

Ji Hao nodded. Not to mention anything else, for this determination he had, Shermie deserved a better future and a great luck.

This time, Ji Hao had truly found valuable things in Kui Water.

About water-kind spirit creatures, there was a term, ‘shrimp and crab warriors’. Shrimp and crab warriors were huge in numbers, but awfully weak, pure cannon fodders. From the ancient era to present, not a single famous, influential one had ever emerged

among shrimp and crab warriors.

Shrimps, prawns, crayfishes, and similar creatures were all poorly talented. In the water world, large fishes ate small fishes, small fishes ate tiny fishes, tiny fishes ate shrimps, and shrimps ate mud. For a lowly creature that fed on mud, even if it luckily became intelligent, it would have no future at all.

But looking at Shermie and the group of little crayfishes behind him, who were guided by himself, Ji Hao somehow felt that he might create a miracle.

Time was flying. More and more dark-yellow spell symbols sparkled inside the Kui Gate. Countless different sized spell symbols buried deeply inside the mountains, slowly absorbing the earth power, and accumulating a terrifying destructive force.

Ji Hao had already explained the contents of the Natural Trial Spirit Creature Soul Text to Shermie and his descendants eighty-one times. In this process, many of those little crayfishes passed out hundreds of times, but they didn't give up. They made it to the end, and completed their cultivation based on the text.

They stood up from the ground. Shermie and those little crayfishes, each of them completed one round of cultivation based on the text at least. The nature of their souls had already started 'evolving'. The senses of powers from these crayfishes had changed, turning special. Looking at them carefully, one would find a pearl-like luster added to their shells.

"Nicely done! Not bad, really not bad!" Ji Hao looked at Shermie and those crayfishes behind him. Including Shermie, ninety-nine crayfishes were standing in front of Ji Hao now.

"These are your new weapons and armors. I made these for you according to your body shapes. You are good at punching, so I made each of you a pair of 'soul-tearing' gloves, designed specially to hurt your enemies' souls. These gloves can also release cold power to hurt your enemies, and are very strong. Come on, try

these!"

Waving his hand, Ji Hao sent a series of silver, sparkling, strangely-shaped gloves and armors to Shermie and the other little crayfishes. Those gloves were made with the extremely negative power. They were bone-piercingly cold, and quite a couple of little crayfishes sneezed a few times under the cold power released from their gloves.

Shermie hurriedly kneeled on the ground with those crayfishes as they thudded their foreheads against the ground a few times in a row, then happily put on their armors and gloves.

Those armors and gloves were sparkling brightly with a silver light, fitting Shermie and those little crayfishes' bodies perfectly, just like new shells growing on their bodies. Shermie clenched his fists and threw a few punches in the air, causing a sharp swishing noise. This time when he punched, Ji Hao couldn't even see his fists.

Chapter 1277: Friendly Neighbor

"Do we have to eat all of this?"

Looking at a snow-white piece of meat from a thousand-years-old electric eel, Shermie asked Ji Hao with a bitter look.

"You have to eat all of it. Otherwise, you won't have enough spirit blood for your future cultivation." Ji Hao looked at Shermie seriously. He gently cut his finger into the meat, tore off a one-foot-long slice, put into his mouth and began chewing slowly.

Tender`and crisp, the meat melted in Ji Hao's mouth, into a slightly sweet juice, flowing into his stomach through his throat. A strong warmth spread through his body, making him feel so comfortable.

Spirit electric eel was one of the best kinds among water-kind spirit creatures. They were born with a great thunder power. Therefore, nourished by the thunder power day and night, electric eels were pure and clean. Except for the purest life-force, no spirit creature power could linger in their bodies.

This thousand-year-old electric eel deserted in the face of a battle, from the battlefield before the Kui Gate. A dark water serpent, as a supervisor, discovered this fleeing eel. He killed the eel right on the spot, and ate a half of it. The remaining half of the eel was sent back to the camp and sold in a restaurant.

Yes, these water-kind spirit creatures were learning everything from human beings. They opened hotels and restaurants in this large Kui Water camp, along with brothels, which were Yu Chi's favorite. These places were all modeled on large markets in human cities.

The nine-hundred-meters-long, tens of meters thick eel body was sent into a restaurant, immediately attracting a large group of enormous spirit creatures.

Ji Hao had his spirit power covered the whole area the whole time, watching on everything in the surroundings. Seeing the half of electric eel, he immediately rushed into the restaurant with Shermie and a group of crayfishes, dropped a pile of top-grade magic crystals, and purchased it.

"Eat, it's good for you. If you want to grow strong, you have to strengthen your body. But in order to strengthen your body, you have to eat meat or drink blood to replenish a great amount of life-force. Otherwise, you would be drained during your cultivation." Ji Hao looked at Shermie and said seriously. Meanwhile, he pushed the eel meat towards Shermie.

From all directions, quite a lot of fierce-looking large spirit creatures had their eyes fixed on Ji Hao and Shermie, who were sitting around a large square table. If the terrifying spirit creature power released from 'Summer', the spirit crayfish transformed from Ji Hao, didn't frighten them, those large spirit creature would have rushed up and looted the meat long ago.

When they looked at Shermie, they seemed to be even more angry and vicious, 'You damned crayfish, this was such a delicious meat. If you don't want it, give it to us!'

Shermie frowned, slowly cut off a large piece of eel meat, and put into his mouth. He chewed, then swallowed slowly. Ji Hao sat by the table, while Shermie stood up, politely facing Ji Hao. He slightly bent his knees and made the gesture for the first grade of the Cultivation Method with Nine turns. His blood started to boil, circulating rapidly inside his body. The eel meat he swallowed just now had already disappeared into his body, even before it reached to his stomach.

Shermie looked at Ji Hao in shock. When he started his cultivation based on the first grade of Cultivation Method with Nine Turns, he felt that his body was a giant blackhole, craving for more life-force and energy. He clearly sensed that if he didn't replenish enough life-force and spirit blood power, his cultivation

method would turn him into a dried corpse!

What a powerful cultivation method, what a dreadful power!

Suddenly, Shermie was even more grateful to Ji Hao, and he venerated him more, hundreds of times more than before. Lowering his head, he started wolfing the eel.

Normally, a lowly crayfish who luckily became a spirit creature couldn’t possibly be guided well. Everything Shermie had learned before was learned by struggling for survival, with his gifts and instincts. He didn’t only need to survive on his own, he also had to protect a group of weak children.

For the fist time in his life, Shermie felt relaxed. He didn’t need to worry about tomorrow anymore. At the moment, Ji Hao was like a towering mountain, bringing Shermie an incomparable sense of security.

He finally had someone to depend on, and this felt great!

"To be honest, this meat, is truly much tastier than mushrooms and kelps." mumbled Shermie, "Before, I couldn’t bear to eat the other living beings, neither did I dare to do it..."

"Hm, from now on, when you see evil spirit creatures, chose the tasty ones to eat." Not so responsibly, Ji Hao drew the topic away. "In fact, being a water-kind spirit creature is so lucky! Steamed large crabs, boiled green crabs with vinasse, stew soft-shelled turtles, spicy snakes..."

Ji Hao forgot about the fact that he was ‘Summer’, a large spirit crayfish now. While drooling, he glanced at the other spirit creatures in the surroundings. Wherever his eyes reached, all water-kind spirit creatures were frightened away immediately. The dish names murmured by Ji Hao’s mouth were way too creepy!

Shermie blinked his eyes and looked at Ji Hao in confusion. He knew Ji Hao’s true identity. But what did Ji Hao sneak into the Kui

Gate for? For breaking the Kui Gate? Or for fresh seafood?

Ji Hao chuckled. Suddenly, loud noises could be heard in this simply built, tilting restaurant.

Not far away, a few gorgeously dressed snake girls and clam girls darted out of a stone building while crying and wailing. An enormous Yu rushed out of the stone building in an unstoppable way while roaring deeply, with purple-red poisonous sand puffing out from his mouth.

"How dare you try to hurt me?!" This Yu screamed pretty hysterically. This area was circled up by countless water-kind spirit creatures, but the Yu widely opened his mouthpart and sprayed out the poisonous sand in all directions.

Yu's poisonous sands were highly lethal, and not even those higher grade ones could survive it. This Yu was as strong as low-level Divine Magus, which meant he was able to threaten high-level Divine Magi with his poisons sands.

Most of those spirit creatures in the market were low-grade, weak ones. Wherever the poison sand reached, large groups of little spirit creatures burst with shrill screams, then melted into puddles of toxic liquid. Some little spirit creatures were also poisonous, but they only lasted for a slightly longer while amidst the purple-red sand. Spirit creatures who stood further away watched these poor ones rot rapidly. Their skins and fleshes turned into a red, toxic liquid, while bones and internal organs slowly melted as well.

"Someone...tried to...to assassinate..."

Followed by a disordered footstep sound, Yu Chi staggered out of the stone building with his upper body bared. With difficulty, he made a few steps forward while yelling at that Yu, which was aimlessly spraying poisonous sand.

"Idiot! Didn't you see me...I...I am...Bring me back...now..."

That Yu seemed to not yet realize what had happened. Ji Hao smirked and dashed out, then flashed across the air and showed up beside Yu Chi, leaving a shred of afterimages in the air. He attentively held Yu Chi's arm with both hands.

"Sir, you looked familiar to me! We are neighbors!"

"Sir, do you remember me? I am Summer, and this is my nephew, Shermie. We're neighbors!"

"Sir, are you...ill? Cursed? Ah, I think you are cursed! Look at your face, white as a corpse. You must be cursed." Clicking his tongue, Ji Hao continued.

"Sir, don't panic, don't be afraid. I have no other ability, but I am good at undoing magic curses."

"Lord, we are neighbors. Neighbors should look after each other, be friends, right? This evil curse you're having now, I will deal with it for you, I promise!"

"Sir, let's go!"

Before Yu Chi could refuse, Ji Hao grabbed his neck and carried him up like carrying a chicken, then walked away quickly.

Chapter 1278: Neighbors Should Take Care of Each Other

Yu Chi's body was boiling hot, his lips were covered in blisters. Under his skin, a faint grayness was visible. He could no longer breathe through his nose. When he opened his mouth and gasped for air, one could even see thin steams puffing out of his mouth, as his body temperature was awfully high.

Even worse, he had been twitching intensely, and his life-force was leaking out of his body wave after wave. As a Divine-Magus-level spirit creature, Yu Chi had abundant spirit blood and thriving life-force, which was the reason why he could hang out with girls in the Kui Gate camp all day long without exhausting himself.

But now, in an indescribable way, his life-force and spirit blood power was leaking out of his body. By the time Ji Hao dragged him back to his rock house from the brothel, Yu Chi was entirely softened. His muscular body had turned scrawny, that make him look like a dying tuberculosis patient, who had been ill for a long time. The short distance between the brothel and the rock house only took Ji Hao a few steps.

"An...Ancestor!" Ji Hao rushed to the rock house. A few Yu boys ran out of the house, seeming not to be so smart. Seeing Yu Chi grabbed in Ji Hao's hand, their eyes immediately turned red. They started to gasp quickly while a fierce power vibration released from their bodies.

Yu were born with mysterious, lethal powers. But after all, they were bugs. No matter how strongly gifted they were, these young Yu boys were silly and uncourteous, and this was a fact which could not be changed.

Yu Chi were tens of generations older than these young Yu boys; in their eyes, Yu Chi was a young ancestor. Seeing their young ancestor become like this, these Yu boys instinctively thought that

Ji Hao was the one to blame. Recklessly, they roared towards the sky and showed their original shapes. Seven to eight, over ten-meter long Yu with red shells crowded before the rock house, opened their mouthparts, and blasted clouds of poisonous sand towards Ji Hao.

"Idiots! I am your nice, friendly neighbor! Attacking me with your killing sand? Are your brains damaged?" Ji Hao lifted Yu Chi up irresponsibly to shield himself against the sand.

Yu Chi gave a shrill howl. He was already suffering the sudden illness, having a scarily high fever, and had been losing his life-force and spirit blood power at a despairing rate. But the poisonous sand released by the few Yu boys swished over, broke his skin, and left thousands of tiny holes on his face, squeezing thin streams of blood out of those holes.

"Ouch...You bloody idiots!" Yu Chi's entire body was aching and limp. Because of the high fever, he was twitching intensely, and was about to fall unconscious. Hurt by the sand, he screamed out, then pointed at the few Yu boys in rage. He opened his mouth and let out a steamy hot breath.

"Young ancestor!" Yu Chi got angry, and the few Yu Boys panicked, screaming but not knowing what to do.

Ji Hao carried Yu Chi and rushed into the rock building with big steps. Yu Chi's face was covered in blood now. Looking at him, another few Yu in the house were all frightened. They shouted and yelled, but none of them dared to do anything. They had cultivated themselves into human shapes not long ago, and their intelligence was only at the level of twelve years old human children. Added with the fact that they were born wild and rude, they had no ability to deal with the current situation at all.

A series of muffled footsteps could be heard from another room. A few old Yu rushed out of the room with dark faces and fierce, sparkling eyes. They stared at Ji Hao while quickly circling him up.

These few old Yu had cultivated themselves for two-thousand-years at least. They had lived long enough; therefore, they were much smarter than those boys. They surrounded Ji Hao up, then one of them shouted the question out, "What happened to our Ancestor Chi?"

Ji Hao raised hid eyebrows and responded, "Your Ancestor Chi is ill. I am your neighbor, and I often see him walk past my house. I saw him in the market with this serious illness. His mount knows nothing but killing irrelevant people...So, I kindly brought him back to save his life. Did I do something wrong?"

Another old Yu looked at the blood on Yu Chi's face and yelled angrily, "What happened to his face?"

Ji Hao tilted his head and said straightforwardly, "Some idiots did this to him. Does it have anything to do with me?"

Thud! Thud! The few Yu boys kneeled on the ground, kowtowing to Yu Chi in a panic.

The few old Yu glanced at each other and then slightly loosened their tightened eyebrows. One of them reached out his hand, and attempted to grab Yu Chi as he said coldly, "Our Ancestor Chi is powerful. What illness can hurt him? We don't need you, we will help him."

Swish! Swish! Shermie and a few little crayfishes rushed in.

Ji Hao laughed out loud. He slapped that old Yu's hand away directly. Ji Hao put forth his strength, and almost crushed the old Yu's hand. The old Yu screamed in pain, then stepped backward quickly while shaking his hand.

"Eh? What do you mean? I saved your ancestor, but aren't you going to thank me with anything? You want me to go like this?"

Grabbing Yu Chi's neck with his fingers, Ji Hao viciously stared at the few old Yu and shouted, "What? Don't you want to pay me? I am telling you, I, Summer, have always been a nice man. But I am

not like my nephew Shermie. He’s afraid, and doesn’t want any trouble, but I am never afraid of troubles!"

Yu Chi had already fallen unconscious. Shaking Yu Chi, Ji Hao continued yelling with a high-pitched voice, "I saved your ancestor, hehe, you’re gonna pay me for that. If you don’t pay, I will strangle him to death!"

Ji Hao raised his left hand high, and seemed ready to kill Yu Chi right now.

The few old Yu screamed out together. They hurriedly kneeled on the ground and kowtowed to Ji Hao, then shouted, "Sir, sir, please, don’t kill our Ancestor Chi...It’s our fault, all our fault. As long as you don’t kill him and let us save him...we can negotiate, anything can be negotiated!"

Ji Hao nodded in satisfaction, then said grinningly, "Right. I am Summer, and I am very kind-hearted. I can’t bear to watch people suffer, especially when we are neighbors. We live next doors, so we are neighbors, you know, good neighbors. We should be nice to each other, be friends, help each other, with purely kind hearts!"

He didn’t loosen his fingers. Dragging Yu Chi, he walked straight to the main living room with big steps while saying, "Come on, come on, don’t stand there and watch. Hurry, prepare things to save your ancestor! I relieved his symptoms temporarily. If we want to heal him...See, see, he passed out already! I don’t think it’s gonna be easy!"

Walking into the living room, Ji Hao immediately had his eyes on the altar in the middle, surrounded by golden-armored puppets, and those three asleep Yu on it. Narrowing his eyes, he walked to the altar and dropped Yu Chi directly on the ground.

"Hurry up now. What life-saving magic drugs and treasures do you have? Go get everything now, quick!"

"Ahyaya, your ancestor is very ill! If you want to save him, you

got to take out the best things you have. This is your ancestor, don’t muddle through!"

Squatting beside Yu Chi, Ji Hao grinned like a blooming flower.

Chapter 1279: Control the Core

Human beings were the owners of the natural fortune of the world. Therefore, the humankind was powerful and prosperous. The population size of the humankind was great. Clans developed thrivingly, and people lived happy, peaceful lives. Spirit creatures were not protected by the natural fortune, but they had all kinds of natural abilities. Spirit creatures mostly lived in wild, dangerous places, where treasures could be found easily. Therefore, many spirit creatures were treasure collectors.

For saving Yu Chi, the few old Yu took out all magic herbs they had, useful or not. Standing aside and looking at those herbs, Ji Hao's eyes even turned greedily green. Some of these herbs were legendary treasures in the knowledge system of human beings; a few kinds could even bring the dead back to life!

For example, according to a legend, a ganoderma lucidum with nine leaves could make the dead come back to life, but an old Yu directly took out a ganoderma lucidum with a hundred leaves and one with a thousand leaves. Ji Hao couldn't even imagine how old the two plants were. Another example was that of a ten-thousand-year-old stone milk, which could strengthen physical bodies and primordial spirits, nourish internal organs, and build stronger foundations for cultivators, improving their overall potentials. But another old Yu took out some ten-million-years-old stone milk, which had already turned transparent, sparkling, full of spirit power, and was now hovering in the air like a clear stream of water!

The problem was, no matter how old that stone milk was, it wouldn't do any help to Yu Chi.

Why would Yu Chi suddenly fall ill? It was because he was cursed!

Why would he be cursed? Because Ji Hao gave his three hair to

Yuan Li, who sent them to Taisi. Taisi had already returned to Pu Ban City. With the faith power from countless refugees living in Ji Hao's palace in Pu Ban City, Taisi built an altar, and cast a magic curse in cooperation with Yu Mu. They sent a trace of the toxic power from the Disease God Streamer into Yu Chi's body, through the long distance...

The magic curse, and the toxic power... By now, Yu Chi had a high fever, and his body was twitching, covered in blisters. His spirit blood power and life-force were still leaking. But, if waited too long, not even Ji Hao could tell what new symptoms would present in him.

Standing beside Yu Chi, and seeing the few old Yu taking out all kinds of magic herbs, Ji Hao's eye corners had been twitching from time to time. Ji Hao's great Dao of sun cultivation was guided by Priest Dachi. Apart from that, Priest Dachi had also taught Ji Hao some of his magic-drug-concoction knowledge. In Priest Dachi's eyes, Ji Hao might not be talented on magic-drug-concoction. Therefore, eighty percent of the knowledge he taught Ji Hao was about all magical herbs and plants in the world, instead of real techniques.

Ji Hao recognized those magic herbs taken out by those old Yu at one glance. Among those herbs, there were tens of kinds were materials for Priest Dachi's famous 'nine-turn golden pill'. These herbs were old and powerful, even beyond the requirements of the 'nine-turn golden pill'. Not to mention concocting these herbs into golden pills, one could even directly eat each of these herbs to get great effects.

"What a waste! You are really a bunch of brainless spirit creatures." Ji Hao sighed silently, but without stopping these old Yu. He squatted beside Yu Chi, then conveniently poked a finger on his body. By doing this, Ji Hao stopped Yu Chi's blood and power flow. Yu Chi instantly straightened his body, his facial muscles tightened, and teeth gnashed tight, grinding and causing

loud noises.

Ji Hao stood up and said in a deep voice, "You take a look first. Choose something appropriate to the situation and feed your ancestor."

While coughing, Ji Hao made a serious face and continued, "Don't give him the wrong drug. If you accidentally feed him the wrong drug and poison him to death...He is burning now. You got to give him some febrifuge. I think you can give him that one-hundred-years-old bitter water snake vine!"

'He is burning so he needed febrifuge?' Ji Hao sounded like a quack doctor who might kill the patients. But these old Yu knew nothing about pharmacology. They had no choice but to try. They hurriedly cut off a three-meters-long section of vine, then tried to open Yu Chi's mouth, prepared to put in the vine.

Ji Hao smiled. One-hundred-year-old bitter water snake vine was the least valuable one among all these herbs. It was bitter and cold, and could indeed serve as good febrifuge, also effectively deal with the miasm in Southern Wasteland jungle. But apparently, the vine was completely ineffective to Yu Chi. It might give him diarrhea, but would never deliver any curative effect.

But the vine was the least valuable thing among them all, so what could Ji Hao do?

Yu Chi gritted his teeth tight, while the few old Yu pulled his chin hard. His teeth remained unmoved. No matter how hard the few old Yu tried, his teeth remained gritted, without loosening even a slight little bit.

Those old Yu screamed in panic, not knowing what to do. They surrounded Yu Chi and tried everything they could.

Ji Hao stood up, then took a few steps towards the altar. All old and young Yu in the room were busy saving Yu Chi, and none of them noticed Ji Hao. Ji Hao took a few more steps towards the

altar, but all of a sudden, the eyes of those golden-armored puppets shone.

Cold beams of light emitted from those puppets' eyes, locked on Ji Hao. In the meanwhile, a thin layer of golden light spread out from those puppets, with fist-sized spell symbols sparkling in it faintly. Clearly, these puppets were from the heaven, because these spell symbols released from their bodies were similar to the ones in the heaven and earth great formation.

Ji Hao made another step forward. The tens of puppet moved simultaneously, gripping their weapons.

Ji Hao stopped risking. One inch forward, and those puppets could be triggered. Staying where he was, Ji Hao released his strong spirit power and covered the altar like a torrent. Invisible silver light spread rapidly in the air. Ji Hao merged the extremely negative power with his spirit power and slightly twisted the space. Without triggering anything, thin threads of silver light, that only Ji Hao could see, drilled deeply into the altar.

In the core area of the altar, Ji Hao 'saw' a human-head-sized sphere of dark-blue light.

Countless tiny ancient spell symbols had been rotating and sparkling quickly in the light, while a cold sense of power came straight at Ji Hao's face. Without hesitation, Ji Hao sent a strand of spirit power into the dark-blue light sphere.

Smoothly, his spirit power drilled windingly into the dark-blue light. Nothing was triggered, and no change was caused.

After a quarter of an hour, Ji Hao's spirit power invaded into the core of the formation buried in the altar. Immediately, he sensed another eight dark-blue light spheres. He memorized the locations of the other eight lights. According to the blueprint of the 'All Streams to the Final Land' formation, the other eight light spheres should be existing in the core areas of the other water gates, behind the Kui Gate.

‘Helping those old Gong Gongs to return to Pan Gu world with the powers of the nine water gates?’

Ji Hao pondered silently, ‘In this case, Yu Ancestor did survive the curse of the Nailhead Seven Arrows Book somehow.’

By using his spirit power, Ji Hao hid his Yu Yu sword intent in the core of the formation inside this altar. Once he planted nine sword intents, an old Yu yelled out at him, "Mr. Summer, please take a look at our ancestor. Can we still save him?"

Chapter 1280: Ao Ao Sends His Army

Ji Hao walked to Yu Chi. Yu Chi was twitching, eyes rolling in the back of this head, and seeming to be at his last breath. Because of what Ji Hao did to him just now, he couldn't open his mouth and swallow the medicine. Therefore, the group of Yu cried and screamed, dislocated his jaw, and poured a bowl of extremely bitter liquid medicine into his mouth.

Poor Yu Chi. Those Yu were too violent, and when they dislocated Yu Chi's jaw, they also knocked off seven to eight teeth of his.

The bitter water snake vine Ji Hao mentioned earlier was already boiled and poured into Yu Chi's mouth. The liquid medicine was extremely bitter. A strong bitter scent was emitted from Yu Chi's pores, suffusing the entire room, and making the being present want to throw up.

But apparently, the medicine didn't suit the condition. Yu Chi's fever was brought down slightly, but he twitched more and more intensely, like fishes on the ground. Blood had been spurting out from his toothless gums.

"You hit him too hard, the poor ancestor of yours." Glancing at those old Yu, who had completely no idea what to do, Ji Hao sighed heavily. As Ji Hao waved his hands, all herbs taken out by those old Yu flew into his sleeves, then he turned around his palms, and released a dim-blue dark fire.

Inside the three-feet-tall fire, countless herbs could be seen faintly, flying and rolling in the fire. A refreshing aroma was released from the fire. Within a couple of breaths, all herbs in the fire were melted into a colorful liquid, and a while later, the liquid became a fist-sized, round-shaped pill.

The fire dimmed, leaving the steaming, large pill, floating upon Ji Hao's palms.

Ji Hao opened Yu Chi's mouth and forcibly put in this fist-sized, scorching hot pill. Flicking his finger and patting on Yu Chi's mouth, he sent the pill into Yu Chi's throat. Yu Chi's throat swelled instantly as the pill slowly fell into his stomach, like a snake swallowing an egg.

Ji Hao then locked his fingers together, cast a strange spell, then pointed his finger at the spot between Yu Chi's eyebrows. Afterward, he incanted the odd spell again.

Yu Chi suddenly made a long gasp. For a while, he twitched even more intensely. Large streams of sticky and turbid perspiration oozed out of his pores, then his body temperature dropped quickly. Next, he opened his eyes abruptly, and weakly looked at the group of old Yu.

Ji Hao used some transformation magics he learned from the great Dao of 'evolvement', in cooperation with some sky devil magics. In this way, he privately took possession of those valuable herbs that belonged to those old Yu, then made a valueless pill with some cheap leaves and tree barks, and thrust it into Yu Chi's mouth.

That pill he made was ineffective fore sure. But sneakily, Ji Hao had cast a spell on Yu Chi to relieve the magic curse. Therefore, the effect of the magic curse was temporarily weakened. In addition, he also froze the toxins from the Disease God Streamer, inside Yu Chi's body, with the extreme negative power. All symptoms Yu Chi had were eased by fifty to sixty percent, after which, Yu Chi finally opened his eyes.

"Ah, eh, eh!" Yu Chi opened his mouth and moaned like a retarded person. Saliva flew out of his mouth corners in streams, but he couldn't even say one word clearly.

"See, I didn't brag, I am good." Ji Hao stood up, his head held high. Smoothly, he brushed the pair of feet long feelers on his mouth corners with his fingers, and said, "Back then, I was

walking in a mountain area." Clicking his tongue, Ji Hao continued, "I met a strange person, who taught me his excellent leechcraft. I can cure all illnesses in the world."

Giving a few coughs intentionally, Ji Hao touched Yu Chi's forehead with his palm, then nodded in satisfaction and said, "About your ancestor's condition, it's mainly because he had too many women. So...he is a bit exhausted, which caused these strange problems."

The few Yu paused for a second, then nodded quickly without an end to agree with Ji Hao.

Earlier, Ji Hao created a dark fire, melted all those herbs, and within a couple of breaths, made such a large magic pill. In these old Yu' eyes, what Ji Hao did was pure magic, and it truly stunned them.

At the moment, they saw Ji Hao as a mysterious, greatly powerful creature, even more powerful than their Yu Ancestor.

Ji Hao said that Yu Chi had all those strange problems because he was with too many women, and this was very true! These old Yu clearly knew what Yu Chi had been doing lately in this Kui Gate camp. He did nothing but going out for all kinds of girls all day!

He must have gotten himself ill!

"Women are disasters. If you want your ancestor to recover, those herbs will not be enough!" Ji Hao waved his hand and said blandly, "Your ancestor awfully lacks life-force right now. You should get him more, better herbs, the old ones, like ten-thousand-year-old ginseng, one-hundred-thousand-years-old multiflorum, million-years-old ganoderma, and all kinds of old natural treasures..."

Generously looking at the few old Yu, Ji Hao continued, "Those herbs are rare and expensive, indeed... Very rare, but highly nourishing! Your ancestor is depending on those herbs now. You

need to get those herbs, then I can make pills to save his life!"

"Er...hm..." Yu Chi opened his mouth widely, seeming to say something. But no one took a glance at him.

He couldn't even say one word; looking at him was useless at the moment. Therefore, the few old Yu looked at Ji Hao humbly, responding to every word Ji Hao said with the word 'yes'. They promised that they would do whatever they could to collect those life-saving herbs immediately.

Ji Hao looked at the few 'honest', 'simple-minded' old Yu, who 'loved their ancestor', then smiled and said, "However, you need to be careful when collecting those herbs. You better don't let anyone know about this. Otherwise...Think about it. Your ancestor suddenly fell ill under your care and protection...hehe!"

Ji Hao vaguely mentioned it, and the few old Yu instantly understood.

Indeed, they needed to collect herbs. But as Ji Hao said, they must not let anyone else in their family know about this. Yu Chi was under their care and protection, yet he was suddenly down with an illness; what a huge sin they had made!

The problem could be solved only when they collected the herbs and cured Yu Chi secretly!

Yu Chi's eyeballs rolled in his eyes quickly. Seeing Ji Hao and the few old Yu, hearing their conversation, Yu Chi was anxious. Because of the anxiousness, he fell unconscious once again.

Ji Hao nodded instantly, pointed at Yu Chi, and smilingly said, "See, his internal organs have absorbed the medicine. Your ancestor fell asleep, because his internal organs are growing life-force!"

The few old Yu nodded again quickly and endlessly. Then, a high-pitched, ear-piercing noise came from the outside, "Oi, where is Shermie? I, master Ao Ao, am back! Why didn't he come out to

welcome me?"

"Shermie, Shermie, I am telling you now. Your crayfish boys, you need to prepare them for something life-risking!"

Chapter 1281: Manhunt

What happened to Yu Chi temporarily came to an end. If the few old Yu wanted to save Yu Chi, they were going to need ‘Summer’s’ help.

Therefore, Ji Hao relaxedly walked out of the rock house and stood by the door, looking at his own bone house.

Four crab warriors with cyan shells straightened their waists, and stood in front of the door of the bone house, with a sedan chair carried on their shoulders. On the chair was a cushion woven from soft vines. Sitting on the cushion was a..pile of dark water serpent. While chewing a heart from an unknown creature, this dark water serpent was shouting mumblingly towards the bone house.

This dark water serpent in his human shape was even fatter than Yu Mu. He was nearly six-meters-tall, and his waistline was definitely over nine meters. He was taking large bites on the heart, with his mouth corners covered in blood. His eyes were squeezed between his fat layers, seeming like two thin lines that could never open wider. But those eyes were filled with intoxication, because of the heart that he was eating.

Once Ji Hao walked out of the stone house, this super fat dark water serpent man laughed out loud and said, "Shermie, why are you...older? Eh? Aren’t you Shermie?"

Throwing away the heart in his hand, this dark water serpent opened his eyes slightly wider. With efforts, he opened his sparkling eyes to the width of ten hair from three hair, and looked at Ji Hao from head to toe.

"I am Summer, Shermie’s uncle." Ji Hao coughed slightly, bent his waist, and shortened his neck like crayfishes always did. He slowly took a few steps towards the dark water serpent and said, "Sir, what do you want to speak to Shermie about?"

"Kneel, kowtow...So impolite!" Before Dark Water Ao Ao said anything, a group of snake warriors behind the four crab warriors shouted out. A five meters tall man with a snake head and a human body walked up with big steps, raised a bone spear, and pointed at Ji Hao while stuttering, "Kneel, kow..."

Ji Hao swiftly waved his right hand. A bright, blinking cold light was emitted from between his fingers. Followed by an ear-piercing swishing noise, Ji Hao threw a heavy punch on the snake-man's chest, shattered his rhino-skin soft armor and broke his ribs, making him vomit blood and fly backward.

Ji Hao punched extremely fast. Added with the blinding light he released with a sky devil magic, Dark Water Ao Ao and those snake warriors saw nothing but thousands of beams of light flashing before their eyes, bringing them a sharp pain in their eyes. They felt that frigid light beams wove into a giant web and covered their eyeballs, making tears gush out of their eyes unstoppably.

Compared with the blinding light Ji Hao created, punching away a snake warrior seemed to be nothing.

Dark Water Ao Ao randomly wiped the blood around his mouth, then screamed, "Ahyaya, Shermie, where did you find this old uncle of yours? Impressive, impressive, his punches are even better than yours! Oi, old man, what's your name?"

Ji Hao showed the whites of his eyes and said coldly, "Sir, do you have a problem with your ears? My name is Summer. Have you memorized my name this time?"

"I do, I do!" Dark Water Ao Ao nodded smilingly. He rubbed his eyes and spread his tears all over his face, then he could finally see again.

Curiously and excitedly, he looked at Ji Hao from up to down, then laughed out loud, "Great, wonderful! Summer, Shermie's uncle, you're strong. Hmm, great...We are just in need of warriors out there!"

Shermie stood behind Ji Hao with a group of little crayfishes, looking straight at Dark Water Ao Ao. None of them said a word.

Ji Hao took a few steps forward and stood in front of Dark Water Ao Ao. Crossing his arms over his chest, he said rudely, "Go out there risking our lives to fight human beings? No! Our Shermie and these good boys are all little crayfishes. There are only tens of them!"

Holding his head high, Ji Hao curved down his lip corners and continued coldly, "It is extremely hard for us crayfishes to become intelligent and cultivate ourselves into spirit creatures. We're not like those shrimps or lobsters. A little bit spirit creature power released by a large spirit creature can turn a shrimp into a shrimp warrior within three months. But, it was never that easy for us!"

Dark Water Ao Ao stared at Ji Hao, paused for quite a while, then patted on his fat belly and asked with hesitation, "Are you saying that, you don't have too many people in your family, so you don't want to go to the frontline?"

Ji Hao held his head even higher and responded loudly, "Yes, that's right! If you promise that you won't send Shermie and his boys to the frontline, we can negotiate anything. But, if you don't, I, Summer, know a few big men too. They'll listen to what I say. They're guarding the other few gates behind, hehe!"

Dark Water Ao Ao again patted his belly, shaking his fat intensely. As a Divine-Magus-level, enormous spirit creature, his body should have reached a perfect state. But how on earth did he grow so much fat? Even Ji Hao was curious about this.

"Alright, then...You, Shermie, and Shermie's boys, I won't send you to the frontline this time!" Dark Water Ao Ao said grinningly while patting his belly, "You don't want to go to the frontline, fine, but there is one thing that you need to do for me."

Dark Water Ao Ao raised his upper body strenuously, crooked his fingers towards Ji Hao, and said, "Come over here, listen to me!"

Ji Hao took two steps forward. The four crab warriors put down the sedan chair, letting Dark Water Ao Ao put his mouth near Ji Hao's ear as he whispered something.

Hearing Dark Water Ao Ao, Ji Hao was enraged. A raging fire burned from his heart, making him want to kill.

At this very point in time, when human beings were finally going to win this war against the flood, some human beings were still not confident enough about their own kind. They colluded with Gong Gong Family, and had been selling confidential information to Gong Gong Family!

Ji Hao had been in the Kui Gate camp for two days. Dark Water Ao Ao told him that more human families had arrived. By now, thirty-nine human families gathered before the Kui Gate, all as powerful as Cloud Sun Family and Wuchang Family. Every single one of those newly arrived human families were extremely strong and influential.

Thirty-nine powerful human families combined their powers, but still failed to break the Kui Gate from the frontline battlefield. Under full-power counterattacks of Dark Water Serpent Family and divine warriors sent down by Gong Gong from the heaven, the thirty-nine families even suffered severe damages. You Chao Family even lost a few important elders.

As no progress was made from the frontline battlefield, among all from the thirty-nine families, someone finally suggested that they could maybe send strong Maguspreist to sneak into the Kui Gate and deliver a mass destruction to the water-kind army in the Kui Gate with secret magics.

This suggestion was approved by all leaders from the thirty-nine families. They sent tens of thousands of strong Maguspriests to sneakily approach the Kui Gate with all methods.

"Therefore, Summer, you, Shermie, and your boys, you have to closely watch this area that I am responsible for. All human beings,

kill them. You can kill the wrong people, but can’t risk to let go of any enemy!"

Dark Water Ao Ao patted hard on Ji Hao’s shoulder.

Handing Ji Hao a snake bone tablet that represented his own identity, Dark Water Ao Ao then gave an order. The four crab warriors carried him back up and left with big steps along with those snake warriors.

Chapter 1282: Spirit Creature Market

"An interesting spirit creature, a smart one, one with stories, one that can be used... But, you also have to be careful with him, in case he uses you against your own will." Ji Hao quickly made his judgment about Dark Water Ao Ao.

Dark Water Ao Ao was super fat, and one might think he had nothing but fat in his head. However, he wasn't as silly as he looked. Ji Hao believed that normally, a super fat creature was either stupid, or truly smart.

Dark Water Ao Ao wasn't stupid, which meant he should be very smart!

"Shermie, did you hear Commander Dark Water Ao Ao? How big is his section? You send out your boys now, and keep an eye on every single corner!"

Ji Hao narrowed his eyes, held his hands behind his back, and murmured a few words to Shermie. Then, he turned around and laughed to those old Yu in the rock house, "People, if you want to save your ancestor, remember what I said. All in all, the more herbs you find, the bigger chance we will have to save his life. Don't forget what I said. If your ancestor dies... hehe!"

Laughing in a weird tone, Ji Hao puffed out his chest and walked back into the bone house next-door.

Shermie and his boys began darting all over the market area. Tens of thousands of shrimp warriors and all lower-grade spirit creatures, who were willing to follow Shermie's lead, were put to use. Soon, Dark Water Ao Ao's section was filled with warriors, such that even if a fly flew past this area now, these warriors under Shermie's command would be able to tell its gender immediately.

Apparently, Dark Water Ao Ao was at a rather high position in Dark Water Serpent Family. The Kui Gate camp was huge, yet he

was in charge of nearly five percent of it. This meant that the camp was divided into twenty parts, and one part was under his direct jurisdiction.

All kinds of information gathered to Ji Hao from every direction. Soon, Ji Hao found something interesting.

"Are you sure?" Ji Hao looked at Shermie curiously. The Chi Ban Market he visited back in Chi Ban Mountain was shocking, but he didn't think that similar places existed in this crappy water-kind camp.

"I am sure, Shifu. Before you came, I've heard about places like that. But, I didn't want to cause any trouble, which might harm my boys. So, I never went to those places." Shermie looked at Ji Hao seriously and explained carefully, "But Shifu, you've taken the task from Dark Water Ao Ao. Those places were the only choices for human beings to hide in this camp."

"Lead the way!" Ji Hao was seriously intrigued.

Right in this Kui camp, a super-scale underground market existed. According to the information provided by those shrimp warriors, this market would hold a small action every noon, a medium auction every five days, and a large auction every ten days.

According to those shrimps, one could buy anything in Pan Gu world from those auctions, anything one could ever imagine!

Ji Hao didn't believe that. That sounded way too exaggerated. Anything one could ever imagine? Even including Gong Gong's head?

A quarter of an hour later, Ji Hao, Shermie, and a few of the strongest crayfish boys and Heng Xing, came to a dark cave in Dark Water Ao Ao's section of the camp, with a high-profile. They were mounted on silver-beard seahorses, and surrounded by weak but carefully selected, beautiful shrimp warriors, who had

transparent, silver-white shells,

Tens of fierce-looking crocodile men guarded before the three-hundred-meters-wide entrance of the cave, holding alloy spell symbol blades as they blocked Ji Hao’s way.

"Who are you? Who are you? Do you know what this place is? How dare you just walk in like this?" A six-meters tall, muscular crocodile man stood in front of Ji Hao, popped out his eyes, and yelled, "Poor shrimps, piss off!"

Shrimp warriors served as the main, fundamental force of almost all water-kind armies. Shrimp warriors were mostly weak, and their bloodlines were lowly. Therefore, they were cannon fodder on battlefields. Even the strong ones among shrimp warriors were poor. They wouldn’t have too much money to spend.

These crocodile men didn’t let Ji Hao, who was a crayfish now, and the others in. Instead, they wanted to drive them away. Reasonably, these crocodile men didn’t do anything wrong. Their only mistake was misjudging Ji Hao.

Ji Hao took out Dark Water Ao Ao’s bone tablet, and injected a strand of extremely negative power in. A sharp snake scream could be heard from the tablet, then a dark mist rose from it. Within the mist, a hundred-miles-long, extra fat, dark water serpent, which could only lie straight on the ground instead of coiling, appeared.

This strangely shaped, super fat snake slowly raised his head, and hissed weakly.

The group of crocodile men immediately kneeled on the ground, deferentially kowtowing to Ji Hao and the others. Ji Hao snorted, and without saying a word, he put the tablet back into his sleeve, then pointed at the dark entrance of the cave. The seahorses roared happily, and carried Ji Hao, Shermie and Hengxing, darting into the cave.

One hundred shrimp warriors carefully selected by Ji Hao

glanced at each other as they thrillingly jumped into the cave behind Ji Hao, Heng Xing, and Shermie. A few daring shrimp warriors even made faces at those crocodile men while walking past them.

The path in the cave was tilted downwards by thirty degrees. Moving hundreds of miles forward along the path, Ji Hao and his people finally saw lights. Every tens of miles, a torch made from beast oil hung on the wall, illuminating the broad path. One could see many people walking down or up in the path. Occasionally, one might even hear whispers and chuckles.

Coming down to this area, those shrimp warriors were all frightened badly. The curled up their bodies and tremblingly followed behind Ji Hao, daring not to make one single jump anymore.

Moving straight down, the cave was suddenly ablaze with lights around a corner.

Tens of thousands of fist-sized mermaid pearls floated in the air, emitting a white light that illuminated every corner of this enormous underground cave, like the daylight. Rows of buildings stood in this tens of miles wide underground cave. These buildings were masterpieces apparently; every single one was exquisite and beautiful, completely different from those slanting sheds in the camp.

Groups of water-kind spirit creatures silently and quickly walked on the broad street. In some shops by the street, four-eyed Jia Clan warriors were wielding their dazzling weapons, advertising their products. In some other shops, five-eyed Xiu Men old men were secretly guiding their customers into the rooms behind their shops. Those customers had their faces covered in masks.

Ji Hao immediately spread his spirit power. He saw many non-humankind shop owners in this market, and many shops run by rare water-kind creatures.

But suddenly, Ji Hao quivered slightly, then popped out his eyes, stunned. He couldn’t even believe his own spirit power.

He even suspected that he was again fooled by sky devils.

He saw a flag belonging to the chamber of commerce run by Tushan Family!

Chapter 1283: Being Surprised

Tushan Chamber of Commerce was the largest chamber of commerce in the entire human society. Their business had developed to Midland and the four wastelands. This chamber of commerce was also the only human force that could compete against the phoenix-kind and the dragon-kind for wealth.

Tushan old man was the current leader of Tushan Family. His daughter had married Si Wen Ming, and they already had a son. Tushan Family was super wealthy, but not so powerful. Tushan old man married his daughter to Si Wen Ming because when the latter ascended to the throne, Tushan Family would attain a great power and a force of arms, strong enough to match their wealth.

Therefore, Tushan Family should be on Si Wen Ming's side. Tushan Family people should be Si Wen Ming's strongest supporters and allies, and should never betray him.

Si Wen Ming was leading countless human warriors, fighting against the vast flood, and defeating countless water-kind armies. With his solid accomplishments, he built his own sturdy path to the throne step by step.

However, as Si Wen Ming's natural, determined supporters, who should never, ever possibly betray Si Wen Ming, a flag of the chamber of commerce run by Tushan Family people appeared in the water-kind camp in Kui Gate area. What had these Tushan Family People been doing? Supplying weapons to the water-kind? Colluding with the water-kind?

Ji Hao would never overestimate businessmen's moral integrity. In both his previous life and current life, he met many businessmen. Some of these pursued nothing else but maximum profit, and would always do something unimaginable, unreasonable, and beyond normal people' comprehension. Therefore, if Tushan Chamber of Commerce were truly colluding

with the water-kind, that wouldn’t surprise Ji Hao.

Slightly pulling his long pair of feelers, Ji Hao slowly waved his hand, pointed at the Tushan Chamber of Commerce flag, and said, "Boys, let’s walk around and see if we can find something nice in this crappy place!"

Led by three seahorses, Ji Hao and the others walked towards the flag.

All the way, countless large, enormous spirit creatures looked at Ji Hao and his people in surprise. All the other spirit creatures in this market were followed by large groups of most fierce-looking water-kind spirit creatures, sharks, octopuses, whales, even poisonous snakes and jellyfishes. These fierce, brutal and violent water-kind creatures were the main force of a water-kind army.

But, what were those things behind Ji Hao? A hundred glowing, silver, eight-feet-tall, clean and orderly lined shrimp warriors, who seemed to be very…delicious?

The group of shrimp warriors walked through the market, which had countless strong and brutal creatures hiding in it. Some bloodthirsty ones even started twisting they wrists and attempted to grab a few shrimp warriors right now and eat them like desserts!

Sensing those unfriendly gazes from all directions, Ji Hao slightly and coldly snorted. He threw a sideway glance at a billhead shark man, who was preparing to attack those shrimp warriors. Instantly, a suffocatingly strong and cold power spread from Ji Hao’s body. That was a prehistoric level, a wild and fierce spirit creature power, which immediately swept across the entire market.

All the surrounding spirit creatures lowered their heads quietly, and walked on the street, minding their own businesses. No one dared to take another glimpse at Ji Hao’s shrimp warriors.

"Oi, Shermie, do you see all this ‘meat’ around us? Which one do

you think it’s tastier? Just go get it, we’ll have it for dinner!" With an evil smile, Ji Hao said to Shermie loudly.

Shermie looked at those spirit creatures in the surroundings, not knowing what to do. Those spirit creatures were badly frightened by Ji Hao already, and now on hearing him, they fled straightaway. No one dared to get closer to Ji Hao anymore.

Suddenly, tens of strong streams of spirit power spread from the market. Wave after wave, the overwhelming power streams swept over. Ji Hao smiled and head his head high. From his head, a blue light rose into the air and released an unstoppable, destructive pressure, against those spirit creature power streams, seeming to freeze the entire world.

The air quaked slightly, then those strong power streams immediately drew back, as if they were bitten by a poisonous snake.

Muffled snorts and moans could be heard from every corner of the market, let out by strong spirit creatures whose souls were injured. Ji Hao combined a soul-shaking magic he learned from the great Dao of ‘evolvement’ and a soul-targeted sky devil magic, then cast the combined magic with the extreme negative power. This strong move was called ‘extremely negative soul-slaughtering divine light’, originally created by Ji Hao. This was the first time Ji Hao used this move, by doing which, he gave all strong spirit creatures in this market a heavy strike.

Secret orders were quickly given from the corners of this market, and soon spread across the entire market — ‘That old crayfish is very powerful. Be smart and don’t offend that old crayfish.’

Some enormous spirit creatures had their souls injured by Ji Hao severely. These spirit creatures warned their people hysterically, ‘Whoever dares to offend that old crayfish, chop yourselves to apologize to him’.

Strongly displaying his power, Ji Hao led the group of weak

shrimp warriors and walked right in the middle of the street, past numerous shops.

Every time Ji Hao and his people walked past a shop, they would see a shop owner, smart and polite, standing by the door with sparkling eyes and a cunning face. Those shop owners silently stood by the doors of their shops and carefully observed Ji Hao, Shermie, and Heng Xing, memorizing every detail about them.

Some shop owners were holding some tiny spirit dogs or monkeys with sharp senses of smell. These gifted little things sniffed towards Ji Hao and his people and memorized their smells.

Looking at these extra cautious, vigilant shop owners, Ji Hao grinned, but explained nothing.

He clearly understood that these shop owners came here for money, and wouldn't want to get involved in any conflicts that might threaten themselves. Therefore, these people would pay attention to any powerful being who showed up in this market, to make sure that they could stay away from troubles and earn profits, as much as possible.

As for those spirit dogs and monkeys which had been collecting the smells of himself and his people, Ji Hao glanced at them, but didn't take them seriously.

With the Dao of evolvement, Ji Hao's smell could change every second, infinitely, and he could look like anything. What could these little things possibly do to him?

Watched by the people in the market, Ji Hao and his people came to the shop next to the one run by Tushan Chamber of Commerce. The shop was owned by Xiu Clan people. Over ten strong Jia Clan warriors expressionlessly guarded in front of the door, each wearing six layers of heavy dragon skin armors, and holding hilted meteor hammers. Standing in a straight line, these Jia Clan warriors blocked Ji Hao's way in.

"Without magic crystals, you can’t enter our shop!" A nearly six-meters-tall Jia Clan warrior spread his hand and snorted at Ji Hao with a muffled voice, "Magic crystals, low-grade, medium-grade, no deal... We accept only high-grade and top-grade crystals, of any nature. We also accept natural treasures with equal values!"

This was a weapon shop. Through the opened door, Ji Hao saw a series of armors in the shop; every armor had a high quality, covered by a water-like layer of faintly sparkling spell symbols.

Ji Hao was surprised. These armors were even better than the ones sold to the humankind by non-humankind businessmen in the Chi Ban Market.

Were these non-humankind beings sponsoring the water-kind in this way to weaken the humankind?

Chapter 1284: The Light of Wisdom

Magic Crystals? Ji Hao had plenty.

Not to mention those super crystal mines in Yao Mountain territory, these years, Ji Hao's position grew higher and higher in the alliance of human clans, and so did his power. Therefore, each year, tons of gifts would be sent to Yao Mountain City by almost all human clans in Midland, and among those gifts, high-grade and top-grade crystals could pile up into mountains.

Besides, in the past few years, Ji Hao had nearly swept across the entire Midland, and wiped out countless powerful water-kind beings who had their own territories. The war trophies Ji Hao gained after he destroyed those powerful water-kind beings amounted to an astronomical figure. Therefore, crystals were truly nothing to Ji Hao.

Slowly getting down from the back of the seahorse, Ji Hao held his hands behind his body and slowly walked to those Jia Clan warriors, who had the door blocked. Showing the whites of his eyes, Ji Hao looked at those Jia Clan warriors, who were much taller than himself. Trembling slightly once, Ji Hao activated his spirit blood power. Following a series of creaking noise, Ji Hao suddenly grew about five-feet taller. Even with his body bent, Ji Hao was now at the same height as these Jia Clan warriors.

Seeing this, the pupils of those Jia Clan warriors shrunk suddenly. In the surroundings, all the other spirit creatures gasped in shock as well.

In original forms, spirit creatures could control the sizes of their bodies freely. For example, if Dark Water Serpent showed his original shape, he could be hundreds of miles long, and could also be three-feet long. However, once a spirit creature transformed into its human shape, its size would be almost unchangeable. This was not about the power and cultivation of a spirit creature.

Instead, this was about the suppression and limit given to spirit creatures by the great Dao of nature; this was about a spirit creature's understanding about the great Dao of nature, and its abilities to use some secret magics.

Any spirit creature who could freely change its body size in its human shape was a terrifying, top-grade one!

"You are strong, but...without crystals, even you can't get in!" The Jia Clan warrior standing in front of Ji Hao sounded much politer than before. Mildly, he slightly bowed to Ji Hao, and said respectfully, "This is the rule of our shop, please..."

The Jia Clan warrior abruptly shut his mouth, because he didn't need to say anything anymore.

Ji Hao raised his hand. His hand was covered with a thick shell. From that hand of his, wisps of deep blue spirit creature power spread out towards all directions. The strong, dense, suffocation spirit creature power condensed into a hemisphere, which covered the area with a radius of three-hundred miles.

Sizzle! As the spirit creature power released from Ji Hao's palm suddenly faded, a three-hundred-meters in diameter, a twenty-five-meters-tall pile of top-grade crystals appeared in front of everyone on the scene.

These were raw crystals. The small pieces were the size of human heads, and the large pieces were as huge as water tanks. All raw crystal pieces were partially covered with a layer of rock with different thicknesses. Uncovered deep blue crystals exploded in the air, emitting a pure and strong water power. They generated a visible, blue mist that suffused the entire street.

"Wow! You're our most honored guest. Please, come in, please. You can buy everything you want in here!" The Jia Clan warrior immediately gave Ji Hao a large grin, then bowed deeply and said to Ji Hao with an extremely humble tone, "Please come in, my honored guest. You will find anything you want in our shop."

Ji Hao snorted and wielded his hand, taking back the giant pile of crystals. He then held his hands behind his body and walked into the shop with Shermie, Heng Xing, and those shrimp warriors, with his long pair of feelers swagging slowly on his chin.

In the broad shop, a five-eyed Xiu Clan old man in a black robe, and tens of young and beautiful human girls, were already waiting. The eyes of the Xiu Clan old man were sparkling with a light of wisdom.

Seeing Ji Hao, the Xiu Clan old man crossed his hands on his chest, slightly bowed to him, and said, "My honored guest, welcome to the shop of Westin Family. Armors, weapons, flying forts, or any armament you need, you can find the best in our shop."

The Xiu Clan old man smiled and continued with a deep voice, "If you have heard about Westin Family, you should know that we are the wisest, most knowledgeable ones in Yu Dynasty. Our family has a special social status in Yu Dynasty, and everything produced by our family is the best."

Ji Hao paused in surprise. He looked at the Xiu Clan old man, then raise his head, and looked at the signboard hanging outside the door.

In the middle of the black, alloy signboard, was a faintly glowing erect eye. Ji Hao nodded. This was indeed a shop of Westin Family.

Ah, the Westin Family... Ji Hao didn’t think that this randomly found shop, which was the nearest to the shop run by Tushan Chamber of Commerce, actually belonged to the Westin Family, the famous and special non-humankind family.

Yu Dynasty had twelve branches, each branch having an emperor in power. These twelve emperors held the social power of Yu Dynasty firmly. Countless Jia Clan and Xiu Clan Families lived under the protection of the twelve Emperors’ families. All the wealth, military forces, resources, and land belonged to the twelve

emperors' families.

The Westin Family was the only family out of this system. They were special. They were not affected by the powers of the twelve emperors. On the contrary, every emperor would carefully build a good relationship with this family.

According to the intelligence gathered by the alliance of human clans these years, Westin Family people were the keepers of the non-humankind culture, same as the star guards for the humankind. They were responsible for protecting, continuing, passing on, and rejuvenating the non-humankind culture under disastrous circumstances.

Back then, the non-humankind expedition army invaded Pan Gu world was formed by a group of failures, and among those failures, one was from Westin Family. He was a wise man, expelled from his family because of a serious crime he committed.

This man had an extraordinary wisdom. He had the crystallization of the non-humankind culture in his brain. He rebuilt the non-humankind culture system in Pan Gu world. Because of him, the Yu Dynasty had unfair advantages while facing human beings.

He had children in Pan Gu world, and built a branch of Westin Family in this world. Naturally, his family earned a special status in Yu Dynasty. Every member of the Westin Family was respected by all non-humankind beings, like the master Maguspreist in every human clan.

"The Westin Family. I've lived so long, of course, I've heard about your family." Ji Hao looked at that Xiu Clan old man and sensed his power. His power was completely different from the powers of the other Xiu Clan masters. "Are you a member of the family which is called 'the light of wisdom'?" asked Ji Hao curiously.

'The light of wisdom', the Westin Family had many titles, and

this was the most commonly used one. Human beings also called this family in this way.

The Xiu Clan old man smiled mildly and said, "I am White Feather Westin, and you can call me White Feather. I guess this way fits your communication habit better. Indeed, I am a member of the Westin Family. I am responsible for all transactions happening in this market."

White Feather smiled while shrugging and continued, "I will not meet every ordinary customer myself. But you are an honored guest. Therefore...Do you prefer fresh blood, or strong liquor, or any other drink? We can sit down and talk about your needs with no rush."

Ji Hao curved down his lip corners and then laughed, "I’ve lived for so many years, I know about graceful lifestyles. Fresh blood, liquors, forget about those. Bring me some tea! You’re right, we can take our time."

Chapter 1285: Rich Customer

Cyan-colored coral walls were perfectly polished, as smooth as mirrors. The natural grooves of corals formed beautiful, magnificent mountains and rivers on the walls. Sitting in the exquisitely decorated reception room, Ji Hao felt like he was sitting right on a mountain, beside a river.

The table and chairs were made from white corals, also perfectly polished. Beautiful human girls carried large trays made from mother of pearl, carefully bringing a pot of tea and a few teacups. A strand of steam flew out slowly from the spout, and a refreshing aroma instantly suffused the entire room.

White Feather poured Ji Hao a cup of tea. Ji Hao picked up the cup and carefully looked at this simply-designed dark iron teacup, which seemed to be quite special. Observing for a while, Ji Hao's heart twitched slightly. This cup was forged from an iron piece, as it still had hammer marks on it. In other people' eyes, this cup might be an ordinary iron piece, but in Ji Hao's eyes, those hammer marks on it and the natural texture of the cup together was a perfect 'earth nourishing spell symbol'.

The earth bore the weight of all living creatures, nourishing all living creatures. It created all living creatures, and contained an inexhaustible life-force. 'Earth nourishing spell symbol' represented the great Dao of life, which was generated from the great Dao of earth. Human Maguspriests carved this spell symbol on flower pots, and plants growing in those pots would all be especially thriving.

This teacup wasn't carved specially. Instead, the spell symbol was hammered on it, looking like a natural texture that merged completely with the cup itself. This technique was way more advanced than seal carving. Ji Hao hadn't heard about one human Maguspreist who could do it so far.

Harmonious, natural; this cup’s maker’s skill had almost reached the level of Dao.

"Great cup! Drinking tea with this cup, your life can be prolonged by many years, right?" Ji Hao spoke out the specialty of this cup.

White Feather glanced at Ji Hao in surprise. In this shop, he treated many customers with this set of teaware, but Ji Hao was the only one who said nothing about the tea, but praised the magical effect of the cup.

A water-kind spirit creature, even an old one, shouldn’t be able to do that!

Even if this old crayfish, Summer, was an especially lucky one, who had the chance to learn things, he should only be familiar with all kinds of water-power-related spell symbols. However, with one single glance, Summer recognized the spell symbols hiding in hammer marks on the cup, which had a nature of earth!

"Good sight! Are you satisfied with the capabilities of our Westin Family, sir?" White Feather was shocked, but he tried to not act like that. Smilingly, he nodded to Ji Hao, and said, "I am surprised, Mr. Summer, you have a good sight."

"I wasn’t born with all my powers and abilities." Ji Hao gave a faint, mysterious smile, drank up the tea in the cup, then put the teacup straight into his sleeve. He even patted his sleeve with satisfaction after that.

White Feather looked at Ji Hao, a bit speechless. He had seen all strange kinds of customer, but putting the teacup directly into his own sleeve? Ji Hao was the first one who did this.

Should he pretend to see nothing? But the teacup was a masterpiece, purely handcrafted by an elder of the Westin Family.

Should he say something about it? But disrespecting a customer for a single teacup? As a member of the Westin Family, if he let anyone else knows about this, what would happen to the family’s

reputation?

White Feather looked at Ji Hao's broad sleeve, unable to help but complain in his head. 'How can this old crayfish be so shameless? I've seen countless powerful spirit creatures, brutal ones, smart ones, evil ones, sinful ones, violent ones, but I've never seen such a shameless one!'

"If you like it, sir, you can have this whole set of teaware as a gift when you leave." White Feather's mouth corners twitched, then he started advertising the products of his family. "This set includes one teapot and eight teacups. You may form an 'eighty directions earth nourishing formation' with them. This small formation will make the area one mile in radius around you thriving. Even a rotten wood that died ten-thousand years ago will be revitalized in this area!"

White Feather slightly raised his chin and continued, "Mr. Summer, only an honored guest like you can have a gift like this. This set of teaware is a work of an elder, not even for sale."

More or less, there were some underminings in White Feather's words —'Only honored guests can be treated like this; but what kind of customer can be called 'honored guests'? Hehe, Summer, you old crayfish, figure it out!'

'Without paying tons of crystals and other treasures, how can you consider yourself as an 'honored guest'?'

Ji Hao crossed his legs. His legs were long and slim, covered in a thick layer of shell. Neatly, he put the entire set of teaware into his sleeve, then grinned without blushing at all, and said, "Hmm, Mr. Westin, thank you very much. I truly like this set of teaware."

Sighing heavily, Ji Hao reached out his hands and heavily held White Feather's hand.

White Feather was startled by Ji Hao's sudden movement. Sensing the sharp thorns on Ji Hao's palms, White Feather smiled

embarrassedly, and asked, "Mr. Summer, what are you doing?" He wasn't used to being touched just like this.

"Us crayfishes, shrimps, we are miserable!" Ji Hao sighed towards the sky, "We are truly miserable!"

Holding White Feather's hand tight, Ji Hao said with a bitter face, "We have lowly bloodlines. The other water-kind creatures have chances to become dragons, but we...I don't even want to mention it. Rivers, lakes, oceans, they are full of us. The power released by any slightly powerful spirit creature can affect those tiny shrimps and turn them into a bunch of shrimp warriors in a few moments!"

"Brainless, powerless, knowing nothing but leaping and shouting around; most of our kids are unmentionable. The powerful ones fight battles, but the ones rushing to the forefront are always those silly shrimps. They die the first, in the most miserable way, in the largest numbers, these silly shrimps!"

Sighing again, Ji Hao continued, "White Feather, you say, how many of our good children have died in vain in the past countless years?"

White Feather grinned embarrassedly, but said nothing.

In any war fought by the water-kind, shrimp warriors suffered the greatest casualty, and that was for sure! Even if those shrimp warriors didn't die in battles, they would become food of the other water-kind creatures! Not to mention those enormous ones, even an ordinary whale or a dragon whale could swallow a billion shrimps at one single time. Shrimps, they were expendable!

"I think things can't go on like this!" Ji Hao seriously held White Feather's hand, looked at him with sparkling eyes, and said, "Therefore, I want to select a batch of elite from my boys, teach them powerful magics, let them wear high-quality armors, and give them strong weapons. It'll be even better if we can find some flying forts or other things..."

A heavy buyer, definitely a heavy buyer. White Feather started to get excited.

Billions and billions of shrimp warriors existed in the world. If Ji Hao truly wanted to arm shrimp warriors, he would be paying an astronomical figure for the armaments he needed.

"How many armaments do you need?" asked White Feather straightforwardly.

Ji Hao remained silent for a while, then threw the question back, as if he were a super-rich man. "How many can you provide?"

Ji Hao grinned brightly, while White Feather nearly screamed towards the sky —As he thought, Ji Hao was truly a heavy buyer. Ji Hao was a million times more generous than those stingy enormous spirit creatures!

Chapter 1286: Take Away the Firewood Under the Cooking Pot

Westin Family was unimaginably influential in the non-humankind society. When White Feather give Ji Hao the list of all armaments his family could provide, Ji Hao had a deeper understanding about this mysterious family.

Ji Hao now had a snow-white bone scroll in his hands, one foot and two inches long, six-inches wide, and three-inches thick. Fiddling with the scroll, Ji Hao had a closer look at the capabilities of the Westin Family.

The scroll was made from the bones of Bai Ze, an ancient divine beast. Westin Family people made an ancient divine beast's bones into nothing more important than scrolls.

Pointing his finger at the scroll, a warm light was released from it. Lines of small characters and a large number of pictures appeared in the air in front of Ji Hao. Each high-quality image was only as big as Ji Hao's palm, but very clear and detailed. Armors, helmets, arm protectors, leg protectors and all kinds of small defensive tools; blades, swords, longbows and arrows, strong spears, all kinds of shields, the heavy ones and the light ones; Yu Clan divine towers, flying mountains, all types of purely metal, flying forts... The largest flying fort was ten-miles squared in are, divided into fifty layers, and could accommodate over a million warriors.

Beside every picture were small characters, explaining the excellences of the weapon in the picture. For example, what lethal spell symbols were used on a spear to allow the spear to penetrate a thick steel heavy shield, or what spell symbols were used on a shield to allow the shield to withstand a certain number of full-power attacks of Senior Magi, Magus Kings, or Divine Magi, without breaking.

"Mr. Summer, our family members all have faith on the future of Gong Gong Family. We believe that Gong Gong Family will replace the humankind, and become the new owner of this world." said White Feather smilingly to Ji Hao, "We also know that water-kind armies are great in numbers and scales, but the only weakness is their lack of good weapons. Human beings have way better armaments than you do."

Breathing deeply, White Feather continued honestly, "Therefore, we made a very friendly price policy for you. For example, in this batch of dragon-slaying blade, each blade can cause severe damages to any Magus-King-level dragon-skin armor. Before, we charged a million top-grade magic crystals for one blade, but this time, we will give you twenty percent discount!"

"Twenty percent for all armaments, twenty percent off on the old prices." White Feather smiled, looked at Ji Hao, and continued, "In this market, our stock is enough to arm one million warriors, added with three-thousand divine towers, for both defense and offense, one fort, ten flying mountains, and hundreds of millions of crossbows and arrows."

"One million?" Ji Hao scornfully glanced at White Feather, and said, "Mr. White Feather, do you know how many shrimp warriors we have? Do you know right here in this Kui Gate camp, how many shrimp warriors my nephew, Shermie has under his command?"

Proudly holding his head high, Ji Hao crossed his legs again, and said, "I only purchase the right things, without asking prices. Not only shrimp warriors, crabs too... They’re just as miserable as us. I am planning to recruit a few strong crab families...so..."

"So, I have already brought you all stock information of all chambers of commerce run by the friends of our family, who also have shops in the nine water gates area." White Feather waved his hand, then the bone scroll released a bright light. Countless pictures and characters immediately filled up the entire room.

The pictures of tens of millions of types of armament appeared before Ji Hao’s eyes, labeled with features, storage quantities, and prices. All these armaments were made by Xiu Clan masters.

"These are all the armaments produced by Xiu Clan masters, stocked in the nine water gates area." White Feather smilingly looked at Ji Hao and said, "I have to admit one thing, their techniques and skills lag far behind ours. Therefore, I will give you twenty percent discount for our products, and forty percent for theirs."

Ji Hao narrowed his eyes and looked at White Feather, then asked blandly, "Mr. White Feather, can you make the call for them?"

White Feather smiled mildly and confidently, puffing up his chest. His five eyes sparkled with a sharp light as he responded, "Any member of Westin Family can make the call for those families."

When saying the word ’those families’, White Feather didn’t try to hide the scorn on his face.

"Great, I’ll take them all!" Ji Hao pointed at those images floating in the air and said generously, "All of these, I’ll take them all. Give me a total price!"

The reception room fell into a deathly silence. White Feather popped out his eyes and stared at Ji Hao in shock. The few maids stood aside were also dumbfounded. Even Shermie and Heng Xing were stunned, staring at Ji Hao as if he were a monster.

"These can arm...over one hundred million warriors!" Stuttered White Feather, "Mr. Summer, you..."

"Over a hundred million? How many shrimp and crab warriors do we have in this nine water gates area?" said Ji Hao carelessly, "I’ve lived for long, and I am soft-hearted...I can’t bear watching our boys become corpses, lying all over the world; I can’t bear

watching those crab boys be smashed into meat pies."

Raising a finger to wipe his eye corners, which were not moist at all, Ji Hao then sighed towards the sky and said, "Ah, soft-hearted, soft-hearted... I don't know if it's good or bad."

White Feather's eye corners twitched intensely. He hurriedly gave Ji Hao a thumb up and said, "Good, it's definitely good! Mr. Summer, you are kind and merciful...I think this is why you can be so wise and so powerful, right?"

Quickly calculating with his ten fingers, White Feather gave Ji Hao a scarily high price, then asked, "Mr. Summer, this is the total price for these products...Are you gonna pay with crystals or other treasures?"

Ji Hao slightly flicked his finger on the coral roundtable, tinkling the table with his fingernails. Pondering briefly, Ji Hao responded in a bland tone, "I'll pay the deposit first, then I will collect the products in batches. After I collect a batch, I will make a full payment for it."

White Feather raised his eyebrows. This was a very reasonable mode of payment, and he was glad that Ji Hao chose to pay in this way.

However, Ji Hao carried on, "But, these armaments are mine now. I've placed an order. Except for me, don't you let anyone take even one arrow."

White Feather's smile seemed to freeze on his face. This requirement Ji Hao made was...

But before White Feather started a negotiation, Ji Hao took out eighteen goose-egg-sized silver beads, glowing brightly as they floated in the air. Wherever the misty light of these beads reached, the air temperature dropped rapidly. A terrifying, extremely negative power swept across the entire room. Followed by a creaking noise, the floor, the ceiling, and the walls were all covered

in a transparent, silver layer of ice.

"These eighteen soul beads of the extreme negative are a part of the deposit!"

Ji Hao threw White Feather a sideways glance.

White Feather remained silent for a while, then nodded heavily and said, "No one will be able to take one arrow from these armaments before you collect them, Mr. Summer. You have the word from our Westin Family."

Chapter 1287: Invitation

"It’s a deal then!"

Holding his hands behind his body and bending his waist, Ji Hao slowly walked out of White Feather’s shop step by step. With eighteen soul beads of the extreme negative, and a pile of top-grade magic crystals, Ji Hao purchased all armaments produced by the non-humankind, stocked in the nine water gates area.

Even if White Feather and his family wanted to replenish the stock from Liang Zhu City, Ji Hao believed that transporting so many armaments wouldn’t be easy to the non-humankind. It would require a lot of time. And time was essential to both the humankind and the Gong Gong Family under the current circumstances.

Ji Hao controlled this batch of armaments. Therefore, those water-kind creatures could only continue fighting against elite human warriors with their roughly crafted wooden clubs and bone knives, defending themselves with their shells and scales against the swords and blades of human warriors. Ji Hao froze this batch of armaments, like taking away the firewood from under a cooking pot. As a result, the water-kind armies stationed in the nine water gates area were weakened by at least thirty percent. Because of what Ji Hao did, their casualty number and rate would both soar.

What Ji Hao paid was not even worth mentioning. He looted those crystals from the nests of strong water-kind beings; as for the eighteen soul beads, he created them easily with his embryo of Dao of extreme negative. As a possessor of an embryo of Dao of extreme negative, producing those soul beads only cost Ji Hao some energy. He could have as many of those beads as he wanted. But to the ones with no capability to understand the great Dao of extreme negative, the eighteen beads were truly priceless treasures.

"Sure, it’s a deal. Mr. Summer, please trust us. Without your

word, no one can take even an arrow that belongs to you." White Feather followed behind Ji Hao and grinned warmly. His five eyes were even squeezed into five curved lines.

In the reception room, Ji Hao's one hundred carefully selected shrimp warriors put on exquisitely crafted spell symbol armors produced by the Westin Family, along with light dragon scale shields, then each carried a specially designed 'dragon-stabbing spear' on the shoulder. The spears were seven to eight times longer than their own bodies.

Their whole bodies were covered in armors. A fist-thick layer of spell symbol light spread on these armors. These armors were top-grade ones, and could withstand Divine-Magus-level attacks seven to eight times! These shrimp warriors were weak, but suddenly, a fierce power vibration released from their bodies, which made them look strong.

Their shields were designed for Divine-Magus-level attacks too, added with those 'dragon-stabbing spears' forged with the secret technique created by the Westin Family, and a highly lethal poison on the spearheads. With this gear, these shrimp warriors now had the power to threaten Magus-King-level enemies on battlefields, even though they were no stronger than ordinary Junior Magi.

"Good, Shermie, you make some efforts these days and get our boys armed." Ji Hao bent his waist, satisfyingly looking at those shrimp warriors lined up orderly in front of him, and said smilingly, "Select one hundred shrimp warriors, arm them with heavy armors and long spears, and prepare them for close combats. As for the others, regardless of the number, give them light armors and bows!"

'Amazing.' Standing aside, White Feather silently praised Ji Hao. He didn't think that this old crayfish could know about military strategies.

For these shrimp warriors, no matter how strong their armors

were and how sharp their weapons could be, they were still weak shrimp warriors. Their reaction speeds, agility, strength, and magic powers were all still weak. Therefore, on frontline battlefields, their powers would still be limited. However, with a giant number of spell symbol arrows and strong bows, by shooting ceaselessly and aimlessly, even shrimp and crab warriors had the chance to kill Magus Kings.

"Mr. Feather, there's one more thing to trouble you with...Please put poison on every arrow!" Ji Hao smilingly turned around, lowered his voice, and said to White Feather.

White Feather smilingly nodded and responded seriously, "Mr, Summer, please don't worry. Our Westin Family will handle your request. We will put the strongest poison on each of your arrows. On battlefields, the faster poisons work, the better... the more lethal, the better!"

Ji Hao smiled too. Glancing at each other, both Ji Hao and White Feather chuckled.

Then, White Feather put his right hand into his left sleeve, and gently took out an invitation card made from a thin jade slip, with complicated golden inlaid patterns. Handing the invitation card to Ji Hao, White Feather smiled and said, "Mr. Summer, you are our most horned guest. The large auction tomorrow night, you must come. Otherwise, the auction will be dull."

Ji Hao slightly flicked his long feelers on the chin. He had just purchased a giant batch of armament from White Feather, and now he got an invitation card for the large auction? This was good through. Now, he didn't need to spend time and efforts to try to find everything out himself. Looking at the exquisite invitation card, Ji Hao gave a faint smile and said, "Auction? Here? Hehe, it seems that I need to prepare some more crystals!"

"It will be worthwhile, and you won't be disappointed!" White Feather grinned brightly. Intentionally or not, he continued, "You

will be able to see a supreme treasure from the Dragon Palace in the auction tomorrow night. That treasure is very helpful for water-kind creatures, you don't want to miss it."

A supreme treasure from the Dragon Palace? Had someone from the dragon nest started selling their treasures too? Ji Hao looked at White Feather and pretended to be surprised. "Is that so? Then I will get that treasure tomorrow night." Ji Hao laughed.

Supported by Heng Xing and Shermie, Ji Hao 'tremblingly' climbed onto the back of his seahorse, then gave a deep shout. Airily, the seahorse moved forward. White Feather and a group of his people stood by the door of the shop, smilingly and deeply bowing to Ji Hao. They watched Ji Hao and his people turn around a corner, then walked back into the shop, with their smiles still on their faces.

Once Ji Hao moved around the corner, a handsome middle-aged man walked out with big steps, and grinningly blocked Ji Hao's way. The man was wearing a cyan-colored long shirt.

"What do you want? Do you want to rob me?" Looking at this handsome middle-aged man, who had a smooth, white skin, Ji Hao said with a weird tone, "But don't you see so many warriors behind me?"

Instantly, the one hundred shrimp warriors straightened their spears simultaneously, pointing the spearheads against the man's long shirt. If they put forth their strengths slightly, those spears would pierce into the man's body.

"Mr. Summer, please, in this place, how dare I do something so bad? No, no, no, even outside, I Tushan Inkstone, will never do such bad things." The middle-aged man hurriedly cupped his hands, smiled to Ji Hao, and said respectfully, "I am Tushan Inkstone, the manager of shop run by Tushan Chamber of Commerce in Kui Gate. Mr. Summer, I am here to invite you to our shop, to see a treasure!"

"See a treasure?"

Ji Hao smiled. He showed so many crystals before the shop of the Westin Family, for nothing else but catching the attention of the Tushan Chamber of Commerce. It seemed that he had succeeded, and the Tushan Chamber of Commerce was hooked.

"Tushan Chamber of Commerce...What treasures do you have?" asked Ji Hao lazily, "I’m not interested in ordinary treasures."

"Great treasure, a great treasure. You will surely like it!" Tushan Inkstone said hurriedly, "Please follow me. If you don’t like the treasure, you can smash our shop."

Ji Hao flicked his long feelers and said carelessly, "In this case, I’ll go take a look!"

Guided by Tushan Inkstone, Ji Hao and his people walked into the shop run by Tushan Chamber of Commerce from the back door.

Chapter 1288: The Shell of A Chaos Monster

The reception room of Tushan Chamber of Commerce's shop was not luxurious, but was very natural.

The room was decorated with rocks and root sculptures, added with exquisitely handcrafted tables and chairs. Everything in the room was an artwork. Fiddling with the thick and short bamboo tube, which was square in shape and serving as a teacup, Ji Hao observed the furniture in this room. He had to admit that the Tushan Family was truly wealthy. These wooden and rock tables and chairs seemed to be ordinary, but in fact, every single one of them was surrounded by a thriving life-force.

The life-force suffused the entire room and connected with nature. The entire reception room was a great formation, and had been absorbing natural powers, transforming the natural powers into a life-force. It was releasing slowly, bringing all living beings in the room both physical and mental pleasure.

"Great tea!" Lowering his head and taking a sip of the steaming hot tea, Ji Hao praised with a low voice, "Really great tea."

"The tea is nothing. The man understands the goodness of the tea is truly rare." Sitting aside, Tushan Inkstone naturally flattered Ji Hao, "Mr. Summer, you understand the sweetness of the tea. Clearly, you are a real tasteful man. You are so different from those silly rude people."

"Tasteful my a*s!" Ji Hao showed the whites of his eyes and cursed out loud. Pointing at Tushan Inkstone, he sneered and said, "I am an old spirit creature, a crayfish, a monster! I set things on fire, I loot and kill people! What's so good about this tea? I know nothing. It's flavorless water! No better than a vat of old wine!"

Tushan Inkstone's handsome face instantly turned red. Gasping heavily, he stared at Ji Hao. Ji Hao changed his attitude so suddenly that Tushan Inkstone was almost choked by the words he

had prepared to say.

This old crayfish, why didn’t he follow the common template? Tushan Inkstone nicely praised him, he could have easily said something sweet too. After that, the two of them would smile to each other, and do some small talks, then the friendship could be built, right? But how could he suddenly swear? Tushan Inkstone’s face twitched for a while, then grinned embarrassedly, and said, "Mr. Summer, do you prefer some wine? We have our special ‘fox rose’ here. It’s a secret product of our Tushan Family. It’s pure and sweet..."

Ji Hao raised his right hand, slapped a golden sandalwood root carving table into pieces, then stared at Tushan Inkstone and yelled, "What fox rose? Don’t get me any soft sweet things like that! I want the strongest, cheapest wine! Hmm, I am a lowly creature. I cannot bear those good things. I like the cheap ones!"

Tushan Inkstone’s face turned dark once again. This shop was run by the Tushan Family, and everything in this chop was the best of the best. Ji Hao asked for the cheapest wine, but where could Tushan Inkstone find any?

Tushan Inkstone grinned again embarrassedly. Tushan Inkstone prepared to say something, but Ji Hao smashed another square table, then crossed his legs and said slowly while shaking his leg, "Ah, almost forgot about the business. Enough about tea or wine, take out your treasure now, eh? What treasure do you have?"

Tushan Inkstone had already phrased his words, but again, Ji Hao stoped him from saying. He opened his mouth widely, with a very dark face. For the third time, he grinned embarrassedly, and then stuttered, "Ah, treasure, yeah, yeah, the treasure!"

Ji Hao looked at Tushan Inkstone coldly and said in a vicious tone, "I am telling you, Tushan Inkstone, if your treasure can’t make me happy...I will tear your head off!"

Tushan Inkstone’s eye corners twitched intensively, then he took

a deep gasp and gave a bitter smile.

In Kui Gate, Tushan Inkstone had met countless spirit creatures. Those spirit creatures all needed things from him. Therefore, even though they were brutal and violent, they still had to restrain their tempers and act politely in front of Tushan Inkstone. When did Tushan Inkstone ever meet someone with such a capricious mood like Ji Hao?

Smiling bitterly, Tushan Inkstone stopped trying to make friends with Ji Hao. He clapped his hands loudly. A refreshing aroma spread out form a folding screen behind him. Following a light series of footstep sound, a beautiful young girl wearing a snow-white silk long dress walked to Tushan Inkstone, smiling as she carried an oval-shaped tray.

Carefully and seriously, Tushan Inkstone stood up and took out a purely dark shell piece from the tray.

A faintly sensible, prehistorical spirit creature power spread slowly from the shell. Sensing the spirit creature power emitting from this foot-square shell piece, Ji Hao felt nothing uncomfortable. But behind him, Shermie already started shaking.

Ji Hao looked around at Shermie. A big half of Shermie’s face was covered in the shell, and on that face, beam-sized drops of sweat oozed out. He was quivering intensely, as if a mountain was pressing on his shoulders. He was trying his best to fight the pressure, but inch by inch, his body bent, and so did his knees.

"Is this the treasure you mentioned?" Ji Hao’s left hand glowed with a silver-blue light. Shermie was almost suffocated by the pressure. Ji Hao conveniently patted on Shermie’s shoulder with his left hand. Instantly, Shermie made a long gasp for air, then quickly straightened his body.

In a great shock, Shermie cast a complicated glance at the square-shaped shell piece, then put his mouth near Ji Hao’s ear and whispered something.

With a secret magic, Ji Hao turned himself into a crayfish, but in fact, he was a pure-blooded human being. Therefore, he couldn't feel the terrifying power contained in that shell. But once the shell was taken out, Ji Hao felt like being dragged into a purely dark, scary world. He saw an enormous, black crayfish, roaring in the darkness, covered in a gray mist.

That crayfish was hundreds of thousands of miles long. He lied in the darkness and roared in rage. Dazzling thunderbolts struck down and cracked his black shell, turning it into ashes. At last, a tremendous axe descended. A pair of indescribably giant hands gripped the hilt of the axe and fiercely chopped this crayfish into two, from the head to the tail.

The sharp Chaos power streams stirred up by the axe tore apart the crayfish's body. Within a couple of breaths, the crayfish was torn into bits and pieces. By the end, only the hardest piece of shell on the middle of the crayfish's head remained.

At the moment, Tushan Inkstone was holding that piece of shell.

Ji Hao looked at the shell and seemed to be deep in thought. This treasure had stories, he could tell.

"According to the legends, when Saint Pan Gu created this world, thirty-million Chaos monsters attempted to take away the natural fortune that belonged to Pan Gu, and this world he created." Tushan Inkstone glanced at Shermie in surprise, who wasn't affected by the power of the shell anymore, then continued, "Saint Pan Gu was infuriated. With the world-creating enormous axe, he killed countless Chaos monsters. Among those dead Chaos monsters, one was called the 'netherworld soul-eating giant crayfish'!"

"This is the only remaining piece of shell that belonged to the giant crayfish, containing all his powers, and also a drop of his blood sealed in it."

Smilingly, Tushan Inkstone looked at Ji Hao, and said, "With this

treasure, Mr. Summer, you will have a chance to regain his power."

Chapter 1289: The Value of the Shell

To all non-humankind creatures in Pan Gu world, bloodline was especially important. The origins of their bloodlines, the backgrounds of their ancestors, these meant almost everything to them.

For example, an ordinary tiger who lived in the forest might cultivate itself into a spirit creature, but for sure, it would be far less talented than a spirit tiger, which possessed the bloodline of the White Tiger, the holy beast. Based on the same cultivation level, a spirit tiger with White Tiger's bloodline could defeat ten ordinary spirit tigers. Another example could be of an ordinary spirit fox, which was surely not as good as an offspring of Sky Fox, be it in terms of appearance or power. An ordinary spirit snake could never compare with a black water serpent, which had a strong prehistorical bloodline.

Bloodlines were essential. Therefore, without a strangely good luck, a spirit creature with an ordinary bloodline would have no chance to compete against the ones with strong bloodlines. Just like Yu Ancestor, who even risked infuriating Gong Gong to persuade him to strengthen his body and improve his bloodline with the essence water.

Crayfishes had a lowly bloodline. They lived at the bottom of the food chain, feeding on mud. Therefore, even if a crayfish luckily cultivated itself into a spirit creature, it still had to be extra careful to survive, like Shermie. Spirit crayfishes did have the chance to reach the level of Divine Magus with severe cultivation; Shermie did it. However, except for his pair of stunningly strong fists, Shermie had no other power or ability. To be honest, if Shermie didn't meet Ji Hao, and if Ji Hao didn't guide him through the Natural Trial Spirit Creature Soul Text and teach him to understand the great Dao of the extreme negative, his best possibility would be becoming a high-grade fighter among water-

kind beings, no matter how strong he could be.

Nevertheless, that giant crayfish he saw in the darkness was a Chaos creature, a top-grade predator, one of the thirty million Chaos monsters who attacked, and finally killed Saint Pan Gu back then. It was born and lived in the Chaos. In terms of background, that giant crayfish was definitely more gifted than Xiang Liu, Kun Peng, and the others of the first generation of Pan Gu world creatures.

Netherworld soul-eating giant crayfish, ever since it was born, it struggled in the Chaos for life. But if Kun Peng and Xiang Liu were thrown into the Chaos when they were still newborns, they could last at most for a breath, before they were crushed completely, without a trace.

This dark piece of shell absorbed all of the netherworld soul-eating giant crayfish's life-force before it was killed by Pan Gu. This shell recorded all its powers and secret magics. More importantly, a pure drop of spirit blood was sealed in it, a drop of spirit blood that belonged to the netherworld soul-eating giant crayfish.

If an ordinary spirit crayfish absorbed this drop of blood, it would have a great chance to change its bloodline, becoming a possessor of the netherworld soul-eating giant crayfish's bloodline. The bloodline power generated by one single drop of spirit blood would be thin, but as long as this lucky spirit crayfish keeps cultivating itself, it would eventually become a real netherworld soul-eating giant crayfish.

A real netherworld soul-eating giant crayfish, unimaginably powerful.

"This treasure was in our family treasury for many years. We never found someone good enough for it." Tushan Inkstone gently stroked the smooth shell and said with a low voice, "Today, I met you, Mr. Summer...I think, it's time for this treasure to meet its

new owner."

Tushan Inkstone glanced at Ji Hao, then at Shermie. He locked his fingers together and lightly patted on the shell.

Followed by a loud series of popping noise, dazzling electric bolts burst from the shell. Magic seals on the shell were undone, layer by layer. A greatly stronger spirit creature power erupted from the shell, while a gray mist condensed into an enormous crayfish, wielding its claws in the reception room.

The enormous crayfish roared towards the sky, deeply and thunderously like dragon roars. The roars echoed through Ji Hao's spiritual space. Ji Hao's embryos of Dao of sun and the extreme negative each gave a deep shout, as resonant as a bright bell ring, dispelling the sound waves created by the crayfish. So, Ji Hao wasn't affected at all.

However, Shermie and Heng Xing quivered intensely, then thudded their knees on the ground together.

This was a bloodline-level suppression from a high-level spirit creature over lower level ones. Shermie was only an ordinary spirit crayfish, while Heng Xing was an offspring of a Henggong fish and a devil bone fish. Both Henggong fish and devil bone fish had strong bloodlines, but still, they had no chance to win against a netherworld soul-eating giant crayfish. Therefore, both Heng Xing and Shermie kneeled straight on the ground, with sweat flowing down from their foreheads in streams. They trembled, and couldn't say word.

Ji Hao slowly stood up. A bone-piercingly cold and evil power was released from his body. Tushan Inkstone's smile froze on his face when he realized in shock that the strange power released by Ji Hao had frozen his body, disabling him from even blinking his eyes. A fist-sized jade pendent tied around Tushan Inkstone's waist glowed with a dazzling light. A cyan-colored layer of light flew out of the pendent like water streams, spreading on Tushan Inkstone's

body.

However, the cyan light only managed to spread for about three feet far, before it was stopped by a silver-blue light. The cyan light and the silver-blue light clashed against each other violently, generating scary explosive sounds. Thousands of tiny spell symbols sparkled quickly on the surface of the jade pendent. The power of this amulet had been boosted up to the maximum, but it still failed to defeat the silver-blue light and protect Tushan Inkstone.

"Mr...S-Summer..." With all of his strength, Tushan Inkstone finally squeezed out a few words through his gritted teeth.

"The treasure is good, but you made my boys kneel... not good." Ji Hao conveniently took over the dark shell from Tushan Inkstone’s hand. The shell was thickly covered in natural patterns. Glancing at the shell, Ji Hao chuckled as he held the shell with both hands, then slightly flicked his wrists. A silver, frigid light spurted out from his palms, immediately covering the entire shell.

That strong spirit creature power released from the shell was suddenly gone, and so was that enormous crayfish. Shermie and Heng Xing stood back up from the ground, tremblingly wiping the sweat on their heads. They couldn’t recover from the soul-deep shock brought to them by the terrifying power, which belonged to the netherworld soul-eating giant crayfish, for a long while.

Clang! A longsword fell on the ground. Just now, when Ji Hao stood up, a few guards silently showed up in the reception room, wearing black soft armors. But as same as Tushan Inkstone, these guards were frozen by the cold power released from Ji Hao’s body, such that none of them could move an inch.

Ji Hao took over the shell and restrained his power, after which, a guard slightly moved his fingers, failing to hold his sword tight, which dropped to the ground.

"What? What kind of shop this is? You’re not thinking about murdering me for my money, are you?" Ji Hao squinted at the few

guards, gave a cold smile, and said, "I am not afraid to tell you that this is my place. With one order of mine, millions of shrimp warriors will tear your shop down. Do you believe me?"

Tushan Inkstone’s body was slightly warmed up. Tremblingly moving his limbs, he hurriedly gave Ji Hao a big grin with a lingering fear and said, "Mr. Summer, this is a misunderstanding, a misunderstanding...I only wanted to show you the power of this shell. Any crayfish can use it."

Holding the shell, Ji Hao looked at those natural patterns on it and said blandly, "Cut the crap, name your price!"

Chapter 1290: Netherworld Hierarch

When he said ‘cut the crap’, Ji Hao’s fists burned with a silver colored fire.

When he said ‘name your price’, he had already dropped the shell, dashed past Tushan Inkstone, who was dumbfounded, and crashed the stone folding screen behind Tushan Inkstone. Like a crazy bull, Ji Hao smashed a thick wall behind the screen, and broke into a large hall.

Destructively and unstoppably, his pair of fists swished fiercely towards a scrawny priest sitting on a black lotus with crossed legs, a thousand miles away in the hall, leaving a tens of thousands of miles long stream of light in the air.

Yes, the great hall next to the reception room of this shop was about a hundred meters in diameter, but its real space was folded by a powerful being. In fact, a tiny world was hiding in this hall. Ji Hao was now in a broad space, ten-thousand-miles squared in area. Dim dark light streams had been releasing from the dark lotus that the priest sat on, keeping this tiny world steady and stable.

The dark light streams slight quaked as Ji Hao’s fists swished across the tiny world. Ji Hao’s punches were heavy enough to crack the space, but a few lotus petals slightly shook, and easily neutralized the sharp airstreams caused by Ji Hao.

Visibly, waves of space-ripple were stirred up in the tiny world, spreading out, following closely behind Ji Hao’s fists which were smashing at the scrawny priest in a long black robe.

Just now, when Ji Hao released a cold power to freeze Tushan Inkstone, he suddenly sensed a great threat from the priest. It was like walking on a dark street alone, late at night, and suddenly being approached by an invisible being with a sharp dagger, the tip of which was about to touch the back of one’s neck. His skin was immediately covered in goosebumps.

That was an extremely terrifying being. He made Ji Hao feel threatened, even as much as Priest Hua could.

The conversation between Ji Hao and Tushan Inkstone lasted for a while. The whole time, Ji Hao had his spirit power sneakily cover the entire area. But, he didn't discover anything wrong about the hall next door, neither did he find out that such a powerful being had been hiding there.

If Ji Hao didn't release the cold power to freeze Tushan Inkstone, and if that didn't surprise the priest a little bit, he would have remained in a stable state, instead of releasing that trace of threatening power vibration to Ji Hao. Ji Hao wouldn't have been aware of his existence at all then.

Ji Hao was curious, and was also shocked. In the meanwhile, he was confident enough about himself. He darted past Tushan Inkstone, crashed the screen and the wall, and broke into this tiny world. He then punched heavily towards this priest with thirty percent of his strength.

"The extremely negative power...Are you truly a spirit crayfish?" The priest looked at the bright silver fire on Ji Hao's hands, stunned. The beautiful silver fire had a dim blue edge, making Ji Hao's fist look even stronger, with an indescribably mysterious feeling delivered by it.

What surprised the priest even more was that although Ji Hao's firsts came straight at his face, in his eyes, those fists were hazy and unclear, seeming to be changing motion curves all the time. He felt like all his weaknesses were exposed right before Ji Hao's fists, and wherever they landed, it would be on the weakest spots of his body.

How many years had it been since he had such a feeling?

The Priest also felt that he could not let Ji Hao's fists touch his body. Otherwise, something bad would certainly happen; something might embarrass him and make him suffer. Perhaps, his

body would be destroyed by Ji Hao's heavy punches.

"This, is this truly a crayfish? He punched with the power of the great Dao!"

Sighing in surprise, the priest raised his pair of straight and heavy, sword-like eyebrows. He watched Ji Hao dart over, looked at his glowing fists, then abruptly raised his right hand and straightened his forefinger and middle finger. With them, he released a ten-thousand-meters-long, sharp sword power stream, fiercely towards Ji Hao's fists.

Clang! Clang! Clang! Followed by a series of ear-piercing noise, Ji Hao snorted in pain. He sensed a piercing pain from his hands, while blood splashed everywhere. The silver fire on his hands was cut into pieces by the sharp sword power, transforming into thin strands of silver light, flowing back into his body.

The priest slightly tilted his body backward. His sword power was crushed by Ji Hao's punch, which was launched based on the combined move of sky-opening, earth-splitting, everything-grow, and everything-perish. The priest's forefinger and middle finger remained straightened, pointing at Ji Hao. Suddenly, along with a popping noise, the fingernails of the priest's forefinger and middle finger shattered, as two purple-golden drops of blood slowly flowed down from his fingertips.

"This...Are you really a crayfish? Who are you, my friend? Why did you transform into a crayfish to attack me?" The priest looked at the two drops of purple-golden blood, seeming to be stunned. With a serious face, he stood up. From both sides of his body, eighteen blood-red beams of sword light circled out, hovering slowly around his body.

Ji Hao lowered his head and looked at his own hands.

By easily raising his hand, the priest released a stream of sword light and left thirty-six bone-deep wounds on Ji Hao's hands. Blood gushed out from those wounds, while the sharp pain continued

attacking Ji Hao. Moreover, a soft yet strong sword power lingered in those wounds, seeming to never fade.

If Ji Hao were an ordinary Divine Magus, merely this sword power stream was great enough to destroy his pair of hands. However, Ji Hao had preliminarily attained the Pan Gu body already. He gasped deeply. His blood, which had splashed in the air, flew back into his body. Flushed by his strong spirit blood, dark strands of sword power lingering in his wounds were turned into dark mist, puffing out of his body.

The priest's scrawny face twitched slightly. Gazing at Ji Hao, he's look turned more and more serious.

He clearly understood that his 'netherworld sword power' was collected from the softest, darkest death power from the netherworld through the endless time. It was extremely fierce and lethal. In terms of sword power lethality, only one person in this world could surpass him.

'Netherworld sword power', the number-two-ranked sword power in Pan Gu world, was cast out of Ji Hao's body so easily. This was driving the priest crazy. Whoever dared to say this old spirit crayfish standing in front of him was a real crayfish, he would pull out his or her three souls and seven spirits himself, throw them into the netherworld, and burn with the underworld fire for one hundred million years.

Glancing at his hands, which were healing speedily, Ji Hao then looked at the priest, also seriously.

At this stage, even ordinary holy weapons couldn't possibly hurt his body. But, by a slight stream of sword power released from this priest, his hands were harmed pretty badly. Although his bones weren't injured, those wounds on his hands were enough to prove the priest's power.

Looking at the dark lotus the priest sat on, Ji Hao's eye corners twitched again. This lotus had countless lotuses, seeming to be

even more powerful than Priest Hua’s true body, the seven-colored lotus from the Chaos!

"Who are you?" Ji Hao straightened his body, then politely nodded towards the priest.

"You can call me...Netherworld Hierarch!" The priest narrowed his eyes, looked at Ji Hao from head to toe, then continued with a bland tone, "Perhaps, you’re not familiar with this name of mine, but you should have heard the name of my origin."

"Netherworld Priest, I am a clone of his!"

Chapter 1291: What A Big Trap

Netherworld Hierarch stood on the black lotus. A strong netherworld power coiled around him in twisting streams, making him look like a giant octopus with thousands of enormous tentacles. Long and dark netherworld power streams flaunted around him, and faintly, high-pitched coarse screams could be heard.

"Netherworld Hierarch...Netherworld Priest!

Ji Hao looked at Netherworld Hierarch seriously, wondering if he were truly a clone of Netherworld Priest.

Ji Hao knew about Netherworld Priest, a mysterious, powerful being. After the humankind rose, Netherworld Priest was the only ancient powerful being who still had a tight connection with human beings. When Dishi Yanluo newly ascended to the throne of the Blood Moon, he started a great war. Back then, Emperor Shun asked Netherworld Priest for help, and he did show up to fight a quick battle against Dishi Yanluo.

As Ji Hao clawed his way up the social ladder of the human society, he had reached many core secrets already. He knew that a long-term agreement existed between high-level human leaders and Netherworld Priest. Human beings were under Netherworld Priest’s protection, and in return, the souls of some fallen human warriors would follow Netherworld Priest upon their own wills, becoming his disciples. Apart from this, when human leaders asked Netherworld Priest for help, they also promised him the bodies of a part of fallen warriors, allowing him to make those dead bodies into flying zombies and other types of battle puppets.

Priest Hua and Priest Mu had been trying everything they could to attract more followers among human beings and to collect the faith power from human beings, but Netherworld Priest was different. He lived in the netherworld, with ghosts, zombies and

other dark beings; he had no interest in living human beings.

Such a powerful being was hiding right next to the reception room of the shop run by the Tushan Chamber of Commerce, but why? Ji Hao was curious. What was Tushan Chamber of Commerce planning? Or, what was Netherworld Priest planning?

"Who are you, my friend?" Seeing Ji Hao remaining silent for quite a while, Netherworld Hierarch asked a bit angrily, "I've seen what you can do. You're not a nameless ordinary being for sure, and you're definitely not a crayfish. My friend, impressive shapeshifting skill!"

Following a sizzling noise, a thin crack suddenly appeared between Netherworld Hierarch's eyebrows, exposing a dark eyeball.

A dark beam of light darted out light a bolt of lightning, covering Ji Hao's body.

Ji Hao sensed a slight coldness from his skin. His boiling spirit blood cooled down suddenly, and his shapeshifting magic was almost broken by this dark eye of Priest Hierarch. Pondering briefly, Ji Hao deactivated his shapeshifting magic and showed his real face.

Wearing the brightly glowing Taiji cloak, Ji Hao bowed to Netherworld Hierarch with a vigorous look and said politely, "You are an eldership of mine. I am Ji Hao, and it's a pleasure to meet you. My Shifu always tells me that you are a friend of our sect, and that I should respect you as much as I respect my Shifu."

Before Netherworld Hierarch said a word, Ji Hao kneeled on the ground and greeted him with the special teacher-greeting convenance from Yu Yu's sect.

Watching 'old crayfish Summer' suddenly become Ji Hao, a handsome, strong young man, Netherworld Hierarch paused slightly, then had his eyes shone brightly. Glancing at Ji Hao's

Taiji cloak, he abruptly laughed out loud and said, "Hah, you're my friend Dachi's...No, the power I sensed from you..."

Ji Hao smiled, silently activated his primordial spirit, and released a layer of Yu Yu's divine light that covered his entire body like a beautiful green jade. The light was vividly green, and contained an inexhaustible life-force, seeming to generate all possibilities. But the sense of power it gave out was strong and sharp.

"Yu Yu's divine light, you're my friend Yu Yu's disciple!" Netherworld Hierarch's tightened face eased a lot. Gently patting his own forehead, he chuckled and said, "Hah, you're Marquis Yao Ji Hao, a young human being. Hmm, you're Yu Yu's disciple. No wonder Emperor Shun said that you're the most talented, capable young man among your generation."

Ji Hao smilingly bowed again to Netherworld Hierarch and responded mildly, "I am flattered."

Netherworld Hierarch shook his head, raised his hand, and slightly waved towards the outside. The shell, which was sealed by Ji Hao with the extremely negative power, flew to Netherworld Hierarch's hand along with a sharp swishing noise. He pointed at the shell, then a dark fire puffed up from it, sizzlingly burning the cold silver light wrapped on the shell.

Pop! Ten minutes later, the seal cast by Ji Hao with the extremely negative power was broken by the dark fire. A dim black light burst from the shell, and the power of the Chaos soul-eating giant crayfish swept across the entire room. Once again, Ji Hao heard the dragon-roar-like, resonant sound.

In a slight surprise, Netherworld Hierarch glanced at Ji Hao. He knew what Ji Hao did to the shell. Sealing the shell with the extremely negative power, this had impressed Netherworld Hierarch already. After all, Yu Yu was best at magic formation art and sword art. In other words, Yu Yu was the fiercest sword artist

in the world, but he was just average on the great Dao of extreme negativeness. But the seal Ji Hao cast was powerful and ingenious; it was clearly above the limitation of Yu Yu's disciples, and had reached a whole new level.

In order to break Ji Hao's seal, Netherworld Hierarch activated fifty percent of his power! In Netherworld Hierarch's eyes, Ji Hao was only a young disciple. Judging by the sense of power released from Ji Hao's body, Ji Hao hadn't even completed his first century of cultivation, and his seal should be broken easily, even with merely fifty percent of his power.

As a result, Netherworld Hierarch activated fifty percent of his power, and spent ten whole minutes to break Ji Hao's seal!

Thinking that Ji Hao couldn't be using all of his power when sealing the shell, Netherworld Hierarch was shocked. This disciple of Yu Yu, what a little freak! He had cultivated himself for no more than a century, but he was already sixty to seventy percent as powerful as Netherworld Hierarch himself.

Trying pretty hard to act less shocked, Netherworld Hierarch swung the shell slightly, smiled and said, "Since you're a disciple of Yu Yu, this shell is useless to you now."

Ji Hao detected some undermeaning from his words and asked, "This shell, is anything wrong with it?"

Netherworld Hierarch chuckled, stroked the thick and complicated natural pattern on the shell, and responded in a bland tone, "Hmm, no big problems, it's just, this shell can deliver a cultivation method especially for crayfishes, lobsters, shrimp warriors, and has been processed by me."

Flicking his fingers on the shell, Netherworld Hierarch looked at Ji Hao and continued grinningly, "Any shrimp warrior who uses the cultivation method will be able to make astounding advances on both cultivation and physical strength. But, their spirit blood powers will gradually transform into the netherworld power. At a

certain stage, they will become my netherworld warriors...instead of living beings!"

Ji Hao speechlessly looked at Netherworld Hierarch. ‘So, it turns out that Tushan Chamber of Commerce opened a store in Kui Water to help Netherworld Hierarch entrap water-kind beings, right?’ thought Ji Hao.

Then, Netherworld Hierarch sighed and continued, "Marquis Yao, before you...through Inkstone’s hands, I have given out seventy to eighty ‘Chaos monster remains’ like this...I believe, I will soon have millions and millions of more elite warriors under my command!"

Ji Hao spread his hands and smiled, speechlessly, then deeply bowed again to Netherworld Hierarch.

Chapter 1292: Eighteen Clones

The battle and conversation between Ji Hao and Netherworld Hierarch both happened within a flash. When Ji Hao and Netherworld Hierarch knowingly smiled towards each other, Tushan Inkstone rushed into the tiny world with a large group of guards. But before he could say a word, a series of thudding noise was generated. Along with the noise, over ten Tushan guards flew in, vomiting blood.

"Ayaya, Shermie, stop! They're on our side!" Seeing the broken armors of those blood-vomiting guards and the fist-shaped, deep dents in their chests, Ji Hao hurriedly shouted out.

"Yes, Shifu!" A hazy silhouette dashed in like a bolt of lightning. Shermie clenched his fists. His soul-splitting gloves had been burning with a bright, cold silver fire, glowing with a dazzling, frigid light that pierced people's eyes like needles, causing sharp pain.

"Cold, cold, cold!" Those guards, who were thrown into the tiny world by Shermie's heavy punches, lied on the ground while twitching and trembling. Soon, their bodies were covered with a thin layer of silver-blue ice.

"The extremely negative power!" Netherworld Hierarch looked at the ice on those guards in a great surprise, then glanced at Shermie's gloves. His heart even missed a beat — This pair of gloves was made with a very advanced technique. In Netherworld Hierarch's eyes, this pair of gloves was perfectly crafted, because all materials merged immaculately and all spell symbols were connected so accurately.

Netherworld Hierarch knew that as Yu Yu's first disciple, Po was an extraordinary treasure artist. Priest Po had even successfully copied a few pre-world supreme treasures and pre-world spirit treasures. His works were not as powerful as the original pieces,

but he did manage to copy seventy to eighty percent of the powers of those genuine treasures.

However, this pair of gloves was clearly not Priest Po's work. Netherworld Hierarch sensed something different from these gloves.

With a complicated feeling, Netherworld Hierarch looked at Ji Hao. Did Ji Hao make this pair of gloves that could hurt people with the extremely negative power and damage souls? As Yu Yu's young disciple, Ji Hao was unreasonably strong, but did he also have a ridiculously great treasure-making skill aside from that?

Even though he was a clone of Netherworld Priest, he might not be a good treasure maker like Ji Hao. The advanced treasure-making art presented by this pair of gloves made Netherworld Hierarch feel a bit weak.

"They're friends. This is a misunderstanding, misunderstanding!" Ji Hao grinned, then walked to those guards lying on the ground, and waved his sleeves. Strands of silver mist flew out of their bodies, into Ji Hao's sleeves. Ji Hao then locked his fingers together and cast a spell. A clear light was released from his hands, slightly quaking the surrounding natural powers. The natural powers transformed into pure life-force and merged with these guards' bodies, soon replenishing their consumed spirit blood. Flushed by their strong spirit blood, their wounds healed speedily.

"Elder?" Tushan Inkstone glanced at Netherworld Hierarch in panic. He then looked at Ji Hao and paused briefly. Hurriedly, he walked to Ji Hao and asked, "May I ask, are you Marquis Yao? Eh? Eh? Is that crayfish, Ma-Marquis Yao?"

Ji Hao grinned, rubbed his nose, and laughed a bit embarrassedly, "Hah, it's a misunderstanding, a misunderstanding. I was wondering why Tushan Family opened a shop here in Kui Water. I thought you were colluding with the

Gong Gong Family...I was gonna find a chance to flatten this shop, but I didn't think..."

Cold sweat oozed out of Tushan Inkstone's forehead. He helplessly showed the whites of his eyes and glanced at Netherworld Hierarch with a lingering fear.

If Netherworld Hierarch wasn't in this shop, if he didn't open this shop to entrap those water-kind beings, and if Ji Hao really had a good reason to flatten this shop and kill every last living being in it, according to the scary fame he had created in the past few years, this tiny shop might not be able to survive a few punches of Ji Hao, right?

"How can our Tushan Family do anything like that?" Because of the lingering fear, Tushan Inkstone felt extremely cold. With a big grin on his face, he said, "We opened this shop to do nothing else but coordinate with elder Netherworld. This is a mission assigned by Emperor Shun himself!"

The broken folding screen was replaced with a new one, and so was the broken wall fixed. In the well-decorated, anciently-styled reception room, Ji Hao and Netherworld Hierarch sat down, facing each other, while Tushan Inkstone boiled the tea himself. Tasting the tea together, they started telling Ji Hao the whole story.

It was not complicated. Netherworld Priest was the ruler of the netherworld. He had no interest in living beings, and instead, he liked to collect strong souls, especially the souls of fallen warriors, which had a strong will of fighting; those kinds of souls were his favorite. Other than souls, he also liked to collect strong dead bodies, especially those extraordinary strengthful ones, because they bodies were the best material for him to create zombie warriors.

Therefore, this time when Gong Gong raised the flood to hurt the human-kind, Netherworld Priest was the happiest one to see this.

Human leaders and Netherworld Priest had been maintaining a

close cooperative relationship. During the past few years, when the flood run rampantly in the world, through the alliance of human clans, human leaders had sent millions of corpses of powerful water-kind creatures to Netherworld Priest. The harvest from the past few years was enough for Netherworld Priest to luxuriously do whatever he liked for hundreds of years. But seeing the flood-control mission was about to reach the last second, Netherworld Priest wanted to get the most out of those water-kind beings. After all, the current water-kind armies were based on the twelve water worlds, and the number was huge. Pan Gu world never had so many water-kind spirit creatures before!

Therefore, Netherworld Priest sent out one of his three clones, Netherworld Hierarch. With the power of the Tushan Chamber of Commerce, he secretly came to the nine water gates area with a batch of 'Chaos monster remains', like the shell of the Chaos soul-eating crayfish.

Within the past two months, with all kinds of methods and excuses, Tushan Chamber of Commerce had already sold a batch of 'Chaos monster remains ' to tens of high-level spirit creatures, who had countless warriors under their command. As long as these spirit creatures cultivate themselves with the secret method recorded on those remains, they would gradually become netherworld beings. Instinctively, they would also spread the cultivation method in their families, and let their families use the same cultivation method.

Therefore, after a certain period of time, the effects of the sold batch of Chaos monster remains would begin to show. According to Netherworld Hierarch's estimation, about ten percent of all water-kind creatures in the nine water gates area would become netherworld warriors under Netherworld Hierarch's control.

If Netherworld Hierarch and the Tushan Chamber of commerce had the time to spread more Chaos monster remains, Netherworld Hierarch might even empty a big half of the water-kind forces in

this whole area, and turn all those water-kind beings into his own warriors.

"The netherworld has been cold, desolated, and empty since the start of time. Finally, this time, that place can have slightly more vitality." Netherworld Hierarch raised his head and sighed intoxicatedly. "It’s worthy for me to send out all of my eighteen hell clones."

"Eighteen hell clones?" Ji Hao asked curiously.

"Hmm, you’re my friend Yu Yu’s disciple, so I’m not gonna hide it from you. Eighteen hell clones are one of my great Dao that I am currently perusing." Netherworld Hierarch pondered for a short while, then smiled frankly and said, "The hell in the netherworld was divided into eighteen parts. Starting from the first part, each next part goes deeper. Each part can be considered as an independent world, with an independent great Dao."

"I am Netherworld Hierarch. I combined the eighteen great Dao of hell and created eighteen hell clones. Those are eighteen clones of mine. Only when eighteen clones merge back together, you can see the true face of Netherworld Hierarch!"

Netherworld Hierarch explained slowly, while Ji Hao was hooked.

Chapter 1293: Talk About the Great Dao, Gift the Treasures

Netherworld Hierarch liked Ji Hao. He frankly told Ji Hao that he was one of the three clones of Netherworld Priest, and had eighteen hell clones scattered in the nine water gates area, each having a mission. In every water gate, two hell clones had been working together, one in public, and one undercover.

Mentioning the eighteen hell clones, Netherworld Hierarch took a sip of the tea and started explaining to Ji Hao about the eighteen hell cones in details, from the very beginning.

The netherworld hell was divided into eighteen parts, and each part could be considered as an independent world, with an independent great Dao. Eighteen great Dao of nature ruled the hell together. Blade mountains, flame oceans, blood pools, and many cruel things existed in hell, all mysterious and hard to describe.

Ever since Pan Gu world was created, Netherworld Priest lived in the netherworld. He had traveled across hell countless times, and gained a deep, thorough understanding about the great Dao of hell. During the past countless centuries, while travelling across the hell, Netherworld Priest gradually spread his spirit power and life-force, merging with the hell itself.

One day, Netherworld Priest suddenly had a realization during meditation. He had a pair of swords, which were two extremely powerful supreme treasures that he was born with. With the pair of swords, based on his own understanding about the great Dao of netherworld, he created Netherworld Hierarch.

When Netherworld Hierarch was created, the eighteen great Dao of hell quaked simultaneously. Netherworld Hierarch was enlightened, and he became eighteen priests. These eighteen priests were his eighteen hell clones, condensed from the essence power of the eighteen Dao of hell.

This Netherworld Hierarch, who was talking pleasantly with Ji Hao right now, was ‘blood pool hell clone’, one of the eighteen. He was connected with the boundless blood pool in the hell; as long as the blood pool was not drained, he would never die.

The blood pool was the final destination of all dirtiness and negative energies in Pan Gu world. As long as living beings in Pan Gu world still had evilness in their hearts, as long as wars, fights, and schemes still existed between living beings in this world, the blood pool would never be drained.

Therefore, Netherworld Hierarch was almost immortal. Just now, when he fought against Ji Hao, he released eighteen blood-red swords. Those were called ‘blood flying swords’, generated from the dirtiest, evilest essence blood power from the blood pool in the hell, in combination with the forty-nine darkest natural materials in the world. Not to mention other functions of these swords; except for unbreakable powerful beings like Yu Yu, the blood of any living creature would be polluted immediately through a tiny scratch left on the skin by these swords. Consequently, that living creature would become a puddle of rotten blood within a second. Its soul would be stained as well, and might even be destroyed.

The ‘blood flying swords’ were so dangerous, and could even be counted as the fiercest in the world.

Ji Hao was deeply attracted by Netherworld Hierarch’s stories. He and Netherworld Hierarch discussed about the great Dao and exchanged their experiences. From Netherworld Hierarch, Ji Hao learned many cruel tricks. Especially, when he earlier broke into the tiny worlds created by Netherworld Hierarch, he had a glimpse of the truth of the great Dao of netherworld. On the other hand, Netherworld Hierarch learned about the great Dao of extreme negative from Ji Hao, which largely improved his cultivation based on the great Dao of netherworld.

By the end, Netherworld Hierarch felt that he had gained too

much more than Ji Hao. As an eldership, he couldn't bear to take advantages of Ji Hao. Therefore, he laughed brightly, then pointed at Ji Hao's forehead and taught Ji Hao everything about the 'blood flying swords'. In addition to that, he also taught Ji Hao how to generate dark blood thunders with the power of the boundless blood pool in hell, and all other kinds of cruel and dangerous dark magics he created.

"My friend Yu Yu, his Dao is glorious, dignified, and upright. His Dao is the top-grade Dao in the world." Netherworld Hierarch smiled to Ji Hao and said, "My Dao... I am aware of the fact that my Dao is not decent. But, an indecent Dao has its own splendor, just like a crooked road has its own special sceneries."

Gently patting on Ji Hao's shoulder, Netherworld Hierarch smiled and continued, "My Dao cannot become your true great Dao, but serving as a protection method of your great Dao, it will be more than enough!"

Ji Hao hurriedly stood up and bowed deeply, sincerely thanking Netherworld Hierarch for his generosity. Earlier, Netherworld Hierarch asked Ji Hao many questions regarding the great Dao of extreme negative. Through this, Ji Hao realized that the great Dao of extreme negative was highly useful to Netherworld Hierarch. Pondering briefly, Ji Hao took a deep breath and then released a silver light sphere from his chest.

Also generously, Ji Hao shared Netherworld Hierarch a half of the extremely negative power, that he grew with solid efforts in the past few years. He compressed the extremely negative power into a fist-sized silver bead, which was as heavy as ten giant mountains, then politely handed it to Netherworld Hierarch.

"Elder, I am so grateful for you guidance. You are not my Shifu, yet you guided me and solved my confusions. You treated me with the same kindness as my Shifu did. I do not have much to give in return. This small amount of negative power here was grown by me through years of severe cultivation, I am now presenting it to

you as a small gift."

Ji Hao clearly knew that the star of extreme negative in Pan Gu world was occupied by a powerful being, who no one could afford to offend. Ever since that, the extreme negative power in Pan Gu world became awfully weak and thin, such that ordinary living beings could barely find enough of that to cultivate themselves.

But, Ji Hao had that mysterious five-colored cauldron. With the cauldron, he could melt anything in the world, and turn everything back into the Chaos power, for his embryos of Dao to absorb. His embryos of Dao could easily transform the Chaos power into extreme negative power and sun power, and other types of natural powers. Therefore, collecting this amount of extremely negative power might be ridiculously difficult to the others, but to Ji Hao, it would cost no more than a few years of absorption.

Looking at the bead in Ji Hao's hands, Netherworld Hierarch's mouth corner twitched slightly. Spreading his hands, he gave a bitter smile and said, "Kid, you are such a troublemaker. I've been doing something lately, and I was just lacking the extreme negative power...The one who has occupied the star of extreme negativeness is someone I can't afford to offend... If I refuse this gift from you, I'd be faking it for sure."

Waving his broad sleeve, Netherworld Hierarch took over the bead from Ji Hao. Looking at Ji Hao, he smiled and continued, "As an elder, I can't always take advantages of a kid...Hehe, when I made the eighteen flying swords, I collected some extra essence from the blood pool and made nine blood flying knives. I was going to give those flying knives to my future disciples, for them to protect themselves."

While talking and smiling, Netherworld Hierarch took out nine fist-sized, crescent-shaped, hilt-less, and extra sharp flying knives, glowing with a strong blood-red light. Before Ji Hao could refuse, he directly took nine drops of spirit blood from Ji Hao's fingers,

transformed the nine blood drops into nine blood spell symbols, and sent them into the knives. Immediately, a tight connection between Ji Hao and these nine flicking flying knives, which were just like living creatures, was built. Ji Hao could now control these nine flying knives as freely as his own arms.

"These knives are fierce and dark. The more they kill, the stronger they will become." Looking at Ji Hao, Netherworld Hierarch grinned and said, "Don’t worry. I believe you will not use these knives to take innocent lives away."

Ji Hao didn’t reject. He bowed slightly, and thanked Netherworld Hierarch.

A soft series of footstep sounds could be heard, then a gentle voice from a young girl came from the outside, "Sir, the monthly auction is going to start."

Ji Hao abruptly patted his own forehead. White Feather had given him an invitation to the monthly auction. He smilingly took out the invitation card and said to Netherworld Hierarch, "Elder, are you interest to take a look at the treasures in there?"

Netherworld Hierarch was in a good mood. Grinning and nodding, he responded, "Great, let’s go together, together!"

Chapter 1294: Dragon, Tiger, Lion, Mammoth

Ji Hao, Netherworld Hierarch, and Tushan Inkstone glanced at each other, then laughed out loud together, sounding delighted.

Ji Hao and Netherworld Hierarch had run a discussion regarding the great Dao. Both of them gained from the discussion. They felt that a gauze before their eyes was broken suddenly, which allowed them to see a bright, beautiful scenery. The feeling was great. Naturally, they laughed out loud.

Tushan Inkstone knew nothing about the profound great Dao of nature that Ji Hao and Netherworld Hierarch talked about. After all, human Maguspriests had a different system of cultivation, and it was indeed difficult for them to understand the mysterious and confusing great Dao of nature.

Having no understanding about the great Dao of nature didn't mean that Tushan Inkstone gained nothing. Earlier, Netherworld Hierarch pointed a finger at Ji Hao's forehead and taught him a series of cruel secret blood pool magics. Meanwhile, they talked little bit about those dark blood pool magics. Tushan Inkstone memorized these pieces and bits from their conversations, which was more than enough for the power of Tushan Family to grow largely. Tushan Family people were good at business, but were not so gifted at fighting. Mastering a few powerful secret blood pool magics could surely deliver a considerable improvement of the power of the entire family,

While laughing, Ji Hao released a strong power vibration from his body. In his spiritual space, aside of his embryos of Dao of sun, extreme negative, destruction, space, and evolvement, the sixth embryo of Dao slowly emerged. It was covered in blood, and had been releasing a scary fierce sense of power.

Netherworld Hierarch was generous. He shared Ji Hao all his

understanding about the great Dao of blood pool. Therefore, this embryo of blood pool was impressively strong. Once it was generated, its power vibration suppressed the embryos of Dao of space and destruction.

The blood power rose, while a coldness swept across the entire spiritual space. Ji Hao's embryo of Dao of blood pool glowed with a bright blood-red light. At last, it seemed even to suppress the embryos of Dao of sun and extreme negative, and become Ji Hao's strongest embryo of Dao.

If Netherworld Hierarch knew that a few breaths after he pointed his finger on Ji Hao's forehead to teach Ji Hao what he knew, Ji Hao managed to grow a seed of Dao, develop an embryo of Dao, and successfully generate the embryo of Dao with a giant amount of original soul power...No matter how shameless this might look like, and even if he had to carry his pair of spirit divine swords to put up a desperate fight against Yu Yu, he would strive to turn Ji Hao into his own disciple, to inherit his power!

However, the Pan Gu bell hid inside Ji Hao's body and covered all changes that had been happening in Ji Hao's body with the strong Chaos power. Netherworld Hierarch was powerful indeed, but this one standing in front of Ji Hao was only one of the eighteen hell clones. He had no way to find out that Ji Hao had actually accomplished something so unbelievable.

In front of Netherworld Hierarch and Tushan Inkstone, Ji Hao rubbed his own face. The sense of power releasing from his body changed instantly, as he immediately became 'old crayfish Summer', about six-meters-tall, wearing silver-blue shells.

Watching Ji Hao's magical shapeshifting show, Netherworld Hierarch couldn't help but click his tongue in surprise. Netherworld Hierarch was immeasurably more powerful than Ji Hao, but he was not a good shapeshifter. In this sphere, he wasn't even as good as Ji Hao.

As for Tushan Inkstone, other than being shocked, he was envious. But soon, he realized that Ji Hao, this amazingly powerful young man, was a die-hard supporter of Si Wen Ming. This meant that Ji Hao was also a die-hard ally of the Tushan Family. Having such a strong ally was a great thing for the entire Tushan Family.

Thinking of this, Tushan Inkstone grinned brightly, even squeezing his eyes into a pair of curved lines. He hurriedly gave his order, following which, three-hundred guards from Tushan Chamber of Commerce lined up orderly. Added with the one hundred shrimp warriors brought by Ji Hao, four-hundred guards surrounded Ji Hao and Netherworld Hierarch and left the shop, heading to the auction house in a formidable array.

Ji Hao was still mounted on a seahorse, followed by Shermie and Heng Xing. Netherworld Hierarch was mounted on a purely black reindeer. He narrowed his eyes and looked around at the street and all shops on both sides with strong interests.

Moving forward for about ten miles along a broad street, they saw a building, which was carved out of an entire rock. Large groups of spirit creatures, wearing all strange kinds of armor, had been walking into the building.

Ji Hao looked at these spirit creatures, and felt that he was looking at the strangest creatures in the world. What made him even more speechless was that many of these spirit creatures were carrying giant beast hide bags. Through the joints of hide pieces, one could see the special glow of magic crystals. Apparently, these spirit creatures didn't have space treasures, and could only carry all their crystals to attend the auction.

Watching a group of tall and strong spirit creatures carry hill-huge bags, walking like house-moving ants, Ji Hao felt that this scene was a bit amusing.

Abruptly, Ji Hao heard a sizzling noise. Following that, a nearly ten-meters tall hippo's giant bag was torn up, probably because

some other spirit creature accidentally bumped into that bag. A six-foot-long breach was left in the bag, and countless magic crystals leaked out from it.

The hippo paused, turned around abruptly, and looked at those crystals on the ground.

A group of small pond loaches immediately dashed over, screamed shrilly while intending to grab those crystals on the ground. But before those small loaches could pick up one crystal, the hippo's eye suddenly turned blood-red. Roaring thunderously, he widely opened his giant mouth and released a dark stream of smoke. Within a smoke, a fifteen meters long spiked club flew out. Gripping the club with both hands, the hippo smacked madly, and smashed the tens of small loaches. Around ten innocent spirit creatures around the hippo had their heads broken as well.

"Who dares to take my crystals?!" The hippo leaped up and roared. Somehow, he was going completely crazy. Raising the picked club, he pounced on the surrounding spirit creatures, and seemed to even slaughter all living beings on the scene.

"Evil creature, kneel!" The club stirred up a blood-red beam of light, and was about to land on the head of a dumbfounded globefish, when a deep shout could be heard from a long distance away suddenly.

This shout sounded like an echoing bell ring, which vibrated the hippo's body, and instantly turned his blood-red eye back to the normal color. His legs were softened, and his knees thudded heavily against the ground. Dropping the club, he lied down, his forehead and palms on the ground.

Deep footstep sounds came from far away. Ji Hao saw four strong men walking over with big steps, in a straight line. The four men were wearing coarse clothes, with their long hair hanging loosely on their backs. Each of them was holding a cyan-colored wooden staff.

The four men were tall and sturdy, all having square faces, and looked strong and mighty. Followed behind the four men were a lion, a tiger, a flood dragon, and a mammoth. The four creatures had been releasing a terrifyingly strong power vibration. Clearly, they were all incredibly strong.

"Evil thing, how dare you kill innocent lives in broad daylight? I think you are destined to be one of us. Are you willing to follow me as a disciple of mine?"

The man with a lion followed behind him walked to the hippo, reached out his hand, and pressed on the hippo's head while saying harshly.

The hippo quivered intensely. Politely and respectfully, he kneeled on the ground, kowtowed to the man, and said, "I am!"

Ji Hao narrowed his eyes. Netherworld Hierarch sneered abruptly, "He's even using these nasty tricks now...Priest Mu, my friend, you're going lower and lower lately!"

Chapter 1295: My Friend, You're Destined to be One of Us

The hippo's entire body glowed with a warm light. With a mild, friendly smile, he carried that picked club, which still had blood on it, and politely stood behind the four men.

The four men stood still, each with a serious, sacred look. Their golden eyes sparkled with a bright golden light while looking around. Being swept across by their gazes, all spirit creatures felt that the greatest disaster was coming. A destructive power, that seemed to even crush their souls, forced all spirit creatures back with quick steps. No one dared to make any eye connect with the four men.

But when the four men looked at Ji Hao, Netherworld Hierarch, and Tushan Inkstone, a tiny jade human statue tied around Tushan Inkstone's waist glowed. A faintly sensible power vibration spread on his body, and kept him under protection. Smilingly, he cupped his hands to the four men. With the special 'cunning businessman smile', he swiftly glanced at the four men from heads to toe.

Netherworld Hierarch scornfully lowered his eyelids and remained silent, saying nothing. He put his hands on his knees and stayed unmoved.

The gazes of the four men struck down like a storm of daggers, but facing Netherworld Hierarch, those gazes were as ineffective as throwing a few tiny stones into the boundless blood pool in hell, failing to even stir up a slight ripple.

The four men slightly quivered. They were shocked, because they found out that they had no way to find out exactly how powerful Netherworld Hierarch was. They couldn't even believe this. Sneakily, they made a special hand motion. From the cyan-colored wooden staffs held in their left hands, a five-colored light silently

drilled into their bodies, after which, a five-colored linden seed sparkled deep inside their eyes.

Carefully, they activated one hundred percent of their eye powers and stared at Netherworld Hierarch in an unfriendly manner.

Netherworld Hierarch slightly shook his head and sighed. The sense of power released from his body changed. Judging by the sense of power, Netherworld Hierarch was now slightly more powerful than a human Divine Magus, but was nowhere near the level of Supreme Magus.

The four men ‘saw through’ Netherworld Hierarch’s power and sighed in relief together, then scornfully shook their heads. In their eyes, Netherworld Hierarch was merely playing some kind of small trick to hide his power vibration, and failed under their ‘great powers’.

Next, all four of them looked at Ji Hao simultaneously.

Ji Hao showed the whites of his eyes. His eyes sparkled with a silver-blue light while the extreme negative power condensed into eight extremely thin and sharp cold light beams, darting out of his eyes and piercing towards the eyeballs of the four men.

The four men didn’t see this coming. They burst with a raging shout. As their cyan-colored wooden staff glowed brightly, foot-long golden flames spurted out from their eyes. The silver light beams from Ji Hao’s eyes clashed against the golden flame and generated a series of popping noise. The eight silver light beams gradually faded, while the golden flames from the four men’ eyes were pressed down to around three-inches long.

Ji Hao snorted coldly. Gently brushing the pair of long feelers on his chin, Ji Hao acted like an old living being and said slowly, "People, this Kui Gate is ruled by the Gong Gong Family, by our water-kind. If you wanna pick up a fight in here, you’ve chosen the wrong place."

Laughing with a quaking sound, Ji Hao pointed at those surrounding spirit creatures and said proudly, "You are already here, that means you are connected with our water-kind more or less. Therefore, stick with the rules, and don't do anything reckless. Otherwise, someone might die!"

Just now, the gazes of the four men were way too sharp and fierce, which frightened back all surrounding spirit creatures. To these spirit creatures, who were born violent and brutal, being frightened back by someone's gaze was even more humiliating than having their ancestors' graves dug by their enemies.

No one knew exactly how powerful the four men were. Therefore, no one dared to stand out and start a fight against the four men. Instead, they all quietly watched aside.

However, Ji Hao had shown his strength. Facing the four men, he didn't step back, not even by an inch. On the contrary, he had even gained a slightly upper hand in this silent battle. The surrounding spirit creatures were encouraged instantly. They laughed deeply and viciously, then released their power vibrations intentionally. The power vibrations from thousands of large spirit creatures merged together and raised a dense dark cloud. Within the cloud, faint silhouettes of countless water-kind creatures were visible, while sharp and shrill screams were audible. They seemed to even tear the souls of every living being on the scene apart. Hearing that, the four men felt very uncomfortable.

The four men glanced at each other. Gripping the cyan-colored wooden staff, the man with a flood dragon following behind slowly took a step forward. He looked at Ji Hao seriously and laughed out loud.

This man cast a 'dragon roar', a special magic that Ji Hao had learned from Priest Hua's results of Dao of evolvement, created by Priest Hua. His bright and resonant voice echoed directly through the sky. The flood dragon followed behind the man roared thunderously too. Flood dragons were a part of the dragon family,

and dragons were the strongest scaled water-kind creatures in the whole world. The dominating power vibration released by the flood dragon spread towards all directions, vibrating all surrounding spirit creatures. The faces of those spirit creatures immediately turned pale. Many of them even sat straight on the ground, without being able to move anymore.

Those spirit creatures began vomiting blood. Among thousands of spirit creatures in the surroundings, at least a half of them couldn't stand the 'dragon roar', and had their souls injured. They vomited blood and looked at the four men in fear, sadness, and anger.

Once their souls were injured, the powers of these spirit creatures suddenly declined. Some of them couldn't even maintain their human shapes any longer, and all turned back to their original shapes. At the moment, electric eels, sharks, jellyfishes, and all kinds of water-kind creature flipped all over the street. Every time they flipped, a large mouthful of blood would be squeezed out of their bodies. Immediately, the whole area was turned into a huge mess.

Ji Hao's eyes suddenly turned vividly red. He opened his mouth and gave a soft, long-lasting shout. The deep, melodious shout sounded like the cries of wild ghosts at night, and came directly out of his belly.

Netherworld Hierarch instantly raised his eye corners and looked at Ji Hao in surprise. That was the 'blood pool ghost cry', one of those secret blood pool magics he taught Ji Hao. By launching the 'blood pool ghost cry', one could hurt the enemies' primordial spirits, damage their spirit blood, and corrode their internal organs, even brains and marrows, just with sound waves. This was a true evil secret magic.

He had just taught Ji Hao about the great Dao of blood-pool, but Ji Hao was now launching the 'blood pool ghost cry' already!

This was...Netherworld Hierarch scratched his head. All of a sudden, he even wanted to curse out loud. This was ridiculous! Ji Hao was way too talented!

The deep ghost cries quickly neutralized the thunderous ‘dragon roar’, like pouring a bucket of ice water onto burning firewood. The ‘dragon roar’ turned intermittent, then weak, and soon, the man suddenly let out a black mouthful of blood. Slightly quivering, he took two steps backward.

The four men stared at Ji Hao in a great shock — Their ‘dragon roar’ was actually broken by Ji Hao!

Not only the dragon roar, the man with a flood dragon also had a terrifying, dirty blood power intruding into his body. His spirit blood was previously pure like crystal and gold. But now, it was polluted, and sensed like rotten blood. This ruined at least tens of years of his cultivation.

"You..." The four men took a step forward simultaneously and glowered at Ji Hao.

"Like I said, this place is ruled by our water-kind. You can’t just do anything you want in here!" Ji Hao raised his head, leaped down from the back of the seahorse, and slowly walked to the four men. The intent of killing was agitated in his heart. The cold airstreams he stirred up transformed into a tornado, wrapping his body up.

Clearly, these four men were disciples of Priest Mu. Ji Hao had started the war between Priest Hua, Priest Mu, and himself, long ago. Therefore, he didn’t mind killing these four men right on the spot.

The four men glanced at each other. Abruptly, the flood dragon man laughed, "My friend here, you are destined to be one of us!"

Chapter 1296: The Great Salvation Seal

Those spirit creatures crying and howling in surrounding suddenly fell into silence; Netherworld Priest's twitched his face intensely, while Ji Hao popped out his eyes, speechlessly and looked at the four men.

Ordinary people could be averagely shameless, but these disciples of Priest Hua and Priest Mu, they had completely no sense of shame at all. Or probably, they had already cultivated themselves into the unbelievable level, that the sense of shame no longer meant a thing to them.

By casting the 'blood pool ghost cry', Ji Hao injured the flood dragon man. Didn't that mean they were enemies? Yet, they said that Ji Hao was destined to be one of them, trying to brazenly drag Ji Hao to their side. Clearly, they witnessed Ji Hao's great powers and abilities, and now, intended to persuade him to join them as a fighter, and to follow their orders!

"Hehe, hehe!" Ji Hao chuckled. Holding his hands behind his back and bending his waist, he taunted, "What do you mean by I'm destined to be one of you? Did my old wife accidentally lay four extra eggs back then and hatched you four silly kids? Eh? Are you gonna call me Abba?"

The four men were shameless. Ji Hao wasn't talking with his true face, so he wouldn't worry about his reputation for sure. Even if he screamed dirty words and rolled on the ground like a blackguard from the gutter, he would be hurting the reputation of 'old crayfish Summer', instead of his own. Whatever he did as 'old crayfish Summer' wouldn't have anything to do with Ji Hao, the famous Marquis Yao!

Thinking of this, Ji Hao was even a bit proud. Priest Hua gave him the results of the great Dao of evolvement; which was such a great opportunity for Ji Hao to attain another great Dao, and also

made him much more thickskinned than before. Somehow, Ji Hao felt that even though the defensive effect provided by his shamelessness was still far weaker than Priest Hua himself, it was already much stronger than the Pan Gu bell now.

Hearing Ji Hao's unscrupulous abuse, all spirit creatures in the surroundings laughed out loud, even including the ones who had still been vomiting blood, or had already been forced back into their original shapes. Instantly, shrill screams and shouts could be heard from everywhere. These spirit creatures' voices were all extremely unpleasant to hear. Many spirit creatures were injured by the flood dragon man earlier, and had partially lost their cultivations. Now, they mainly cursed out loud in rage.

All spirit creatures yelled out hysterically, hoarsely, and shrilly, and asked Ji Hao to kill the four men right on the spot. They even swore to crush and chew the four men, inch by inch.

The four men slightly dropped their faces. They cared nothing about the curses of those spirit creatures at all. In their eyes, they were like dragons flying in the sky, who would never care the thoughts of tiny ants living underground. But Ji Hao's words enraged them.

Eggs? Crayfish kids?

"My friend, your talking style will get you killed sooner or later. You better join us, and come under the protection of the supreme power, of our Master Shifu. Only in this way can you live happily and safely forever." The flood dragon man said with a deep voice, while abruptly raising his right arm.

"Brothers, this friend should be one of us, but sadly, he is blinded by worldly desires. He doesn't know how to free himself and turn to the right path. Today, let us sweep off his dust, lead him back to where he belongs, guiding him to join us!" The flood dragon man roared. Beside him, the tiger man, lion man, and the mammoth man growled out together resonantly. Next, their right palms

shone with bright lights, in the colors of yellow, blue, red, and cyan.

Amidst the colorful lights, countless faintly visible linden seeds hovered in the sky, swirling like windmills. Gradually, every single leaf transformed into a vividly green spell symbol. Countless spell symbols merged together and became a crystalline, green hand.

This green hand flicked its fingers, leaving shreds of afterimages in the air. Every single move made by this hand seemed to reveal all the secrets of the world, such that one would look at it without even wanting o. Watching every tiny move made by this hand, one would slowly feel that the hand was growing larger and larger, gradually filling up the entire world. At last, even the entire universe would seem to be held in this hand.

Holding the world, holding the entire universe in one hand... Human beings were as tiny as dust, floating in the universe, facing the vast space, and could be crushed at any time. From the soul to the physical body, to the original soul, nothing would remain in the world at last. One would be shaking, quivering; one would be frightened, despairing, because the dominating power from the universe would be speedily eroding the soul, body, and original soul.

Ji Hao was shaking slightly. Four green crystal hands created by the four men pressed down to him simultaneously, and he suffered the most direct pressure.

As for the thousands of spirit creatures in the surroundings, they took a mere glimpse at the four crystal green hands, maybe saw a slight movement of the four hands, before they were frozen. They felt like they were standing right before the great Dao of nature, which existed ever since the start of time. Their lives, things that happened in their previous lives and current lives, flashed across their eyes. They saw the things that made them regret the most, gave then the worst sadness and bitterness, which happened in their long or short lives.

Remorse, pain, sadness, despair, all negative moods attacked their souls like tidewater and struck their original soul, threatening their true spirits. Their true spirits were like a swaying candlelight in a hurricane, that could die at any time.

A voice was telling them over and over again, ‘Lives are bitter, this world is sad. Reincarnation is the cruelest punishment. Once you fall into the reincarnation, you will never be free. Join our sect, believe us with all your heart. This is the only way you can be saved, be free and be safe forever.’

Following a series of thudding noise, thousands of spirit creatures kneeled on the ground. The fierceness in their eyes was gone. They had dull smiles on their faces and confusion in their eyes. They kowtowed to the four men and worshipped them. By now, deep down their hearts, they were already seeing the four men as their great Shifu, and would even die for the four men!

"The sea of bitterness is boundless. Turn around, it’s never too late to mend! My friend, you are destined to be one of us. Why don’t you join us? What are you waiting for?"

The four men cast another resonant growl while the four crystal green hands flew out from their palms. The four crystals hands merged together and became a human-head-sized hand, releasing an overwhelming, sacred power vibration, while descending towards Ji Hao’s forehead.

"This is the great salvation seal. It solves all your confusion, saves all living beings in the world. It will lead you to freedom, my friend. Please, join, believe us!" With proud grins, the four men watched the seal slowly fall towards Ji Hao’s forehead, approaching the spot between Ji Hao’s eyebrows inch by inch.

This was a ‘supreme’ secret magic, newly learned by the four men. By casting this magic, they could turn the thoughts and wills of their target with a pure spirit power, forcing the targets to join the sect.

Because of this greatly powerful magic they learned, they excitedly came to the nine water gates area, to seize the opportunity and drag more of relatively stronger spirit creatures into their sect. These spirit creatures wouldn't have a chance to become the core members of the sect, but serving as guards and fighters would be more than enough.

They were looking for fighters, the more the better. Therefore, when casting the seal to Ji Hao, they didn't try to restrain the spreading power at all. As a result, thousands of spirit creatures in the surroundings were affected as well.

Thousand of spirit creatures had already devoutly kneeled on the ground, and became the most loyal disciples.

Along with a suffocating pressure, the great salvation seal touched Ji Hao's skin, seeming to drill into his body.

Chapter 1297: Break All With the Strength

The great salvation seal drilled into Ji Hao's body, broke the protective screen of his spiritual space, and burst inside.

A dragon, a tiger, a lion, a mammoth, four tens of thousands of miles long, enormous figures showed up in his spiritual space, roaring thunderously. The dragon was cyan in color, having a pair of rings, coiled in fierce wind gusts and thunderbolts. The tiger was white, and had strong swords standing on its neck, with the fur as sharp as blades. The lion was formidable, wrapped in a golden fire and treading on a burning red lotus. The mammoth had six tusks, and it carried a giant bottle, with a lotus blooming on top of the bottle, seeming to support the whole universe.

The four enormous creatures roared ferociously towards Ji Hao's red sun primordial spirit and the six embryos of Dao. A terrifying spirit power generated a destructive black hurricane, which rolled up dragon-like bolts of lightning, striking in Ji Hao's spiritual space.

As long as they shattered Ji Hao's spiritual space and then rebuilt it with their spirit powers contained in the great salvation seal, the four men would be able to turn Ji Hao's spiritual space into a permanent cage, to seal Ji Hao's primordial spirit and embryos of Dao for good. After that, with the great salvation seal, with their own strong will powers and their great spirit powers, generated from their piousness and passion towards their sect, the four men would create a spirit torrent that could reach to every corner of Ji Hao's soul. Motivated by the supreme magic created by Priest Mu, they would flush, corrode, wear down, and assimilate Ji Hao's primordial spirit and embryos of Dao. At last, they would forcibly turn Ji Hao into a devout believer of their sect!

Rapists assaulted the bodies of innocent girls, and this great salvation seal was an assault on the souls of cultivators!

"Willingly or not, once the seal is released, you have to become our disciples. Generation after generation, after countless reincarnations, you will work for our sect, serve our sect, forever and ever, and you will never betray!"

"Kneel!" The dragon roared at Ji Hao’s red sun primordial spirit.

"Join us!" The White tiger shook its head, bared its sharp teeth.

"Evil creatures, you are born as sinners. Join our sect, and your endless sins will be eliminated!" The lion’s eyes shone with a bright fiery light, while a raging fire burst from the red lotus under its paws, burning Ji Hao’s spiritual space and creating countless cracks in it.

"We have boundless peaceful linden worlds and vast lotus worlds in our sect. You won’t sense any more pain, hardship, or sin. You will no longer be connected to your past or future; you will never suffer the bitterness of reincarnation, nor the horror of death and netherworld. Join us, and you will live happily ever after!" The six-tusked mammoth swung its long trunk and tried to persuade Ji Hao with a smile on its face.

The power vibration of the four enormous creatures suffused the entire spiritual space, while the black hurricane they created turned Ji Hao’s spiritual space into a mess.

That green crystal hand slowly approached Ji Hao’s primordial spirit and embryos of Dao. The closer it got, the larger it grew, and the stronger was the pressure it released. When the crystal hand gradually pressed on Ji Hao’s primordial spirit and embryos of Dao, the pressure it released had already condensed into an almost tangible, cyan-colored clear layer of light. Due to the hand, Ji Hao’s spiritual space started to shatter like a crystal mirror.

Ji Hao’s embryos of Dao raised their heads and looked straight at the great salvation seal, which was descending from above.

It was a supreme powerful magic created by Priest Mu, cast by

the four men joint-handedly. Each one of the four was stronger than Ji Hao. They had cultivated themselves for thousands, even tens of thousands of years longer than Ji Hao had. They were all powerful ancient beings, true core disciples under Priest Mu's guidance. They were absolutely not the same as those weak, nominal disciples that Ji Hao met before. They were powerful enough to rival Po, Gui Ling, and the other elder disciples of Yu Yu. However, they chose to join hands and to bully Ji Hao, a young one, who hadn't even completed his first century of cultivation.

"Priest Mu...your disciples are pushing this too far!" Embryos of Dao didn't need to breath, but same as Ji Hao himself, each of his six embryos of Dao took a long gasp out of habit.

Following a thunderous, rumbling boom, a violent Chaos power burst open the protective screen of the spiritual space, drilling in along with countless bolts of Chaos thunder. The Pan Gu bell was hiding in Ji Hao's lower belly. Sensing the bloodcurdling power vibration released from the great salvation seal, the bell flew into the spiritual space and released Chaos power streams, which wrapped up Ji Hao's primordial spirit and embryos of Dao.

The six embryos of Dao glowed dazzlingly. Different colored light emitted from the six embryos of Dao and interwove with each other, merging together. The mysterious man's giant figure silently emerged in the spiritual space. Treading on a misty cloud, he spread his arms as much as he could, and made a fierce-looking posture.

"Little guy, are you afraid of them? All magics in the world are fake. Strength is real, is supreme, can break all magics!"

"What are magics? Sorceries? All bullsh*t! With strength used in the right way, you can even punch this whole world into two, not to mention a single magic, right? Follow my move... After the sky-opening, earth-splitting, everything-grow and everything-perish... I created the fifth move, 'all living beings reincarnate'!"

The mysterious man laughed out loud madly. His voice generated a bright blue light, dazzling all over the space. Wherever the blue light reached, the dark hurricane created by the four giant creatures was dispelled, and the shattering spiritual space was fixed instantly. The rampant power vibration released by the four creatures was suppressed completely, that they were now huddled in the air, without being able to move, like four frightened little rabbits.

The mysterious man launched the ‘sky-opening’ move first, then the ‘earth-splitting’. Right after that, he made the move of ‘everything-grow’, and next, he slowly launched the ‘everything-perish’. After the four moves, he slowly drew a large circle around himself with his arms, which looked like a Taiji diagram. By doing this, he combined the four moves perfectly.

Before, Ji Hao used to launch the combined move of these four moves. But the combined move created by Ji Hao was not complete. Instead, it was like four separate iron bars tied together, seeming to be a whole piece, but were actually divided. Different from that, the combined move created by the mysterious man now was like melting the four iron bar into liquid, and truly, momentarily, merging them into one. Four indescribable, mysterious senses of power erupted, and burst forth with an unprecedented thriving life-force.

Watching the mysterious man’s moves, Ji Hao’s six embryos of Dao growled out together. A cloud rose from the head of each embryo of Dao. The six clouds merged into a thousands of meters tall, strong figure, which followed the mysterious man’s moves and launched the ‘all living beings reincarnate’!

The brightly glowing, green, tens of thousands of meters tall great salvation seal was stopped by the move the six embryos of Dao launched together; it paused in the air.

Buzz! Tens of thin cracks appeared on the seal. As the six embryos of Dao burst with a bright shout, the powerful great

salvation seal was shattered into pieces, turning into countless strands of extremely pure, cyan-colored soul power light spots, drifting in all directions. Before these cyan-colored light spots could reach far, the five-colored cauldron popped out and swallowed all the light spots.

The four enormous creatures howled simultaneously. The thousands of meters tall figure launched a heavy punch from tens of thousands of miles away, crushing the four creatures. The five-colored cauldron flipped over happily, and immediately swallowed the shattering bodies of the four creatures.

On the street, Ji Hao slowly opened his eyes, and let out a turbid, hot long breath. A series of bone creaking noise could be heard from his body. As he launched the ‘all living beings reincarnate’ move, his physical strength was improved by a whole thirty percent. Within a moment, he completed his cultivation based on the seventh turn of the cultivation method with nine turns.

The four men stared at Ji Hao as if he were a ghost from hell. Each letting out a mouthful of blood, they sat straight on the ground with softened legs.

Chapter 1298: Peacemaker

To cast the great salvation seal, one needed to input the greatest devoutness and passion towards the sect into the seal, thus forcibly affecting the targets and turning them into true believers and followers. To achieve such an effect, the performer had to invest all his or her spirit power and passion into the seal.

With the ‘blood pool ghost cry’, Ji Hao broke the flood dragon man’s ‘dragon roar’. Therefore, the four men dared not to underestimate Ji Hao. They joined hands and cast the great salvation seal. Each of them had input a half of their primordial spirit power in the seal!

By launching the fifth move newly created by the mysterious man, Ji Hao perfectly combined the moves of sky-opening, earth-splitting, everything-grow and everything-perish. Violently yet accurately, he destroyed the great salvation seal directly.

The five-colored cauldron never showed a sign to spare their primordial powers. After the seal was destroyed, all powers and energies contained in the seal were devoured by the cauldron. The cauldron didn’t just absorb ordinary powers, but it also absorbed the original primordial spirit power that the four men gained through thousands of centuries of severe cultivations. In order to gain that original primordial spirit power, they worked so hard on the great Dao of nature; they spent so many efforts, which could even allow them to plant a lotus in a raging fire.

The four men had their legs softened. They fell to the ground, because they suddenly lost a half of their original primordial spirit power. In other words, their cultivations were downgraded directly by fifty percent!

"Evil thing!" The flood dragon man stared at Ji Hao with red eyes.

"Damn you!" The tiger man roared towards the sky, with tears sparkling in his eyes.

The lion man and the mammoth man didn’t say a word. Instead, they gripped their cyan wooden staffs with their left hands, with blood veins bulging from the backs of their hands. They quivered intensely as they stared at Ji Hao. Their gazes were like countless sharp daggers, seeming to even poke Ji Hao into a sifter.

Losing a half of original primordial spirit power so suddenly made the immeasurable power inside the four men vibrate violently. With their current cultivation level, they could no longer freely control their great power. Visibly, golden strands of glowing mist puffed out of their pores, merging in the air and spreading a pure and thick aroma.

"You... should die!" The four men supported their bodies with their wooden staffs and slowly stood back up from the ground. The golden glowing mist puffed out of their bodies ceaselessly. They glared at Ji Hao and hollered in chorus, "We were wrong. Thickheaded living beings do exist in this world. Even though we widely opened our gate, you will not get the chance to join us anymore!"

Ji Hao flicked his fingers. The ‘all living beings reincarnate’ move was so magical that earlier, when he launched the move, he felt like swallowing a whole calabash-full of top-grade divine magic pills. He sensed an enchanting comfort from his body, primordial spirit, and embryos of Dao, from every pore of his.

It was as if some meridian corners inside Ji Hao’s body were always jammed earlier; sensible or not, certain obstacles existed inside his body. But, the moment he made the ‘all living beings reincarnate’ move with all of his power, all meridians were unimpeded and all obstacles disappeared.

All powers he had, the physical strength, the primordial spirit power, the spirit blood power, all of them had merged together into one. Nothing was different now.

Furthermore, the six embryos of Dao seemed to begin having

some kind of interaction, such that every now and then, magical ripples of the great Dao had been spreading out from them. Ji Hao didn't need to cultivate himself severely with great concentration anymore. Instead, his embryos of Dao were now generating the power of the great Dao, just like a tiny world, and the great Dao was operating and developing itself. By now, his cultivation of Dao was improving, although slowly, but without a break.

Launching the 'every living being reincarnate' move, Ji Hao now felt that he was truly different from what he was before. Before, the secret of Pan Gu world's great Dao of nature was like a sealed blackhole, with no opening, not even a crack. But after he launched the move, he found a tiny crack on the protective screen of that blackhole, and through it, the true Dao of Pan Gu world was excitingly approaching Ji Hao.

Ji Hao didn't pursue the great Dao this time. On the contrary, the great Dao 'pursued' Ji Hao!

So magical! Ji Hao felt like he was walking upon the clouds in the heaven, such that he couldn't help but smile. Sadly, at this moment, he was an old crayfish named Summer, and that smile looked pretty hideous on his old crayfish face. In the eyes of the four men, this old crayfish was laughing at them.

The four men roared out in anger. They stomped their feet against the ground, then cast a secret spell in chorus. Because their primordial spirits and embryos of Dao were injured seriously, they had lost the control of a part of their powers. Now, with a supreme magic created by Priest Mu, they forcibly converted that part of power into a strange energy. Visibly, the cyan-colored, scorching hot energy streams sparkled like melted crystal, speedily flying into every corner of their bodies. Under the four men' skins, countless linden leaves could be seen. <eanwhile, their physical strengths were boosting rapidly.

With that supreme magic, they converted their powers into 'linden true marrow'. Pouring the marrow into their own bodies,

they built ‘unbreakable linden bodies’ for themselves. This was the highest body strengthening magic Priest Mu taught his disciples, and only true core disciples could learn this. However, all Priest Mu’s core disciples valued their cultivations the most. After all, their cultivations were the foundation of their great Dao. Who would waste their laboriously gained cultivation on a body-strengthening magic?

This time, because of Ji Hao, the four men lost a half of their cultivation, and consequently, they also lost the control of a half of their power. The four men quickly made up their minds. Rather than letting their power dissipate into the air, they decided to use it to build ‘unbreakable linden bodies’. In this way, even though they were weakened largely on the level of the great Dao, they would gain ‘unbreakable linden bodies’ with an incredible defensive power and a thriving life-force. Their actual battle effectiveness wouldn’t go down. In fact, in battles, they might be able to gain a lot of advantages with their well-strengthened bodies.

At the very least, their ‘unbreakable linden bodies’ had a nature of green, and could be counted as the top-grade strong, pre-world bodies with the green power. With the green power, no wind power or thunder power could hurt even a hair of them. In the future, they wouldn’t need to be afraid of any wind power or thunder blasts anymore.

Within a couple of breaths, the four well-cultivated men completed their conversion to ‘unbreakable linden bodies’. They burst with a great growl, swung the wooden staffs held in their left hands, and smashed down towards Ji Hao’s head, causing a shrill swishing noise.

Ji Hao grinned viciously. According to the locations of stars, he made a special step, leaving a long shred of afterimages in the air as he dodged the mad series of attack launched by the four men. Laughably, the four men were indeed powerful on the level of

great Dao, but their fighting skill was...Ji Hao could only describe that with the word ‘rubbish’. They had no skill at all! They were just simply swinging their staffs downwards, as heavily as possible.

"You...Except for that great salvation seal...What the hell can you do?" Ji Hao laughed out loud, carelessly taunting the four men.

Because of the cultivation loss they suffered earlier, their powers were still fluctuating abnormally. At the moment, the four men could barely cast even the simplest magic. Instead, they could only hit and miss with their great physical strengths. Hearing Ji Hao, they could do nothing else but grit their teeth and continue smacking.

Gradually, Ji Hao clenched his fists. Aiming at the vital parts of their bodies, Ji Hao was preparing to launch a lethal attack!

He had already killed countless disciples of Priest Hua and Priest Mu. What was the worst that could happen if he killed four more? For an unknown reason, after launching the ‘all living being reincarnate’ move, Ji Hao somehow gained a deeper insight into life and death. By now, he cared even less abut the lives of his enemies!

In this very moment, a pressing voice could be heard.

"Ahyaya! Mr. Summer and the four gentlemen here, we’re all friends. Stop fighting, stop, please, stop now!"

Following the scream, White Feather rushed over with a large group of guards.

Chapter 1299: Eat a Humble Pie

White Feather widely popped out his five eyes, his face filled with shock and confusion. Shaking his hands, he rushed over to Ji Hao.

"Don’t fight, don’t fight! Please, we’re all friends, all frie..."

Ji Hao moved. Making the Big Dipper step, he numbly flashed across the air like a ghost, leaving a few clearly visible, dark space cracks in the air. Like a drunk bear, he slightly turned his body and bumped straight into the flood dragon man’s chest with his shoulder.

Before the other three could rush up to save the flood dragon man, everyone else on the scene clearly saw that under Ji Hao’s translucent silver-blue shell, his arm suddenly swelled, turning even thicker than the flood dragon man’s waist.

Thud! Thud! Thud! Followed by a quick series of thuds, wrapped in an agitated, frigid spirit creature power, Ji Hao activated the seventh turn of the cultivation method with nine turns. The physical strength, which was even hundreds of times greater than the strength of an enormous dragon, was put forth through his muscles and bones. Faintly, Ji Hao sensed that his physical strength had already reached the limitation of his body.

Activating the seventh turn of the cultivation method with nine turns, with every strike he launched, he would be launching it with the strength that was one hundred and twenty-eight times greater than his own.

Ji Hao screamed. His twisted face made his scream sound even scarier. Through every single punch, he seemed to crazily turn all his energy into a bomb, and throw it out like a shooting star.

Every punch he made would bring him an unbearable pain, as if his entire arm was going to explode right in the next moment. But, in the meanwhile, because of the magical body-strengthening

effect of the cultivation method with nine turns, every punch Ji Hao launched would make him stronger, tougher, and would allow them to generate a greater strength.

Within a blink of an eye, Ji Hao threw three-thousand and six-hundred heavy punches onto the flood dragon man's chest like flashing light beams.

The flood dragon man's body was glowing with a cyan-colored light. At first, when Ji Hao's punches land on his body, nothing but large ripples were stirred up from the cyan light. But soon afterward, the ripples were shattered, and the cyan light was gradually torn apart as well. Ji Hao's fists landed on the man's chest, dented his skin, and squeezed blood out of his broken muscles in streams.

Soon, followed by a continuous series of muffled thuds, the flood dragon man's ribs broke, one after another, then were smashed, piece by piece. This 'unbreakable linden body' contained an incredibly strong life-force, because of which, his broken bones healed ceaselessly, only to be broken by Ji Hao again.

"Mr. Summer!" Seeing Ji Hao punch the flood dragon man insanely, and the other three men screaming hoarsely while waving their wooden staffs and chasing after Ji Hao, yet failing to even touch a hair of his, White Feather's five eyes shone brightly.

"Freeze!" White Feather suddenly closed his eyes, then opened those eyes in the next moment. Instantly, rapidly swirling airstreams emerged around Ji Hao's body, tying him up from all directions, like countless soft yet strong ropes.

"Err...Break!" Ji Hao turned around and grinned at White Feather, who tried to stop him with an unknown magic. He stopped putting forth his strength through his right fist. Instead, he launched the combined the sky-opening and earth-splitting.

Ji Hao accurately aimed at the weakest vital spot of the flood dragon man's body, and launched the strike. All his spirit power

was compressed into a tiny spot, then erupted along with the earth-splitting move. Added with the one-hundred and twenty-eight times greater strength generated by the seventh turn of the cultivation method with nine turns, Ji Hao's fist cracked the space, created a purely dark slash in the air, then punctured the dragon flood man's chest.

Boom! A human-head sized hole was left on the man's chest.

"Disperse!"

Penetrating the flood-dragon man's chest, Ji Hao suddenly spread his five fingers. Making a strange hand gesture, he slightly waved his hand. That terrifying force generated by his fist was dispelled, seeming to have never existed in the world. Except for puncturing the man's chest, Ji Hao's fist didn't even stir up even a slight gust of wind, neither did it cause any harm to the surrounding spirit creatures or environment.

Watched such a marvelous strike launched by Ji Hao, Netherworld Hierarch couldn't even stop nodding. He almost slapped his thigh and laughed out loud.

Through this strike, Ji Hao perfectly demonstrated the pure, violent strength, the fiercest strength. Netherworld Hierarch even sensed a mighty Dao from this strike.

If this strike were launched by someone else, the destructive force would certainly spread for hundreds of miles, and every single thing in this area would be turned into ashes. But, being launched by Ji Hao, this fierce strike could also be so gentle. To the enemy, this strike seemed to even destroy the entire universe, like the intense battle between a hundred dragons. But afterward, it was as gentle as a dust landing on the hair bun of a sixteen-year-old man, nothing else but the target was affected.

Ji Hao controlled his power so perfectly; what he did was almost a 'Dao'.

Ji Hao was also quite satisfied with this strike he made. He slowly took back his fist, turned around, and glanced at White Feather, who was completely stunned now. While grinning, Ji Hao said, "White Feather...Are you...on the same side as these four guys? Do you want to die?"

Ji Hao didn't try to conceal the strong intent of killing in his heart at all. He merged the scary dark power and blood power from his embryo of Dao of blood pool with the spirit creature power he created. Visibly, a bloody red, strong power spurting out of Ji Hao's body condensed into tens of blood-red serpent-like streams, and instantly around White Feather's body.

All of a sudden, the boundless blood-pool appeared before White Feather's eyes. In the blood pool, countless twisted faces struggled and screamed. White Feather saw many familiar faces in the blood pool... His elders, his relatives, the ones who used to be under his command, the ones who had lost their lives long ago... Those people were soaked in the blood-pool, crying, wailing, screaming. They reached out their hands, trying to drag White Feather into that blood-pool, where he could never be free...

"No!" White Feather howled heartbreakingly, then staggered backward with big steps.

Cold sweat oozed out of his skin in ceaseless streams. Tremblingly, White Feather stared at Ji Hao and screamed, "Mr. Summer, we, we are only business partners...I, I'm not with them...But, Mr. Summer, if you kill anyone here, you won't be able to attend the auction later!"

"Ah, I see!" Ji Hao scratched his forehead and said blandly, "We have to give Lord Dark Water Ao Ao some respect. We shouldn't cause troubles in his zone! So...You four, apologize, apologize now! Otherwise, I will kill you...Then kill White Feather. In this way, the treasures he's sending to the auction will naturally be mine!"

Ji Hao laughed with a hissing voice, while carelessly releasing his

frightful, bloody spirit creature power. He then continued, "Kill the man and take his treasures, I've done things like this. This kind of thing is fun to do!"

White Feather's face suddenly turned deathly pale. He looked at Ji Hao in shock and fear. Why on earth did he sell things to this old crazy thing?

The four men looked at Ji Hao expressionlessly. After ten whole minutes, while Ji Hao's spirit creature power grew stronger and stronger, and Ji Hao seemed ready to pounce on them, the four men lowered their heads and bowed deeply to Ji Hao, together.

"Summer, our friend, we shouldn't have offended you. We are very sorry. Please, kindly forgive us!"

Chapter 1300: The Power of A Spirit Creature King

The four men apologized, while White Feather was standing beside Ji Hao, saying nice words with a gentle voice. Ji Hao said nothing but laughed coldly with his hissing voice. On his silver-blue shell, strands of silver, cold light had been twisting, which looked like countless extremely long strands of silver water grass, fluttering wildly in the sky.

Seeing his not-so-pretty crayfish face and that human-head-sized hole on the flood dragon man's chest, Ji Hao's laughter seemed extremely cruel and cold. More and more spirit creatures in the surroundings were frightened by Ji Hao's laughter, and had their legs softened, even kneeling on the ground.

Ji Hao's intent of killing was true.

While facing the great salvation seal earlier, if the Pan Gu bell hadn't protected his embryos of Dao and primordial spirit, and if the mysterious man didn't teach him the 'all living beings reincarnate' move, allowing Ji Hao to combine all his powers and energies, and launch that amazing strike, he would have become a passionate follower of these four men, right? Becoming a disciple's disciple of Priest Mu from Yu Yu's disciple? If this truly happened...

Thinking of the consequences and the possible effects, Ji Hao's fine hair stood straight up. The great salvation seal, such a disgusting magic!

Should he kill the four men? This was a water-kind spirit creature market in the Kui Gate, and this place was perfect for Ji Hao to kill them. White Feather couldn't stop him, neither could those powerful spirit creatures who were hiding in his market.

He had the nine blood flying knives gifted from Netherworld

Hierarch now, and he would love to find out what those knives could do.

Seeing Ji Hao's eyeballs rolling in his eye sockets, glowing with a fierce light, the looks of the four men slightly changed. Simultaneously, they took a few steps backward. With each step, they drew back for nearly a hundred meters, and soon, they had moved hundreds of meters away, vigilantly looking at Ji Hao.

White Feather hurriedly blocked Ji Hao's way. Grinning from ear to ear, he cupped his hands, bowed to Ji Hao, and said, "Mr. Summer, Mr. Summer, we're all friends, all friends...Please, don't be angry...What about...what about I make the call, that whatever you buy from the auction, you can have ten percent discount?"

Ji Hao smiled, then threw a taunting glance at the four men.

He had already attained an embryo of Dao of space. Therefore, he had a much deeper understanding about the great Dao of space than any ordinary being in the world. Added with the magical power of the golden bridge, Ji Hao could reach straight to their faces instantly, with a single thought of his, even if these four men were standing ten-thousand miles away.

Could hundreds of meters of distance truly bring those men a sense of security? So ridiculous!

As for White Feather...Ji Hao reached out his hands, then scornfully, even insultingly and evilly, patted White Feather's face and said, "Recklessly stepping into my business...If I were younger, you would have become a meat pie already. Ten percent discount? Do I lack that bit? I don't even know what you are talking about."

When the coiling silver-colored power streams gradually faded around Ji Hao's body, Ji Hao turned around and glanced at Netherworld Hierarch.

If Netherworld Hierarch weren't here, he could have killed these few disciples of Priest Mu without any worry. However, after all,

Netherworld Hierarch was a powerful being, at the same level as Priest Hua, Priest Mu, and Yu Yu. Killing Priest Mu's disciples right in front of him? More or less, Ji Hao was still afraid of Netherworld Hierarch. It was just like how kids could fight, bully, and do whatever they wanted sneakily, when no adult was watching. But pulling out a small knife and stabbing another kid right in front of an adult? To be honest, Ji Hao wasn't sure about that.

But on turning around, Ji Hao suddenly saw Netherworld Hierarch's brightly sparkling eyes, and the excitement on his face. He seemed too eager to watch Ji Hao slaughter the four men...Was he accidentally excited? Did he want to see the four men be killed?

Clicking his tongue, Ji Hao curbed the thought of killing anyone.

Netherworld Hierarch's reaction was a bit weird. Abruptly, Ji Hao didn't want to kill anybody anymore. Or in other words, even if he still wanted to take out these four men, he should wait till he was alone, then do it sneakily without catching any attention. That would be the best end of this whole thing, Ji Hao believed.

"I don't lack that small money, neither do I like the others getting involved in my business. You're a polite man, and you've shown respect. Let's call an end of this. But, if things like this happen again, hehe..." Ji Hao laughed evilly, patted heavily on White Feather's shoulder, and said, "Westin Family people should all be smart."

White Feather laughed embarrassedly, while his left hand tightly gripped a golden jade talisman in his sleeve, which already had countless thin cracks on it. That was a defensive jade talisman made by a Westin Family elder himself. Under any physical attack, the talisman would trigger automatically to protect its owner. The talisman was shockingly powerful. Nevertheless, Ji Hao quaked the talismans suddenly into a useless piece, by doing noting but slapping on White Feather's shoulder, before the talisman could release any power.

Ji Hao's power was immeasurable, that in White Feather's heart, the danger level of Ji Hao immediately went to the top. Meanwhile, White Feather also put Ji Hao into 'the most important potential business partner' list.

"Oi, you four, what trick did you play earlier to drive all these small things crazy? Undo that now. Otherwise..." Ji Hao pointed at those spirit creatures who kneeled devoutly on the ground, then snorted coldly and slightly.

The four men glanced at each other, and cast a spell in chorus. Then, their bodies emitted a warm light. Affected by the great salvation seal, these spirit creatures were forcibly turned into disciples of the four men, but their faith wasn't solid. The four men lifted the seal, after which, those spirit creatures quivered and woke up.

Waking up from that passionate, insane state of believing, the thousands of spirit creatures suddenly realized how strange and terrifying things were a minute ago. At the same time, they were highly grateful to Ji Hao, who saved them from that unreasonably passionate and crazy state.

Thousands of spirit creatures kneeled on the ground, kowtowed to Ji Hao, and called him 'King'.

More and more spirit creatures were affected by this abruptly occurring, worshipful atmosphere, at the same time, awed by the strong spirit creature power released by Ji Hao. They kneeled down one after another, following each other blindly, and kowtowed to Ji Hao.

Ji Hao laughed out loud. Once again, he released his frigid, overwhelming spirit creature power. Leading his guards, Ji Hao broke into the rock building in the front, which was the venue of the auction that was to take place soon.

Those spirit creatures kneeled in the surroundings stopped and burst with a thunderous roar, then stood up and lined up

disorderly but formidably, following behind Ji Hao’s guards with rumbling steps, marching into the building like an army.

Stepping into the building with such a high profile, Ji Hao’s eyes shone immediately. He saw tens of thousands of different sized deep sea pearls glowing with a strong blue light, creating a broad space, which was enough to contain a million people.

The venue was filled with rocks and stone pillars. The tops of many tall pillars had already been occupied by some spirit creatures, who seemed to be greatly powerful. Those spirit creatures were all surrounded by tens, to over one thousand relatively weaker spirit creatures.

As Ji Hao broke in suddenly, hundreds of dreadful streams of spirit creature power rose, transforming into differently colored mountains and descending to Ji Hao.

Hundreds of ‘king’-level spirit creatures joined hands and attempted to give Ji Hao’s warning.

An enormous dragon whale laughed out loud, "You’re nothing but a crayfish. Where did you get the guts to recruit guards?"

Table of Contents

- The Magus Era
  - Synopsis
  - Copyright
  - Chapter 1201: Mole
  - Chapter 1202: Two ‘Zun’ Attack Suddenly
  - Chapter 1203: Melt the Sky Devils
  - Chapter 1204: Greedy and Crazy
  - Chapter 1205: Frontal Attack
  - Chapter 1206: Ying Zun’s Power
  - Chapter 1207: The True Face
  - Chapter 1208: The Star Guards of The Humankind
  - Chapter 1209: The Obsession with Living
  - Chapter 1210: Cut the Knot
  - Chapter 1211: The Powers of Sky Devils
  - Chapter 1212: Never Peaceful
  - Chapter 1213: Rock Dragon old man’s Soul
  - Chapter 1214: Life and Extinction
  - Chapter 1215: Half Step Supreme Magus
  - Chapter 1216: The Struggling Power
  - Chapter 1217: The Will of the World
  - Chapter 1218: The Instinct of the World
  - Chapter 1219: Arbitrariness
  - Chapter 1220: Emperor Ku’s Offspring
  - Chapter 1221: Strict Rules
  - Chapter 1222: What Ji Wu Can Do
  - Chapter 1223: Datura Poison
  - Chapter 1224: Break Fei Water City
  - Chapter 1225: Heavy penalties during Rough Times
  - Chapter 1226: All in the City Are Slaves
  - Chapter 1227: Hunt Him Down With Full Strength
  - Chapter 1228: Fame
  - Chapter 1229: The Infinitude Lotus World
  - Chapter 1230: Complicit
  - Chapter 1231: Kill, Kill, Kill
  - Chapter 1232: All Worlds

Chapter 1233: Divine Flame Bead
Chapter 1234: The Golden Bridge Breaks It
Chapter 1235 - Priest Corpse Disintegrates
Chapter 1236 - Transmigration
Chapter 1237 - Be Smitten With Fear
Chapter 1238 - Sweep Through
Chapter 1239: The Eruption of The Intent of Killing
Chapter 1240: The Confusion After The Battle
Chapter 1241: The Strangeness of Preist Hua
Chapter 1242: The Holy Seed of Sky Devils
Chapter 1243: Reap As One Has Sown
Chapter 1244: True Freedom
Chapter 1245: Priest Hua’s Lecture
Chapter 1246: Sum Up
Chapter 1247: Meeting Again After A Long Separation
Chapter 1248: The Nine Water Gates
Chapter 1249: Gong Gong’s Determination
Chapter 1250: Dark Water Yao Yao
Chapter 1251: Hit Below the Belt
Chapter 1252: Trying to Be The First
Chapter 1253: The First Fight
Chapter 1254: Aggressive Ji Hao
Chapter 1255: Qiong Sang Shuang, dead
Chapter 1256: You Chao Yu Arrives
Chapter 1257: You Chao Rock, Defeated
Chapter 1258: Joining the Fight Enthusiastically
Chapter 1259: Ghost Chariot
Chapter 1260: Force Them Away Together
Chapter 1261: Be Onlookers
Chapter 1262: Suffer Heavy Casualties
Chapter 1263: Stalemate
Chapter 1264: Strong Armies
Chapter 1265: Fire Crows
Chapter 1266: Vent The Anger
Chapter 1267: The Key
Chapter 1268: Sneak Into the Kui Gate
Chapter 1269: The Chaotic Spirit Creature Market
Chapter 1270: A Yu in the Market
Chapter 1271: A Shocking Discovery

Chapter 1272: Crayfish Shermie
Chapter 1273: Ji Hao Takes a Disciple
Chapter 1274: Local Villains
Chapter 1275: Teach the Dao and Remove the Mountains
Chapter 1276: Teach the Dao, Give the Treasures
Chapter 1277: Friendly Neighbor
Chapter 1278: Neighbors Should Take Care of Each Other
Chapter 1279: Control the Core
Chapter 1280: Ao Ao Sends His Army
Chapter 1281: Manhunt
Chapter 1282: Spirit Creature Market
Chapter 1283: Being Surprised
Chapter 1284: The Light of Wisdom
Chapter 1285: Rich Customer
Chapter 1286: Take Away the Firewood Under the Cooking Pot
Chapter 1287: Invitation
Chapter 1288: The Shell of A Chaos Monster
Chapter 1289: The Value of the Shell
Chapter 1290: Netherworld Hierarch
Chapter 1291: What A Big Trap
Chapter 1292: Eighteen Clones
Chapter 1293: Talk About the Great Dao, Gift the Treasures
Chapter 1294: Dragon, Tiger, Lion, Mammoth
Chapter 1295: My Friend, You're Destined to be One of Us
Chapter 1296: The Great Salvation Seal
Chapter 1297: Break All With the Strength
Chapter 1298: Peacemaker
Chapter 1299: Eat a Humble Pie
Chapter 1300: The Power of A Spirit Creature King